



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





3 2044 102 832 045



BRITISH GUIANA BOUNDARY.

CASE

PRESENTED ON BEHALF OF  
HER MAJESTY'S GOVERNMENT.

( APPENDIX )

VOL. III.

PROFESSOR F. DE MARTENS.



87  
210



HARVARD LAW LIBRARY

*Gift of*  
*James Munson Barnard*  
*and*  
*Augusta Barnard*

RECEIVED OCT 31 1928





12

× BRITISH GUIANA BOUNDARY. c

---

ARBITRATION WITH THE UNITED STATES OF VENEZUELA.

---

APPENDIX

TO THE

CASE ON BEHALF OF THE GOVERNMENT OF  
HER BRITANNIC MAJESTY.

---

VOLUME III.

1763—1768.

---



LONDON:

PRINTED AT THE FOREIGN OFFICE,  
BY HARRISON AND SONS, PRINTERS IN ORDINARY TO HER MAJESTY.

---

1898.



## PREFATORY NOTE.

THE sources from which the documents contained in this Appendix have been obtained are indicated, in the case of the Spanish documents and of a few English documents taken from the British Museum, by side-notes in each case. As in the majority of cases the originals of Dutch documents are in the hands of Her Majesty's Government, no side-notes have been added to them. They are mainly taken from the original series of Essequibo records now deposited in the Record Office on behalf of the Colonial Office in London: a few are taken from the records in the Colony at Georgetown; several from the Rijksarchief at the Hague.

As far as possible only material extracts have been given.

OCT 31 1928

10/31/28

# INDEX.

Serial No.	From or to whom.	Date.	SUBJECT.	Page
391	Don José Diguja, Governor of Cumaná	Dec. 15, 1763	Report deprecating the removal of the city of Guayana from its present site .. Book of Notes explaining the General Map of the Government of Cumaná .. File of evidence in support of his views ..	1 53 77
392	The Governor, Berbice, to Director-General, Essequibo	Feb. 25, 1764	Excellent policy of encouraging the Indians to act against the rebels .. ..	103
393	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	„ 28, „	Movements of Indians against the rebels. Intention of the Governor of Orinoco to allow trade with Essequibo .. ..	104
394	Ditto .. ..	Apr. 9, „	Success of the creole Veth in collecting Indians for offensive operations. Fears for the safety of Demerary .. ..	105
395	Ditto .. ..	June 15, „	Strength of the detachments at the Posts at Moruka, Mahaicony, and Arinda.. ..	106
396	Ditto .. ..	Aug. , „	Trade with Orinoco will now be fairly easy. The Post at Arinda is to be removed to the mouth of the River Rupununi, four days higher up the river. Instructions have been given to discover, if possible, the source of the Essequibo. Incloses a brief treatise concerning the Company's trading-places, and instructions to the Postholder at Arinda ..	106
397	Governor Storm van 's Grave-sande to Governor Crommelin	„ 18, „	He should not mention the River Barima in passes issued to traders, as the Spaniards claim that river .. ..	114
398	Shareholders of West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to States-General	Oct. 3, „	Observations on Captain van Oyen's criticisms of the state of defence of the Colonies ..	115
399	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	Dec. 28, „	Movements of the French at Cayenne. The Colony is in a tight place with the French on the east and the Spaniards on the west. The only remedy appears to be to populate the Colony, and establish good Posts in the interior .. ..	116
400	Ditto .. ..	Feb. 3, 1765	Necessity of maintaining friendly relations with the Indians. Register of the Colony for 1764 .. ..	118
401	Ditto .. ..	May 11, „	No report received yet of the removal of the Post at Arinda, nor any further information from Cayenne .. ..	119
402	Ditto .. ..	„ 27, „	Absence of news from Arinda. Trade with the Indians up the river seems to have ceased .. ..	119
403	Ditto .. ..	Aug. 13, „	General Report on affairs. Aggressions of the Spaniards, who will become more insolent if no reparation is made for the Cuyuni affair..	119
404	West India Company to Director-General, Essequibo	Sept. 19, „	Concurs in his views as to the necessity of the restoration of the Post at Cuyuni ..	121
405	The Governor of Guayana, Don Joaquim Moreno, to Don Julian de Arriaga	Nov. 4, „	Removal of the town of Guayana to Angostura. Number of the garrison, mode of fortification, &c. .. ..	122



Serial No.	From or to whom.	Date.	SUBJECT.	Page
406	Shareholders of West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to States-General	Nov. 26, 1765	Contents that Demerary is one and the same Colony with Essequibo .. ..	124
407	West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo	Dec. 2, ..	Approves his orders to Commandant Backer, and the delay in transferring the Post at Arinda. The Company would like some further particulars of the famous pyramid to which he refers. The friendship of the Caribs should be cultivated .. ..	125
408	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	.. 13, ..	Movements among Postholders. Presentation ring-collars for Indian Chiefs .. ..	126
409	Ditto .. ..	.. 27, ..	Orders issued to arrest a Spanish officer who has proceeded up the Massaruni with a party of Indians .. ..	127
410	Ditto .. ..	Jan. 18, 1766	Movements of Spanish-Indians in the Colony. Design of the Spanish to establish new Missions near the Cuyuni. Necessity of sending out only Protestant soldiers ..	128
411	Ditto .. ..	Apr. 6, ..	Furnishes information anent the pyramid. A good look-out is being kept on the movements of the Spaniards in the upper reaches of the river. He proposes to invite the Governor of Orinoco to take joint action to put an end to the unsatisfactory condition of affairs at Barima .. ..	130
412	Ditto .. ..	May 30, ..	Barbarous mode of living of some of the Dutch Colonists at Barima. Probability of hostilities between the Caribs and the Akawois .. ..	131
413	West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo	June 19, ..	Approves proceedings reported in No. 409. Delay in re-establishing the Post at Cuyuni would be madness in view of Spanish design .. ..	133
414	Ditto .. ..	Sept. 8, ..	If any suitable person can be found the pyramids should be investigated. Approves the proposal to station the creole Tampoko at the first fall in Cuyuni ..	135
415	Court of Policy, Essequibo ..	.. 14, ..	Provisional instructions for Pierre Martyn, Postholder in Cuyuni .. ..	136
416	West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo	.. 25, ..	The sentence on Van Roose for barbarous treatment of Thomas Adams (see No. 412) was too lenient. If Barima is really Spanish territory, he has acted very imprudently in sending the Postholder of Moruka there ..	137
417	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	Oct. 1, ..	The Postholder of Cuyuni will proceed up the river shortly in order to build dwellings and lay out bread gardens .. ..	137
418	The Assistant, Essequibo, to Director-General	Nov. 19, ..	A friar and another white person, a Portuguese, are founding an establishment in the Creek of Maho, above the Post at Arinda ..	137
419	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	Dec. 3, ..	The Postholder at Arinda has done nothing. For this he blames his assistant, Backer, who, in turn, throws the blame upon the Postholder .. ..	138
420	Ditto .. ..	.. 8, ..	State of affairs at the various Posts. The Posts are very important, but it is difficult to get good Postholders. Complains of the aggressions of the Spaniards under the pretence of Christianizing the slaves ..	138

## INDEX.

V

Serial No.	From or to whom.	Date.	SUBJECT.	Page
421	West India Company to Director-General	Mar. 9, 1767	Will be glad to know that the re-establishment of the Post at Cuyuni has been completed .. .. .	140
422	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	„ 20, „	The Spanish Governor of Guayana declines joint action at Barima on account of the distance, and suggests that malefactors should be hanged. The Director-General will act on his own account, paying due regard to the boundary, difficulty of obtaining good Postholders, and other matters ..	141
423	Ditto .. .. .	„ 23, „	It is reported that a party of Indians from the Spanish Missions have completely sacked the Post at Cuyuni. The Post, doubtless, is an obstacle to the Spaniards ..	142
424	Ditto .. .. .	„ 27, „	Recommends that if the ruin of the Colony is to be prevented, redress for grievances should be insisted upon at the Court of Spain. Two good coast-guards should be furnished, and Demerara fortified. If redress cannot be obtained from Spain, reprisals should be used .. .. .	143
425	Ditto .. .. .	June 27, „	He has given directions that certain Spanish deserters shall be sent out of the Colony. Asks for Protestant soldiers to defend the Posts at Cuyuni and Moruka .. .. .	143
426	Ditto .. .. .	„ 27, „	The Post in Cuyuni is already in order (except a few soldiers) .. .. .	144
427	Ditto .. .. .	July 24, „	All the Warows are fleeing from Orinoco, and taking refuge in Barima .. .. .	144
428	West India Company (Amsterdam Chamber) to States-General	„ 28, „	Statement in reply to the Memorial of the shareholders of the Zeeland Chamber ..	145
429	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	Aug. 10, „	The Postholder and Assistant at Arinda have disappeared. The Post-house is half ruined, and the warehouse empty. Inquiries have been ordered. Incloses a declaration by an itinerant trader of the proceedings of four Spaniards at the mouth of the Moruka ..	148
430	West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo	„ 24, „	Every effort should be made to obtain good Postholders. Return of slaves deserting to the Spanish Colonies. Approves his action in ordering that nothing be done against the Spanish Mission at Cuyuni. The Post there is important, and must be preserved ..	149
431	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	Sept. 6, „	Honest upright Spaniards are very scarce, and the Spanish Governors are mostly concerned to amass riches <i>per fas et nefas</i> . The Postholder and Assistant at Arinda have been carried off by the Manos or Magnauws. There is a rumour that the Post at Cuyuni has again been raided. Incloses applications by traitors in the Colony to the Prime Minister to the King of Sweden and to the King of Prussia .. .. .	150
432	West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo	„ 21, „	Though desirous of strengthening the Posts at Moruka and Cuyuni, the Company is only able to send a few soldiers, ship-room being scarce .. .. .	154
433	Director-General to D. Neelis, Chief of the Company's trading-places in Wacquepo and Moruka	Oct. 7, „	Provisional instructions .. .. .	154



Serial No.	From or to whom.	Date.	SUBJECT.	Page
434	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	Dec. 9, 1767	Outrageous behaviour of Streep and three others at Moruka. Application of a Spanish missionary in Orinoco for the return of fugitive slaves. Unsatisfactory character of the Postholders .. .. .	155
435	Director-General, Essequibo, to Commandeur, Demerary	„ 13, „	Preparations for setting the Caribs in motion against the rebels from Berbice .. ..	158
436	Commandeur, Demerary, to West India Company	„ 17, „	Steps taken for carrying out the instructions conveyed in the foregoing .. ..	159
437	West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo	„ 28, „	Necessity of strengthening the Posts at Cuyuni and Moruka .. .. .	160
438	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	Feb. 9, 1768	Attack to be made by the Caribs upon the negroes. Unwisdom of sending out French and Catholic soldiers. The Indians of the Cuyuni decline to recognize Pierre Martyn, the Postholder at Cuyuni, insisting on having a Dutchman .. .. .	161
439	Ditto .. .. .	„ 10, „	Attack by the Caribs and Akawois upon the negroes .. .. .	162
440	Commandeur, Demerary, to West India Company	„ 18, „	The last batch of soldiers sent out are nearly all French deserters, and the recruiting agents are infamous scoundrels. Arrangements have been made for a joint attack upon the negroes by the Caribs and Akawois .. .. .	162
441	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	Mar. 8, „	Successful attack upon the negroes by the Caribs .. .. .	163
442	Ditto .. .. .	Apr. 9, „	General report on affairs .. ..	163
443	.. .. .	Feb. 11, „	Testimony with the Decrees of the attack made by order of the Commandant of Guayana on the Dutch settlement in Guayana ..	167
444	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company	June 1, „	General Report on affairs.. ..	175
445	Ditto .. .. .	„ 6, „	War between the Caribs and Akawois. The Lord knows how it will turn out, but he does not expect much good from it .. ..	178
446	West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo	July 18, „	Observations upon various matters reported ..	179
447	Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company ..	„ 20, „	The statement that the Spanish authorities had received orders to restore Dutch slaves was a mistake .. .. .	181
448	Ditto .. .. .	Sept. 15, „	Further outrages by the Spaniards. Suggests retaliation. He will in future send back to Europe all French soldiers sent out ..	181
449	Ditto .. .. .	Nov. 9, „	Danger of sending out French soldiers, who immediately desert to the Spaniards. The Governor of Orinoco is in the mouth of that river, and will stay for two months ..	182
450	West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo	„ 28, „	Observations upon various matters reported ..	183

# BRITISH GUIANA BOUNDARY.

## ARBITRATION WITH THE UNITED STATES OF VENEZUELA.

### APPENDIX TO THE CASE ON BEHALF OF THE GOVERNMENT OF HER BRITANNIC MAJESTY.

#### VOLUME III.

No. 391.

*Report on the transfer of the City of Guayana to the Angostura of the Orinoco by Don José Diguja,  
Governor of Cumaná.*

*Cumaná, 15 de Diciembre de 1763.*

EL Governador, Dn. Joseph Diguja, "remite una Pieza de autos instructivos y justificativos del Mapa y Consulta que acompaña en consecuencia de la orden que se le comunicó sobre haver resuelto V. M. trasladar la ciudad de Guayana á la mayor Angostura del Rio Orinoco. Hace una larga descripción de la situacion ventajosa de ella y los irreparables perjuicios que resultarán á la religion, al servicio de V. M. y á los vasallos de aquellos dominios, de verificarse la traslacion."

*Nota.*—"En virtud de lo que representó en 15 Diciembre, 1761, Dn. Joseph Solano, sobre que la poblacion antigua se componia de 450 personas inclusa la guarnicion, y que la Muralla del Fuerte de Asis tenia poca resistencia; el temple del Pais malo: las casas de Madera y barro cubiertas de Palma é igual la Iglesia, expuesta la tropa á ser insultado, perdiendo á un golpe de mano el Padrastro, con lo qual no habria defensa para asegurar la Provincia, quedando descubiertas las de Cumaná, Carácas, Barinas, y aun Santa Fé á mas de carecer de viveres, y ser muy facil la introduccion por la conocida navegacion del Orinoco; propuso la traslacion á la Angostura de este Rio y conformandose V. M. se expidieron el año siguiente la instruccion y ordenes correspondientes á Dn. Joachin Moreno de Mendoza; y para las dudas que ocurriesen se previno á Solano las disolviese y aclarase."

"Con fecha de 15 de Agosto de 1764, el citado Comandante Dn. Joachin Moreno avisa haverse verificado la traslacion, y acompaña estado de sus havitadores; relacion de los gastos causados;

[696—3]

*Cumaná, December 15, 1763.*

GOVERNOR DON JOSEPH DIGUJA forwards a volume containing testimony in support of the Report and map submitted by him in consequence of the order communicated to him respecting your Majesty's decision to transfer the city of Guayana to the narrowest part of the River Orinoco. He makes a long description of the advantages of the present position, and explains the irreparable injuries that will be sustained by religion, by the service of your Majesty, and by your subjects in those regions, if the transfer is carried out.

*Note.*—"In virtue of what Don Joseph Solano reported on the 15th December, 1761: that the former population consisted of 450 persons. the garrison included, and that the rampart of Fort Asis offered little resistance; the climate bad, the houses of wood and clay, thatched with palm; the church built in the same way; the troops exposed to attack by losing the Padrastro by a *coup-de-main*, when there would be no further protection to secure the province, and Cumaná, Carácas, Barinas, and even Santa Fé, would be left exposed and in want of provisions, entrance being very easy, and the navigation of the Orinoco well known; he proposed the removal to the Angostura of this river; and your Majesty having agreed thereto, instructions and orders were accordingly sent to Don Joachin Moreno de Mendoza, and Solano was desired to clear up and explain the doubts which might arise."

"Under date of 15th August, 1764, the aforesaid Commandant Don Joachin Moreno advises that the removal has been carried out, and sends a statement of the inhabitants; and

"General Archives of the Indies," Seville. Press 133, case 3, bundle 16.

B

C

B



A y manifiesta lo imposible que les es á aquellos el costear por sí sus transportes, fabrica de Casas, &c., pidiendo se costeasen por la Real Hacienda, y así se les concedió por orden de 26 de Marzo antecedente.

"No ocurre providencia."

*Nota.*—Se recibió por Septiembre de 1763 quando ya se tenía noticia de haverse verificado la translacion, por lo que no resultó providencia.

B Hay un volante. Copiado dice así: No vino el mapa quando esto remitieron de San Ildefonso en Septiembre de 1765.

Sí: vino; pero como está con mediacaña dorado, y ser bastante grande se colgó en la Secretaría para adorno.

account of expenses incurred, and shows their inability to defray the cost of transport, building, &c., requesting that they may be paid for by the Royal Exchequer, which was granted by an Order of the 26th of last March.

"No measure taken."

*Note.*—This was received in September 1763, when news had already arrived that the removal was accomplished, for which reason no measure was taken.

There is a fly-leaf as follows:—

"The map was not remitted with this from San Ildefonso in September 1765."

Yes, it did come, but being rather large, and mounted on a gilt roller, it was hung in the Office of the Secretary of State as an ornament.

## I

## REPORT.

C Principio de esta Consulta, que sirve de Membrete, y en que se dá una breve noticia del todo de su contenido Folio 1.

*Primera Parte.*

Capítulo 1. Lo que era la Gobernacion de Cumaná en el año de mil setecientos veinte.—Folio 4.

Capítulo 2. Progresos en la Gobernacion desde el año de mil setecientos veinte hasta al presente de setecientos sesenta y tres.—Folio 6.

D Capítulo 3. Debese á los dos Cuerpos de Mision que Evangelizan en las Provincias de Cumaná y Barcelona, los progresos en ellas, desde el año de mil setecientos veinte á el presente de mil setecientos sesenta y tres.—Folio 13 va.

Capítulo 4. Actual estado de las Provincias de Cumaná y Barcelona principales de la Gobernacion; lo poco que con el se puede comprender, y de quien pende el cumplimiento de la Real orden para trasladar la Guayana.—Folio 17.

E Capítulo 5. Lo que era la Provincia de Guayana en el año de mil setecientos veinte y sus adelantamientos en los ciento cuarenta y un años anteriores.—Folio 22 va.

Capítulo 6. Providencias para fortificar el Orinoco dadas desde el año de mil seiscientos noventa y cuatro hasta Mayo de mil setecientos sesenta y dos que es su ultimo estado.—Folio 23 va.

Capítulo 7. Progresos en la Provincia de Guayana desde el año de mil setecientos veinte á el presente de mil setecientos sesenta y tres.—Folio 35 va.

F Capítulo 8. A la Mision de Capuchinos Catholicos en la Provincia de Guayana se debe el que los Hollandeses no hayan situado en el centro de ella, y los aumentos que se reconocen en el Presidio el que no puede subsistir sin dicha Mision, ni esta sin el Presidio.—Folio 39.

Capítulo 9. Presente estado de las Fortificaciones del Presidio, y Ciudad de Santa Tomé de la Guayana, y Poblaciones de Españoles de esta Pro-

Commencement of this Report, which serves as a synopsis, and in which a short statement of its entire contents is made (folio 1).\*

*First Part.*

Chapter 1. What the Government of Cumaná was in 1720 (folio 4).

Chapter 2. Progress of that Government from 1720 to the present year, 1763 (folio 6).

Chapter 3. The progress made in the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona from 1720 to the present year, 1763, is due to the two missionary bodies which are evangelizing there (folio 13).

Chapter 4. Present state of the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona, the principal ones of this Government; how little can be done under existing circumstances, and upon whom the fulfilment of the Royal Order to remove Guayana depends (folio 17).

Chapter 5. What the Province of Guayana was in 1720, and what progress had been made therein during the 141 previous years (folio 22).

Chapter 6. Measures taken to fortify the Orinoco from the year 1694 to the month of May 1762, after which date nothing has been done (folio 23).

Chapter 7. Progress in the Province of Guayana from 1720 to the present year, 1763 (folio 35).

Chapter 8. The fact that the Dutch have not settled in the centre of the Province of Guayana, and the progress noticed at the fortress, are due to the Mission of the Catalonian Capuchins. The fortress cannot be kept without the Mission, nor the Mission without the fortress (folio 39).

Chapter 9. Present condition of the fortifications of the fortress and city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, and of the Spanish settlements of

\* The folios thus referred to are, of course, those of the original MS. Report.

vincia, en el que hay alguna variacion á el que tenia al tiempo de la visita.—Folio 46.

Capitulo 10. El Presidio de Guayana es la Plaza mas importante que tiene el Rey Nuestro Señor en estos sus Americanos Dominios, á excepcion de la Habana y Vera Cruz.—Folio 84.

#### *Segunda Parte.*

Desde el folio noventa y ocho vuelta y hasta el ciento noventa y seis se contesta á el todo de los Capítulos de la Real orden puntos al margen.—Folio .

#### *Tercera Parte.*

Representa el Gobernador su dictamen por mayor.—Folio 197.

Capitulo 1. Que se fortifique el Cerro del Padraсто y si fuese del Real agrado se execute con el Castillo de la Concepcion, que se manifiesta en la septima y octava figura del Mapa.—Folio 198.

Capitulo 2. Que sea con el Castillo de la Concepcion ó con el que Su Magestad fuese servido, se fortifique el Cerro del Padraсто sin perdida de tiempo pues de lo contrario está expuesto á perderse en la primera Guerra.—Folio 203 va.

Capitulo 3. Que se mantenga la ciudad y por quantos medios sean posibles, se procure aumentar dos tantos mas su vecindario.—Folio 211.

Capitulo 4. Que á la Guarnicion del Presidio se aumenten las setenta y tres Plazas que propusieron los Gobernadores Don Gregorio de Espinosa y Don Matheo Gual; y tengo suplicado á Su Magestad en representacion de veinte y siete de Agosto de sesenta y uno.—Folio 215 va.

Capitulo 5. Que se abandone el fortin de Limones y se mantenga en el Presidio una Lancha como lo propuso á Su Magestad el Marques de San Phelipe; y si se hubiese de fortificar la Angostura, se execute con la sola Bateria que propuso el Gobernador Don Juan de la Tórnera, y manifiesta la novena figura del mapa.—Folio 216 va.

Capitulo 6. Que se auxilien las Misiones de Capuchinos Cathalanes, y observantes de Piritu, como lo tengo suplicado á Su Magestad de resultas de mi visita General.—Folio 222.

this province. This condition is somewhat different from that existing at the time of the visit (folio 46)

Chapter 10. The fortress of Guayana is the most important stronghold which the King, our Lord, possesses in these his American dominions, except Havana and Vera Cruz (folio 84).

#### *Second Part.*

From folio 98, on the reverse, to folio 196 an answer is given to all the chapters of the Royal Order which are inserted in the margin.

#### *Third Part.*

The Governor expresses his opinion in full (folio 197).

Chapter 1. The Padraсто Hill should be fortified, and, if agreeable to His Majesty, it should be done by the fort of La Concepción, as indicated in Nos. 7 and 8 in the map (folio 198).

Chapter 2. The said Padraсто Hill should be fortified without loss of time, whether by the fort of La Concepción, or by whatever one His Majesty may approve, for otherwise it is liable to be lost at the first outbreak of war (folio 203).

Chapter 3. The city should be kept up, and all possible efforts should be made to double the number of its inhabitants (folio 211).

Chapter 4. The garrison of the fortress should be strengthened by adding to it seventy-three soldiers, as proposed by Governor Don Gregorio de Espinosa and Governor Don Matheo Gual, and requested by me in my Memorial to His Majesty of the 27th August, 1761 (folio 215).

Chapter 5. The Limones Fort should be abandoned, and a barge should be kept at the fortress, as the Marquis de San Phelipe suggested to His Majesty; and if the Angostura is to be fortified, it should be done only with the battery suggested by Governor Don Juan de la Tórnera, as shown in No. 9 on the map (folio 219).

Chapter 6. Assistance should be given to the Missions of Catalonian Capuchins and Observants of Piritu, as I besought His Majesty after my general visit (folio 222).

[Los seis primeros párrafos, previenen el contenido de esta Consulta y sirven de Membrete ó extracto de ella.]

[Paragraphs No. 1 to No. 6 explain the subject and contents of this Report, and form a kind of Syllabus, or Summary, of the whole Document.]

(Extracts.)

Señor,

1. Con fecha de cuatro de Mayo del presente año, di cuenta á V. E. de haber recibido en veinte y cinco de Abril las Reales ordenes contenidas en el Indice que acompañé; y que luego que me desocupase de las ocurrencias que representé, é instruidos que fuesen los documentos que algunas requieran, contestaria á ellas en las ocasiones que se

Sir,

1. Under date of the 4th May of this year I informed your Excellency that on the 25th of April I had received the Royal Orders enumerated in the list which I appended; and that as soon as I could get rid of the occupations I mentioned, and finish the preparation of the documents necessitated by some of them, I would

A presentasen por la via de Carácas, como lo executo.

2. La librada en Aranjuez en veinte y siete de Mayo del año passado de mil setecientos sesenta y dos previene varios puntos siendo uno de ellos, y el mas principal, dignarse Su Magestad mandar, que la ciudad de Guayana se situe treinta y cuatro leguas arriba del castillo en la Angostura donde Orinoco se estrecha ochocientas varas. Y habiendome instruido perfectamente en este tan grave asunto y demas expresos en dicha Real orden y cercioradome de los irreparables perjuicios que de ponerla en practica indubitavelmente se seguirán

B á nuestra Santa Religion, al servicio de ambas Magestades á el Real Erario y á los Habitantes de estos Países: é igualmente asegurado de las insuperables dificultades que ocurren; y que aun sin estas son necesarios para el entero cumplimiento del todo de las Reales resoluciones en ella contenidas veinte y cinco ó treinta años: trescientos ó quatrocientos mil pesos: sacrificar muchas vidas, y al cabo exponer todas estas Provincias al arbitrio de los enemigos de la Real Corona: Me pareció mui de mi obligacion, como leal vasallo, como Gobernador de estas Provincias, y en virtud de la

C Ley veinte y cuatro Libro segundo, Titulo primero, y despues del rendido obediencia, suplicar á Su Magestad del contenido de dicha Real orden y suspender su practica en el todo hasta que veridicamente informada su Soberana Real clemencia se digne resolver lo que fuese más de su Real beneplacito.

3. Para cerciorar á Su Magestad de los irreparables perjuicios, excesivos gastos, sumas dificultades, años que son necesarios, y el conocido riesgo á que se exponen estos sus vastos Dominios, me pareció conveniente formar el mapa y pieza de Autos que acompaña, cuyos documentos, el mapa general de esta Gobernacion y Quaderno de Notas en las que de ella se dá una particular, justificada y abreviada noticia que dirigí á Su Magestad por mano de V. E. con fecha de diez y seis de Diciembre de mil setecientos sesenta y uno justifican gran parte de quanto aqui expongo, y lo que no vá justificado, no és por falta de documentos; y sí por evitar voluminosas piezas de Autos que sirvan mas de confusion que para pronta inteligencia, pero siempre que Su Magestad se digne mandarme justifique el todo ó parte de los puntos que aqui no lo fuesen, quedo responsable á executarlos, como á lo veridico de quanto informo con solo el fin de desempeñar la confianza que de mi ha hecho Su Magestad, del acierto que deseo en su Real servicio, resguardar estos sus dilatados Dominios y precaver todo cargo que en lo sucesivo, justamente se me pueda hacer por no haber representado inconvenientes que están tan á la vista.

4. Y para la mas pronta comprehension de esta Representacion, y evitar en ella toda confusion, he tenido igualmente por conveniente dividirla en tres partes, justificando en la primera, lo que era la Gobernacion de Cumaná en el año de mil setecientos veinte sus progresos hasta el presente, á quien se han debido, su actual estado, y lo poco que con él se puede emprender en la Provincia de Guayana: Lo que era esta en dicho año de setecientos veinte subordinada á el Gobierno de la Trinidad, y sus adelantamientos en ciento quarenta y un años anteriores: Providencias que se han dado para fortificar el Orinoco desde el año

reply to the said Royal Orders by the first opportunity, viâ Carácas, which I did.

2. The Royal Order issued at Aranjuez on the 27th May, 1762, contains various instructions—one of them, and the most important, being that His Majesty is pleased to command that the town of Guayana be placed 34 leagues above the Castle at the Angostura, where the Orinoco has only a width of 800 yards. But having thoroughly investigated this grave subject, and the others mentioned in the said Royal Order, and having assured myself of the irreparable injuries that will indubitably result to our holy religion, to the service of God and the King, to the Royal Treasury, and to the inhabitants of those countries; and being equally assured of the insuperable difficulties that arise, and that, even without these, twenty-five or thirty years, and 300,000 or 400,000 dollars will be necessary to carry the whole plan into effect, sacrificing many lives, and, after all, leaving all these provinces at the mercy of the enemies of the Royal Crown; it appeared to me to be my bounden duty, as a loyal subject, as Governor of these provinces, and in virtue of Law 24, Book 2, Title 1, and after due submission, to petition His Majesty respecting the contents of the said Royal Order, and to suspend the execution thereof in its entirety until his Royal Sovereign clemency, being accurately instructed, should vouchsafe to decide what might be most agreeable to his Royal pleasure.

3. In order to convince His Majesty of the irreparable injuries, excessive expenditure, extreme difficulties, number of years required, and the known risk in which it will place these vast dominions of His Majesty, I thought it advisable to draw up the map and set of documents which I send herewith. These documents, the general map of this Government and the Book of Notes, containing a minute, substantiated, and concise account of it, which I addressed to His Majesty, through the hands of your Excellency, under date of the 16th December, 1761, justify a great portion of what I here set down. And if anything is not accompanied by proof, it is not for want of documents, but to avoid voluminous records, which serve rather to produce confusion than for ready intelligence. But whenever His Majesty may be pleased to order me to prove any or all of the statements which are not certified here, I bind myself to do so, and to prove the truth of all that I have said in this Report, which I have prepared in discharge of my duty, in order to respond to the confidence that His Majesty was pleased to repose in me, and with no other desire than to improve the Royal service, protect these vast dominions, and prevent any charge from being justly made against me that I did not call attention to dangers which could be seen so easily.

4. And in order that my representations may be more easily understood, and that no confusion may be created, I have thought it proper to divide this Report into three parts, showing in the first, what the Government of Cumaná was in 1720; its progress up to the present date; to whom it is due; its condition at the present time; and how little, under existing circumstances, can be undertaken in the Province of Guayana; what it was in the said year 1720, when it was subject to the Government of Trinidad, and its progress during the 141 previous years; what measures for the fortification of the



de mil seiscientos noventa y cuatro, hasta veinte y siete de Mayo del año pasado de mil setecientos sesenta y dos que es su ultimo estado. La infelicidad en que estaba dicha Provincia quando se agregó á este Gobierno sus progresos hasta el presente año, y á quien se han debido actual estado de la ciudad de Guayana y sus fortificaciones: Y que esta Plaza es la mas importante de quantas tiene el Rey en estos sus Americanos dominios, á excepcion de la Habana y Vera Cruz. Con cuyas precisas justificadas noticias, se evidenciará quanto expusiere en la Segunda y Tercera Partes, y se evitarán en ellas dilatadas digresiones que confundan mas que aclaren quanto deseo y pretendo hacer constante á Su Magestad.

5. En la Segunda poniendo los Capítulos de la Real orden al margen, contestaré á cada uno de ellos y haré visibles los supradichos irreparables perjuicios: Los muchos años y crecidas sumas necesarias para la practica de su contenido con la que no se consigue la seguridad y adelantamientos de estas Provincias: Y si, exponerlas á los enemigos, y perder en parte de ellas la Religion nuevamente plantada.

6. En la tercera representaré mi dictamen, sin embargo que desde que tengo el honor de servir á Su Magestad en este destino no lo he executado en ningun asunto sin expresa Real Orden: Pero interesandose en este tan grave el servicio de ambas Magestades, he creído, estimulado de mi conciencia, que debo hacer presente quanto concibo útil ó perjudicial á su santo y Real servicio, bien que en dicho mi dictamen mui poco tengo que aumentar á lo expuesto en el Quaderno de Notas por via de noticias generales y particulares de la Gobernacion; y mucho menos á lo que con grande acierto han representado á Su Magestad los Ingenieros y Gobernadores mis antecesores que de su Real orden han sido comisionados para fortificar el Orinoco y en virtud de Real mandado aprobó el Exmo. Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava Virrey que era del Nuevo Reyno de Granada.

Orinoco were taken from the year 1694 up to the 27th May, 1762, after which date nothing has been done; what was the unhappy condition of the said province when it was annexed to this Government; its progress up to the present year, and to whom it has been due; the present condition of the city of Guayana and its fortifications; and that this stronghold is the most important which the King has in these his American dominions, except Havana and Vera Cruz. With this precise and certified information, everything stated in the second and third parts will be substantiated, and long digressions will be avoided therein, which confuse rather than explain what I desire and endeavour to make evident to His Majesty.

5. In the second part, placing the sections of the Royal Order in the margin, I will reply to each, and show the aforesaid irreparable injuries, and the many years and vast sums necessary to carry out its contents, which will not conduce to the security and development of these provinces, but rather to expose them to the enemy, and to destroy in part of them the religion recently implanted.

6. In the third part I will state my opinion, but ever since I have had the honour of serving His Majesty in this position I have not carried it out in any matter without express Royal Order. But the service of God and the King being so involved in this grave matter, I have felt myself bound by a duty of conscience to set forth what I think to be conducive or prejudicial to their holy and Royal service, although in my said opinion I have very little to add to what was said in the Book of Notes, by way of general and particular accounts of the Government, and still less to what was ably represented to His Majesty by the Engineers and the Governors who preceded me, who were intrusted by Royal command with the work of fortifying the Orinoco, and whose Reports were approved, by virtue of a Royal Order, by his Excellency Don Sebastian de Eslava, at that time Viceroy of the New Kingdom of Granada.

#### Primera Parte.

##### Capitulo Primero.—*Lo que era la Gobernacion de Cumaná en el año de mil setecientos veinte.*

1. El Gobierno de Cumaná á el cargo de Don Joseph Carreño en el año de mil setecientos veinte, consistia en su propia Provincia y en la de la nueva Barcelona. En una y otra desconocidos una gran parte de los terrenos á el Norte y Costa de la Serrania que del este á oeste corre dichas dos Provincias, y los que estan al sur de la propia serrania se hallavan poseidos y habitados de los Indios Caribes y demas naciones por pacificar, y de los Holandeses, Ingleses y Franceses que los acompañaban: Sus poblaciones se reducian, en la de Cumaná, á su Capital con unas cien casas muy pequeñas construidas de maderas y barro y cubiertas de torta de este y paja y sus moradores pobrisimos, aunque algunos con unas mui cortas Haciendas ó Labranzas en la Costa del Golfo y valle de Cariaco.

5. Estas nuevas Misiones, y aun las inmediatas á Cumanacoa eran frecuentemente insultadas

[696—3]

#### First Part.

##### Chapter I.—*What the Government of Cumaná was in 1720.*

1. The Government of Cumaná, at whose head Don Joseph Carreño was placed in 1720, consisted of the province of that name and the Province of New Barcelona. In both a large portion of the territory north of the ridge of mountains which runs from east to west across the two provinces was unknown. The land situated on the south of the same ridge was possessed and inhabited by the Caribs and other Indians not yet pacified, and by the Dutch, English, and French who were in their company.

The settlements of the Province of Cumaná consisted of its capital, with about 100 very small houses, built of mud and timber, and thatched with clay and straw, and its inhabitants were very poor, although some of them owned small farms on the coast of the gulf or in the Cariaco Valley.

5. These new Missions, and even those near Cumanacoa, were frequently attacked by the

A por los Caribes, y Franceses é Ingleses que los acompañaban, y por haber quemado el Pueblo de San Felix de la Penitencia (vease su situacion en el Mapa General) y cometido otras atrocidades en el sitio de Aragua inmediato á dicho pueblo, se vió el Gobernador Carreño precisado á levantar gente, y hacer una entrada hasta el Rio Guarapiche para castigar á los malhechores lo que efectivamente executó de que dió cuenta á Su Magestad en treinta de Marzo de mil setecientos diez y nueve, y por Real Cedula fecha en Madrid á seis de Marzo de mil setecientos veinte y uno obtuvo la aprobacion como de ella consta á la vuelta del folio cuatro á la del seis de los autos que acompañan.

B 7. A el cargo de los Religiosos observantes de Piritu se hallavan catorse ó quince Pueblos todos en Mision hasta que el mismo Don Joseph Carreño los puso en doctrina el terreno que ocupaban los Indios pacificados era el de la Serrania que mira al Norte, y las Orillas del Rio de Unare hasta el parage donde recibe al Rio Huere. Sus pueblos eran asaltados con frecuencia por los Caribes sostenidos de los Holandeses é Ingleses quienes, con los Indios, corrian todas las desconocidas campañas de la Provincia de Barcelona y parte de las de Caracas, é internavan por el Orinoco á las demas Provincias que dicho Rio facilita navegacion. Esto es á lo que se reducía la Gobernacion de Cumaná en el citado año de setecientos veinte en el que cesó en el mando Don Joseph Carreño, sucediendole Don Juan de la Tornera Sota quien continuó las providencias para sostener las Misiones y contener á los Caribes, Ingleses, Holandeses, y Franceses que las hostilizaban.

D

Capitulo Segundo.—*Progresos en la Gobernacion, desde el año de mil setecientos veinte, hasta el presente de setecientos sesenta y tres.*

E 1. Para explorar las desconocidas campañas de la Provincia de Barcelona, y perseguir á los Caribes y extrangeros que los acompañaban se comenzaron á hacer entradas por los Misioneros sostenidos de la corta Escolta que les podia dar el Gobernador Tornera, con las que lograron reconocer las orillas de los Rios Orinoco y Cary y extraher de los Montes muchos Indios con los que se estableció la Mission de San Buenaventura ó la Margarita y se combocaron mayor numero de Indios para fundar las de Santa Rosa y San Joachin (vease en el Mapa general la situacion de estos tres Pueblos) de que dió cuenta á Su Magestad dicho Gobernador Don Juan de la Tornera con fecha de ocho de Enero de mil setecientos veinte y cuatro, exponiendo lo muy importante que seria á su Real servicio el que se fortificase la Angostura del Orinoco, y en sus inmediaciones fundasen dichos Religiosos alguna ó algunas Misiones, y que se les facilitase para ello la suficiente Escolta, como Su Magestad lo tenia mandado por repetidas Reales Cédulas, proponiendo medios para la efectiva paga de dicha Escolta por no haberse nunca verificado; por lo que estaban muy atrasadas las Misiones, como latamente consta de su consulta que corre en los autos desde la vuelta del folio seis á el nueve á la que mereció la contestacion de Su Magestad por mano de su Secretario de Estado

Caribs and the French and English who accompanied them, and owing to their having burnt the town of San Félix de la Penitencia (see General Map), and perpetrated other outrages at Aragua, in the neighbourhood of the said villages. Governor Carreño found himself compelled to enlist soldiers and make an expedition to the Guarapiche River for the purpose of punishing the offenders. This he duly carried out, and rendered an account thereof to His Majesty on the 30th March, 1719, and obtained its approval by Royal Cedula, dated Madrid, the 6th March, 1721, as shown in folio 4 *verso* to folio 6 of the documents sent herewith.

7. The Observant Friars of Piritu had in their charge fourteen or fifteen Indian villages, all under missionary rule until the same Don Joseph Carreño raised them to the rank of instruction villages. The land occupied by the pacified Indians was situated on the chain of mountains which faces the north, and on the banks of the River Unare, up to the place where it receives the River Huere. Its villages were often attacked by the Caribs, assisted by the Dutch and English, who, with the Indians, overran all the unexplored country of the Province of Barcelona, and part of that of Carácas, and penetrated, through the Orinoco, to the other Provinces, to which the said river facilitates navigation.

To this the Government of Cumaná was reduced in the aforesaid year 1720, in which Don Joseph Carreño ceased to be Governor, and was succeeded by Don Juan de la Tornera Sota, who continued to take measures to preserve the Missions and repress the Caribs, English, Dutch, and French who harassed them.

Chapter II.—*Progress made in the Government from 1720 to the present year, 1763.*

1. In order to explore the unknown lands of the Province of Barcelona, and to pursue the Caribs and the foreigners who accompanied them, some movements towards the interior were started by the missionaries, supported by the small escort which Governor Tornera could give them; by these they succeeded in exploring the banks of the Orinoco and the Cary Rivers, and drawing many Indians from the forests, with whom the Mission of San Buenaventura or La Margarita was established, and a larger number of Indians were collected to found those of Santa Rosa and San Joachin. (See the General Map as to the location of these three villages.) This was reported to His Majesty, under date of the 8th January, 1724, by Governor Don Juan de la Tornera, who urged, as a matter of great importance for the Royal service, that the Angostura of the Orinoco should be fortified, and that the said clergy should found in its neighbourhood one or more Missions, and that for this purpose a sufficient escort should be afforded them, as His Majesty had commanded by repeated Royal Cédulas; proposing measures for the effective payment of the said escort, as it had never been paid, and consequently, the Missions were very backward, as shown at length by his Consulta, which runs from folio 6 *verso* to folio 9. To this His Majesty graciously answered, through

Don Joseph Patiño con fecha en Madrid en siete de Septiembre de mil setecientos veinte y ocho, previniendo á dicho Gobernador haberse expedido las ordenes correspondientes para que se fortificase la Angostura por tenerlo assi resuelto Su Magestad anteriormente como consta de dicha Real orden que corre desde el folio nueve á el diez: y por otra Real orden librada en Madrid con la misma fecha y Don Joseph Patiño que se vé desde el folio diez á el once consta haber dado cuenta á Su Magestad el dicho Gobernador Tornera en Noviembre del año de setecientos veinte y siete del numero de Indios que se habian reducido y poblado con el auxilio que para ello habia dado en el tiempo de su Gobierno, y de que los Indios Caribes y otras naciones bárbaras movieron la guerra con el fin de quitar la vida á los Religiosos Doctrineros y Españoles que los acompañaban y haber hecho la defensa correspondiente en las margenes del Rio Huere (vease en el Mapa General donde esta el Rio Huere) en donde murieron algunos Indios y aprisionados otros; y que á dichas Orillas ó margenes se encontraron once casas á modo de almacenes, y en ellas muchas armas de fuego, cortantes, macanas y flechas y que dichos Indios estaban auxiliados de oficiales y soldados Ingleses con el fin de establecerse en sus antiguas Poblaciones, y haber aprobado Su Magestad quanto practicó el Gobernador en el asunto.

2. Este mismo sistema poco mas ó menos, y sin mayores adelantamientos continuó durante el Gobierno de Don Juan de la Tornera á quien sucedió Don Carlos de Sucre en Agosto de setecientos treinta y três, no obstante haberselo librado los despachos en Octubre de mil setecientos veinte y seis, como se vé desde el folio once á la vuelta del diez y seis de los autos en donde asi mismo consta que se le confirió el Gobierno con el particular encargo de fortificar la Angostura de Orinoco ó Isla de Faxardo, como se expone quando se trate del asunto.

3. Para dar cumplimiento á su comision pasó Sucre al Presidio de Guayana por Febrero de treinta y cuatro donde se mantuvo la mayor parte de su Gobierno; y sin embargo de que para el mando de estas provincias dejó en la capital por su lugarteniente al Marques de San Phelipe, no se escusaron los frecuentes recursos al Gobernador los que por mar eran sumamente costosos, dilatados, y no faciles por no haber Marinero practico sino para la Isla de la Margarita de donde se sacaba para la de la Trinidad y allí se elegia uno ú otro especialmente Indios que lo eran de las bocas de Orinoco hasta Guayana. Por tierra se ignoraba hubiese camino á dicho Presidio, pues en los reconocimientos hechos por los misioneros de Piritu, de las Campañas de la Provincia de Barcelona, solo habian llegado á las orillas del Rio Carique por sumamente caudaloso y ancho en las inmediaciones de su desemboque en el Orinoco no permitia el paso sin embarcacion, de la que se carecia en aquel parage; pero á fuerza de diligencias, hijas de la necesidad, atravesando la cima de la mesa de Guanipa en donde se encuentran los Morichales que forman las cabezeras del Rio Cari (vease en el Mapa general y en la Nota quinta del Quaderno lo que es la Mesa de Guanipa y sus Morichales) y vadeando otros se descubrió el camino hasta el frente de dicho Presidio, único y preciso que oy está en práctica, y se demarca en el Mapa que acompaña.

\* \* \* \*

his Secretary of State, Don Joseph Patiño, in a communication dated at Madrid the 7th September, 1728, by informing the Governor that the proper orders had been issued for the fortification of Angostura, since His Majesty had previously resolved upon it, as appears from the said Royal Order which runs from folio 9 to folio 10.

And by another Royal Order, issued at Madrid, on the same date by the said Secretary, Don Joseph Patiño, which can be found from folio 10 to folio 11, it appears that the said Governor Tornera had reported to His Majesty, in November 1727, the number of Indians who had been reduced and settled through the assistance he had given for that purpose during his term of government, and also that the Caribs and other savage tribes had waged deadly war against the missionaries and the Spaniards who were with them; that the proper defences had been made on the banks of the River Huere (see General Map for the location of this river), where some Indians had perished, and others were made prisoners; and that on the said banks or margins eleven houses were found, of the nature of storehouses, and in them many fire-arms, knives, clubs, and arrows; and that the said Indians were assisted in their effort to establish themselves in the old settlements by English officers and soldiers; and that His Majesty had approved all that the Governor did in the matter.

2. The same system of government, with little or no changes, and no greater advances prevailed during the Governorship of Don Juan de la Tornera. In August 1733 he was replaced by Don Carlos de Sucre, notwithstanding that his commission had been issued in October 1726, as appears from folio 11 to folio 16 *verso* of the Acts, in which it likewise appears that the Government was conferred upon him with the special charge of fortifying the Angostura of Orinoco or the Island Faxardo, as will be shown when the matter is treated of.

3. In order to fulfil his commission, Governor Sucre went to the fortress of Guayana in February 1734, and remained there during the greater part of his term of office, and although he left the Marquis de San Phelipe in the capital as his Lieutenant, he did not escape frequent appeals: those by sea were exceedingly costly, slow, and difficult, as there was no pilot save for the Island of Margarita, where one was obtained for the Island of Trinidad, then another was chosen, especially one of the Indians, who knew the route from the mouths of the Orinoco to Guayana. By land it was unknown whether a road existed to the said fortress, for the missionaries of Piritu, in their explorations of the lands of the Province of Barcelona, had only reached the banks of the River Carique, which, being very wide and carrying a large volume of water near its fall into the Orinoco, was found by them to be impassable, without a boat, which they did not possess there. Nevertheless, under the spur of necessity, with great efforts, after crossing the summit of the Table-land of Guanipa, where the Morichales, forming the sources of the River Cari, are found (see General Map, and Note No. 5 of the Book of Notes, as to what the Table-land of Guanipa and the Morichales are), and fording some other rivers, the road was discovered which leads to a locality just opposite the said fortress. This is the only one now used, and is marked in the map hereto annexed.

\* \* \* \*

A 7. En esta situacion se hallaban las provincias de Cumaná y Barcelona, en el año de mil setecientos cuarenta en el que por el mes de Junio fué relevado Don Carlos de Sucre por su sucesor Don Gregorio de Espinosa, quien igualmente vino encargado de fortificar el Orinoco de que á su tiempo se tratará, y aqui se dirán los sucesos en estas provincias durante su Gobierno.

B 8. Mui luego que tomó posesion de él fue acometida la Guayana por un cosario Ingles : Despacho inmediatamente un destacamento de cien hombres milicianos de la Ciudad de Barcelona ; pero quando llegó á aquel Presidio, ya estaba saqueado con los inmediatos pueblos de Indios y quemadas sus casas y las de la ciudad y aunque no se pudo evitar esta desgracia con el expresado destacamento se consiguió el sosegar varios pueblos de Mission que se havian sublevado y retirados al Monte, con lo que se restituyó dicho destacamento á Barcelona causando el paso de ida y vuelta por sus Campañas, no poco temor á los Caribes que las habitaban del que se aprovecharon los Misioneros para trabajar en poblarlos como lo han conseguido, y lo estan en el día.

C 11. En el año de mil setecientos cuarenta y seis fué relevado Don Gregorio de Espinosa por Don Diego Tabares á quien igualmente se le dió el especial encargo de fortificar el Orinoco. Dicho Tabares lo fué por Don Matheo Gual en el de cincuenta y tres á el que interinamente sucedió Don Nicolas de Castro en Diciembre de cincuenta y siete y este me entregó el mando en Enero de cincuenta y nueve.

D 12. Todos mis antecesores desde Don Gregorio de Espinosa han dado sus particulares providencias para la seguridad, y aumentos de estas provincias, y de resultas de mi visita General, dé no pocas especialmente para el buen Gobierno y tratamiento de los Indios y para evitar desgracias con las embriaguezes de estos en las Misiones de Caribes situadas á orillas de Orinoco, señalando á los Tenientes de Barcelona, Aragua, Pao, y Guayana, los territorios donde deberán ocurrir á la menor noticia de inquietud ; arreglando el metodo de auxiliarse los unos á los otros y lo mismo á los demas tenientes de la Gobernacion, como latamente consta del auto definitivo de las generales resultas de dicha visita dirigido á su Magestad por su Real y Supremo Consejo de Indias con cuyas providencias y las de dichos mis antecesores, se trafican todas las campañas y serranias de estas provincias sin el menor riesgo, y un hombre solo, vá y viene á Guayana sin recelo alguno, lo que veinte años ha no se podia executar sin una fuerte Escolta. En dichas campañas ya no se ven extrangeros aliados de los Caribes ni de estos, mas que los poblados. Por la Mar, Golfo triste, y bocas de Orinoco van y vienen todos estos naturales, navegantes de profesion con igual seguridad por ser excelentes practicos assi de la costa del Norte, como del Río Guarapiche, caños de Santa Isabel, Teresen, y Coiquar, costa de Paria, y Laberinto de bocas de Orinoco.

(Siguen los párrafos 13 y 14 que no se copian.)

7. Such was the condition of things in the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona in 1740, when, in the month of June of the same year, Governor Don Carlos de Sucre was replaced by his successor, Don Gregorio de Espinosa, who had also been instructed to fortify the Orinoco, as will be explained hereafter, and here will be stated the occurrences in these provinces during his government.

8. Very shortly after he took possession thereof, Guayana was attacked by an English privateer. He at once sent thither a force of 100 militiamen of the city of Barcelona, but when they reached that fortress it had already been sacked, together with the neighbouring Indian villages, the houses of which, as well as those of the city, had been burnt. But, though it was impossible to avoid that misfortune, yet, with the said detachment, it was possible to quiet several Mission settlements which had rebelled and withdrawn to the forests, after which the said detachment returned to Barcelona, its passage to and fro through those territories causing no slight fear to the Caribs who dwell in them, whereof the missionaries took advantage to endeavour to settle them in villages, as they have succeeded in doing, and as they exist at the present time.

11. In 1746 Don Gregorio de Espinosa was replaced by Don Diego Tabares, to whom also special instructions were given to fortify the Orinoco. The said Tabares was replaced by Don Matheo Gual in 1753, who was succeeded *ad interim* in December 1757 by Don Nicolás de Castro ; and the latter delivered up the command to me in January 1759.

12. All my predecessors, from Don Gregorio de Espinosa down, were particular in taking measures to insure the safety and development of these provinces, and after my general visit I have taken no small number myself, especially for the good government and proper treatment of the Indians, and to prevent the evil effects of intoxication in the Carib Missions on the banks of the Orinoco ; pointing out to the deputies of Barcelona, Aragua, Pao, and Guayana, the districts to which they ought to hurry at the slightest rumour of disturbance, and laying down the method of mutual assistance ; and similarly to the other deputies of the Government ; as appears in detail in the final record of the general results of the said visit, submitted to His Majesty through his Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies. Owing to these measures and those of my said predecessors, all the lands and ranges of these provinces are traversed without the least risk, and a man can now go alone to and from Guayana without any fear. Twenty years ago it could not be done without a strong escort. No foreigners allied to the Caribs are now seen in the said country, nor Caribs, save those of a settlement. By sea, through the Golfo Triste and the mouths of the Orinoco, all these natives, who are sailors by profession, pass to and fro with equal security, as there are excellent pilots both for the north coast and for the River Guarapiche, the creeks of Santa Isabel, Teresen, and Coiquar, the coast of Paria, and the labyrinth of the mouths of the Orinoco.

Capítulo Trés.—*Debe á los dos cuerpos de Misión que evangelizan en las Provincias de Cumaná y Barcelona los progresos en ellas desde el año de mil setecientos veinte á el presente de mil setecientos sesenta y três.*

(Los párrafos 1 y 2 no se copian.)

3. Pero sin embargo de todo lo dicho á estas dos comunidades, es á quien se deben los progresos espirituales y temporales conseguidos en esta Gobernación, y únicos de quienes pueden esperarse los sucesivos, no solo en estas dos provincias, sino en la Guayana en donde han principiado á evangelizar.

(Los párrafos 4 y 5 no se copian.)

6. Y si estas comunidades fuesen auxiliadas en los términos que tengo suplicado á Su Magestad es de creer se pacifiquen y pueblen en la tierra firme los Guaraunos que habitan los anegadizales de las bocas de Orinoco y se pacifique y conozca la estensísima Provincia de Guayana unico medio para que los Españoles pasen á ocupar las desiertas y fértiles tierras que los Indios no disfrutaban y se pueblen las orillas y inmediaciones del Orinoco de que á su tiempo se tratará y para que más bien se entienda lo que expusiere, he anticipado y hecho constar lo muy importantes que son los cuerpos de Misión bien auxiliados y que por su medio y no por otro puede en estos bastisimos y Reales Dominios establecerse la religion y pacificarse sus naturales y luego poblarse tan desiertas y remotas tierras por los Españoles, que sin estar pacificadas no es asequible pasen á ocuparlas como lo ha enseñado la experiencia en toda la América.

Capítulo Cuatro.—*Actual estado de las Provincias de Cumaná y Barcelona, principales de la Gobernación: Lo poco que con él se puede emprender y de quien pende el cumplimiento de la Real Orden para trasladar la Guayana.*

1. Justificado el infeliz estado que tenia la Gobernación en el año de mil setecientos veinte, sus conocidos aumentos en los quarenta y três corridos hasta el presente, y que se deben á los cuerpos de Misión que evangelizan estas dos provincias sin los quales no hubieran surtido tan conocido efecto las sucesivas y repetidas providencias de mis antecesores, resta justificar y saber su actual estado con el que indispensablemente se ha de contar y de quien pende el cumplimiento del contenido de la Real Orden de veinte y siete de Mayo del año pasado para trasladar la Guayana á la Angostura.

2. Digo, pues, que sin embargo de los supradichos conocidos aumentos se ven estas provincias en miserrimo estado para emprender en la de

[696—3]

Chapter III.—*The progress made in the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona, from 1720 to the present year 1763, is due to the two Missionary Bodies engaged in their Evangelization.*

\* \* \* \*

3. In spite of all this, it must be said that all the progress made in this Government, in spiritual and temporal matters, is due to the two communities above referred to, and also that no further progress can be expected to come from other sources, either in the same two provinces, or in the Province of Guayana, where they have begun to evangelize.

\* \* \* \*

6. If these missionary communities should be assisted in the manner and form I have suggested to His Majesty, it is to be hoped that the Guarauno Indians, who inhabit the swamps at the mouth of the Orinoco, would be pacified and induced to settle on the dry land, and also that the very extensive Province of Guayana would then be explored and pacified. That would be the only way to cause the Spaniards to occupy the fertile and vacant lands which the Indians fail to take advantage of, and settle the banks and the neighbourhood of the Orinoco River. This will be treated more fully in due course; but for the better understanding of what I am about to state, I have shown beforehand how very important the missionary bodies are, if well supported, and that it is through their work, and in no other way, that religion can be established in these vast Royal dominions, and the natives be pacified, and these desert and remote lands be forthwith peopled by Spaniards; for experience has shown in the whole of America that the latter will not settle on any territory which has not been pacified.

Chapter IV.—*Present condition of the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona, which are the principal Provinces of this Government—how little can be undertaken therein, and upon whom the execution of the order to move La Guayana depends.*

1. Having demonstrated the wretched condition in which the Government was in 1720, its evident progress in the forty-three years elapsed up to date, and that it is due to the missionary bodies which are engaged in the evangelization of these two provinces, without which the successive and repeated measures of my predecessors would not have had such acknowledged effect, it remains to show its condition at the present time, which must necessarily be considered, and on which depends the execution of the contents of the Royal Order of the 27th May of last year, directing that Guayana be moved to the Angostura.

2. I say then, that notwithstanding the aforesaid known progress, these provinces are still in too wretched a condition to be able to undertake

D



A Guayana proyectos superiores á sus ningunas fuerzas : hallanse poco menos que desiertas, y con solo ocho muy pequeñas poblaciones las cinco situadas á la costa del Norte, una á diez leguas de distancia de la capital de Cumaná y en el centro de la serrania que es la Ciudad de San Balthasar de los Arias ó Cumanacoa, y la villa de Aragua y poblacion del Pao á el principio de los dilatados Llanos de Barcelona, las rras avanzadas á el Orinoco como se ven demarcadas en el Mapa General."

in Guayana projects beyond their strength, which is nothing at all ; for they are little less than uninhabited, and have only eight very small settlements : five on the northern coast ; one at 10 leagues distance from the capital of Cumaná, and in the centre of the range of hills, namely, the town of San Balthasar de los Arias or Cumanacoa, and the villa of Aragua and settlement of El Pao at the beginning of the extensive plains of Barcelona, which are the nearest to the Orinoco River, as figured in the General Map.

B (Los párrafos del 3 al 13 inclusives no se copian.)

\* \* \* \*

C 14. Quedan manifiestas las circunstancias y actual estado de estas provincias, con el que, como dicho és, se ha de contar indispensablemente para lo que se hubiese de emprender en la de Guayana, no habiendo recurso, ni esperanza en el auxilio de los Indios, pues los que pudieran darle son los impuestos en doctrina como obedientes á las justicias y corregidores ; pero todas las doctrinas de la Gobernacion estan á la costa del Norte y faldas de las serranias de estas provincias á excepcion de la de San Matheo que esta á la parte opuesta y á la entrada de los dilatados Llanos de Barcelona, como se ven demarcadas en el Mapa General, y por tanto muy distantes para que puedan ir á trabajar á el Orinoco resistiendo las Leyes se alejen demasiado de sus pueblos y mucho mas el que vayan á climas distintos de los de su naturaleza. Conque no hay arbitrio para precisarlos á que marchen por las desiertas campañas y llanos de la Provincia de Barcelona á trabajar en la de Guayana."

14. The circumstances and present condition of these provinces have been shown, and this must indispensably be reckoned with for what can be undertaken in Guayana. There is no resource or hope in the assistance of the Indians, for those who might give it are those placed in "doctrinas" as obedient to justices and corregidors ; and all the "doctrinas" of the Government are on the north coast and slopes of the ranges of these provinces, except that of San Matheo, which is on the other side and at the entrance of the extensive plains of Barcelona, as shown in the General Map. They are therefore too far off to be able to go and work on the Orinoco, for they are forbidden by the laws to go far from their villages, and yet more prevented by the climate being different from their native one ; added to which there is no means of compelling them to march through the uninhabited plains and territory of the Province of Barcelona to work in that of Guayana.

D (El parrafo 15 no se copia.)

\* \* \* \*

E 16. De las Misiones de dichos Caribes al cargo de los observantes, ni de las que lo estan á el de los Capuchinos Cathalanes en la misma Provincia de Guayana se puede depender menos pues por ser recién plantadas no entienden el Idioma ni tienen obediencia, ni estan hechos á continuo trabajo, y si se les apura á mas de lo que ellos quieren, toman el monte y abandonan los Pueblos, con lo que no se consigue el fin, se pierden estos miserables, y se siguen otros muchos irreparables perjuicios.

16. Still less dependence can be placed upon the Carib Missions of the Franciscan Fathers and the Catalanian Capuchins of the Province of Guayana, because these Missions are recently established. The natives do not understand the language well, and are not yet accustomed to obedience or to continuous work, and if urged to do more than they like, they betake themselves to the forests and abandon the villages, so that the object is not attained, the poor wretches are lost, and many other irreparable injuries follow.

(El parrafo 17 no se copia.)

\* \* \* \*

Capitula Cinco.—*Lo que era la Provincia de Guayana en el año de mil setecientos veinte y sus adelantamientos en los ciento cuarenta y un años anteriores.*

Chapter V.—*What the Province of Guayana was in the year 1720, and what progress was made in it during the previous 141 years.*

F 1. Hallabase la Provincia de Guayana en el año de mil setecientos veinte subordinada á el Gobierno de la Trinidad, y sin mas Poblacion que el Presidio ó ciudad de Santo Thome situada á orillas del Rio Usupamo y con solas veinte ó veinte y cinco casas ocupadas por otros tantos vecinos destituidos de todo humano socorro en quienes no habia facultades ni fuerzas para desmontar los espesos bosques de que estaba

1. In the year 1720 the Province of Guayana was a dependency of the Government of Trinidad, and with no other settlement than the fortress or town of Santo Thomé, situated on the banks of the River Usupamo, and containing only twenty or twenty-five houses, occupied by the same number of residents, deprived of all human assistance, and with no means whatever to clear the dense forests which surrounded the place, and

rodeada, los que la hacian de una intemperie insufrible á la que tambien contribuian la suma escasez de viveres siendo únicos los varios pescados del Rio Orinoco todos nocivos y propensos á calenturas, alguna carne de monte, y lo que producian las cortas labranzas que podian hacer inmediatas á la ciudad de la que no se alejaban por el conocido riesgo de ser acometidos de los Caribes que ocupaban y corrian las campañas; con cuya intemperie y falta de viveres estaban aquellos pobres habitantes sin gozar hora de salud.

2. Las fortificaciones de este Presidio se reducian á solo el Castillo de San Francisco indefenso por sus endebles y arruinadas murallas y de falta de gente para manejar su corta artilleria que consistia en quatro ó seis cañoncitos de pequeños Calibres y uno de á quince sin vateria correspondiente. Este es el infeliz estado que tenia la ciudad de Guayana segun deposicion de tres viejos que en el dia son sus vecinos y este es el aumento que tuvo en ciento cuarenta y un años de establecida en aquel parage y trasladada del sitio de su primera fundacion siete leguas mas arriba á el desemboque del Rio Caroni y frente de la Isla de Faxardo como demarca el Mapa que acompaña y expone el Padre Gumilla en el folio diez de su Orinoco Ilustrado refiriendose á el Historiador Herrera.

Capitulo Seis.—*Providencias para fortificar el Orinoco dadas desde el año de mil seiscientos noventa y cuatro hasta Mayo de mil setecientos sesenta y dos que es su ultimo estado.*

1. En el año de mil quinientos setenta y nueve que segun dicho Padre Gumilla fue saqueada y quemada la antigua Guayana, algunos de sus vecinos y con bastante conocimiento eligieron por parage mas ventajoso el sitio en que oy se halla y como les fue posible fortificaron la peña que forma el Castillo de San Francisco. Dichos vecinos y sus sucesores hasta el año de mil setecientos veinte se mantuvieron en aquel destierro y soledad con una constancia imponderable y á ellos se debió el que los extrangeros no se apoderasen del Orinoco pues aunque no podian hacer la mayor resistencia, hicieron la suficiente para que no los desalojasen del puesto que ocupaban, fuerte y respetable á los enemigos; pero como el vecindario era tan corto, el Castillo maltratado y su artilleria tan inferior no podian evitar la entrada y salida de los extrangeros por delante del Castillo quienes libremente lo executaban de noche y de dia acompañados de los Indios Caribes y con ellos corrian las desconocidas Provincias de Cumaná, Barcelona, y Carácas, y navegando el Orinoco, subian á las de Varinas y Santa Fé, saqueaban y quemaban los Pueblos de Mision que se establecian en ellas y los Holandeses, especialmente compraban á los Caribes y se llevaban los Indios que podian para el establecimiento y cultivo de los Plantajes en sus Colonias de Essequibo, Bervis, Surinama, y Corentin.

which caused its climate to be unbearable, to which also the extreme scarcity of provisions contributed. For no other food could be obtained than the various fishes of the river, all unwholesome, and apt to produce fevers, some game, and the produce of the small farms they were able to make near the town, from which they did not go far, on account of the known risk of being attacked by the Caribs who occupied and overran the country. And this bad climate and want of food kept those poor inhabitants without the enjoyment of good health even for an hour.

2. The fortifications of this fortress consisted only of the Castle of San Francisco, defenceless on account of its feeble and ruined walls, and for want of soldiers to manage its scanty artillery, which consisted of four or six cannons of small calibre and one 15-pr. gun without its corresponding battery.

This, according to the testimony of three old men who still live in Guayana, was the miserable condition of that town, and this is the progress which was made there in the 141 years since its foundation on the site on which it now stands, and to which it was moved from its original location, 7 leagues higher up, at the mouth of the Caroni River, opposite the Faxardo Island, as shown by the map sent herewith and by the statements of Father Gumilla in folio 10 of his "Orinoco Ilustrado," when referring to the historian Herrera.

Chapter VI.—*Measures taken to fortify the Orinoco between 1694 and the month of May, 1762, when it was left as it now stands.*

1. In the year 1579, when, according to Father Gumilla, old Guayana had been plundered and burnt down, some of its inhabitants, showing a good deal of sound judgment, selected the place where the city now stands as the most advantageous site, and fortified, as well as they could, the rock on which the San Francisco Castle was erected. The said residents and their successors were enabled, with almost incredible perseverance, to maintain themselves in that exile and solitude up to the year 1720, and it was due to them that foreigners could not take possession of the Orinoco, because, although the resistance which they could have made was not very great, it was sufficient not to allow strangers to dislodge them from their position, which was strong and respectable in the eyes of enemies. But as the number of inhabitants was so small, the castle so dilapidated, and its artillery so inferior, they could not prevent the foreigners from passing to and fro in front of the castle; and they did so freely, by night and by day, accompanied by the Caribs, with whom they overran the neglected Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, and Carácas, and navigating the Orinoco, went up to those of Barinas and Santa Fé. They plundered and burnt the Mission villages which were established in them, and the Dutch, chiefly, bought from the Caribs and carried away all the Indians they could, for the establishment and cultivation of the plantations in their Colonies of Essequibo, Berbice, Surinam, and Corentin.

- A 2. Las continuas inquietudes y desgracias que ocasionaban los asaltos de dichos extranjeros y Caribes, dieron motivo á los diferentes recursos que se hicieron á Su Magestad assi por los Gobernadores de la Trinidad, Cumaná, y Carácas, como por los Misioneros observantes de Piritu Capuchinos Cathalanes de la Provincia de Guayana, Andaluces Misioneros en la de Carácas, Jesuitas del nuevo Reyno de Granada, y Misioneros en los Rios Meta y Casanare, pidiendo se dignase su Real Piedad tomar las providencias que fuesen mas de su beneplacito para impedir y atajar el inhumano comercio de los Barbaros Caribes, y el ilícito de la nacion Holandesa, cuyos recursos desde el año de mil seiscientos noventa y cuatro, merecieron la benigna atencion de Su Magestad y para proveer de remedio á tan justificados daños, se pidieron informes á los Gobernadores de la Trinidad y Guayana y Prefecto de las Misiones establecidas en el Orinoco de la religion de San Francisco, Capuchinos, y Jesuitas, los que habiendolo executado se remitieron por el Consejo á la Audiencia de Santa Fé para que asegurandose de la verdad de los fundamentos con que apoyaban dichos informes, y con examen de personas practicas, si estimase la Audiencia por el mayor numero de votos hacer la fortificacion en el Rio Orinoco, se pasase á executar en la forma que mas conviniera; lo que no tuvo efecto hasta el año de mil setecientos diez y nueve que por Don Antonio de Pedrosa que se hallaba entendiendo en el establecimiento del Virreynato de Santa Fé se dispuso el reconocimiento de las margenes del Rio Orinoco el que se executó por algunos Jesuitas y otras personas practicas, y resultó ser el sitio mas a proposito para fortificarle la Isla de Faxardo por las razones que expusieron, lo que el Consejo hizo presente á Su Magestad en Consulta de siete de Junio de mil setecientos veinte y tres. Y con el motivo de otros nuevos recursos que Su Magestad remitió al Consejo para que sobre sus contenidos le dijese lo que se le ofrecia y parecia, hizo el Consejo en su consecuencia tres Consultas á Su Magestad á las que fué servido resolver en decreto de primero de Julio de mil setecientos veinte y seis se construyese un fuerte de cuenta de su Real Hacienda en la Isla de Faxardo, y se cometiese la direccion á Don Carlos de Sucre Gobernador que entonces era de la ciudad de Cuba. En cumplimiento de esta Real deliberacion se le libraron los correspondientes despachos en treinta y uno de Octubre de mil setecientos veinte y seis, é igualmente los de Gobernador de Cumaná y por otra Real Cédula su fecha en Sevilla en treinta de Junio de mil setecientos treinta y uno se agregó á este Gobierno la Provincia de Guayana que lo estaba á el de la Trinidad cuya Real Cédula y Titulo de Gobernador del expresado Sucre, para en el Archivo, y otra librada en Sevilla en veinte y dos de Diciembre de mil setecientos veinte y nueve para la construccion de dicho Fuerte en la Isla Faxardo con las condiciones que en ella se expresan, se vé testimoniada en los Autos desde el folio once á la vuelta del diez y seis.
- F 3. Por Real Cédula de quince de Enero de mil setecientos treinta y uno mandó Su Magestad que el Yngeniero Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo que se hallava en la Plaza de Cartagena de Indias, pasase á reconocer las fortificaciones de Guayana y que de su estado, utilidad ó inutilidad de ellas, y los reparos y nuevas obras que considerase necesarias acordandolo con el Gobernador de la Trinidad Don

2. The continual anxieties and injuries produced by the attacks of the said foreigners and Caribs induced the Governors of Trinidad, Cumaná, and Carácas, as well as the Franciscan missionaries of Piritu, the Catalanian Capuchins of the Province of Guayana, the Andalusian missionaries of Carácas, the Jesuits of the New Kingdom of Granada, and the missionaries of the Meta and the Casanare Rivers to address different Memorials to His Majesty, asking him graciously to provide what in his Royal judgment would be conducive to prevent and stop the inhuman traffic of the Caribs and the unlawful trade of the Dutch. These representations received the kind consideration of His Majesty since 1694, and, in order to provide the proper remedy for such well proved injuries, reports were called for from the Governors of Trinidad and Guayana and the Prefects of the Franciscan, Capuchin, and Jesuit Missions of the Orinoco. When these reports were given, they were referred by the Council to the Audiencia of Santa Fé, in order that ascertaining the truth of the data upon which the said reports were based, and upon examination of experts, if the Audiencia by a majority of votes deemed it advisable to make the fortification on the River Orinoco, it should be carried out in such a manner as might be thought proper. Nothing was done in this respect, however, until the year 1719, when Don Antonio de Pedrosa, who was attending to the organization of the Vice-Royalty of Santa Fé, arranged for the exploration of the banks of the River Orinoco, which was made by some Jesuit Fathers and other persons of knowledge and experience, and the Island of Faxardo was found to be the most suitable position for fortifying it, for the reasons given; this the Council, in a Consulta dated the 7th June, 1723, submitted to His Majesty. But in view of other fresh representations which His Majesty sent to the Council for report on their contents, the Council made three Consultas to His Majesty, upon which he was pleased to resolve, by Decree of the 1st July, 1726, that a fort should be built, at the expense of the Royal Treasury, at the Island Faxardo, and that the direction of the work should be intrusted to Don Carlos de Sucre, who was at that time the Governor of the city of Cuba. In compliance with this decision of His Majesty the corresponding commissions were issued on the 31st October, 1726, and likewise those of Governor of Cumaná; and by another Royal Cedula, dated at Seville, 30th June, 1731, the Province of Guayana, which was at that time united to Trinidad, was annexed to this Government. And this Royal Cedula, with the Governor's commission of the said Sucre, is kept in the Archives, and another, issued also at Seville, on the 22nd December, 1729, for building the said fort at the Island Faxardo, with the conditions therein expressed, is to be seen, duly certified, in the Acts, from folio 11 to folio 16 verso.

3. By Royal Cedula of the 15th January, 1731. His Majesty directed Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo, an engineer, who was then at Cartagena de Indias, to go to Guayana, examine the fortifications, and report to His Majesty about their condition and use or uselessness, and the repairs and new works he might think necessary; acting in conjunction with Don Agustin de Arredondo, Go-

Agustin de Arredondo, informase á Su Magestad en su obediencia, despues de reconocidas las bocas de Orinoco, parte del Rio su Angostura, la situacion de Guayana, é Isla de Faxardo, celebraron Junta en la de la Trinidad en veinte y ocho de Junio de mil setecientos treinta y tres en la que unanimes y conformes, acordaron debia permanecer el Castillo de San Francisco de Asis por estar situado en el paraje mas ventajoso de todo el Orinoco: que se hiciesen en él los precisos reparos que por entonces consideraron suficientes: que se fortificase el Cerro del Padraсто: que se construyese un Fuerte á la Orilla opuesta al Castillo de San Francisco y en la Isla que llaman de Limones: tubieron por inutil, perjudicial é impracticable el fortificar la Isla de Faxardo, con lo demas que latamente consta desde el folio sesenta y uno al sesenta y ocho de los Autos y haber dado cuenta á Su Magestad con lo acordado en la Junta, pero no hay documento que justifique tomase el Rey providencia de resultas del citado informe del que se ha hecho aqui memoria por lo importante que es el parecer del Ingeniero Faxardo y Gobernador Arredondo.

4. Don Carlos de Sucre se hizo cargo del Gobierno de Cumaná en Agosto de mil setecientos treinta y tres y dadas en su capital las providencias correspondientes emprendió su viage al Presidio de Guayana en Febrero de treinta y cuatro llevandose consigo á el Ingeniero Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo quien se hallaba en Cumaná y de retirada á Cartagena por haber desempeñado su comision en el Orinoco. A su arribo á aquel Presidio reconoció sus fortificaciones y con mui especial cuidado la Angostura é Isla de Faxardo que llevaba comision de fortificar, de que resultó informar á Su Magestad con fecha de diez de Mayo de mil setecientos treinta y cinco haciendo constante la imposibilidad de fortificar dicha Isla y que los anteriores informes dados á Su Magestad eran sin duda por algunos Religiosos sin mas inteligencia en materias de fortificacion que la de su idea, cuyo informe de Sucre, un Memorial del Marques de San Phelipe, y otro del Gobernador de la Trinidad los remitió Su Magestad al Consejo para que en vista de todo informase lo que se le ofreciese y pareciese. Para poderlo executar con el fundamento que se debia tuvo por conveniente el Consejo tomar nuevos informes especialmente de Fray Francisco del Castillo Misionero de las conversiones de Piritu, quien con documentos, justificativos expuso su dictamen asegurando ser inutil la Isla de Faxardo; y proposito precisa y conveniente la Angostura del Orinoco para construir en ella la proyectada fortificacion, lo que el Consejo hizo presente á Su Magestad siendo de dictamen se fortificase la Angostura y que para ello se diesen las providencias correspondientes, con lo que se conformó Su Magestad en diez de Diciembre de mil setecientos treinta y ocho.

5. Antes que Su Magestad tomase resolucion á la representacion hecha por dicho Sucre presentó el Padre Joseph Gumilla en su Real y Supremo Consejo de Indias un Memorial ó informe sosteniendo con razones bien aparentes para el que no tubiese conocimiento del Orinoco, que la fortificacion de que se trataba debia construirse en la Isla de Faxardo, sindicando la conducta del Gobernador Sucre y el contenido del memorial presentado por el Marques de San Phelipe como consta en los autos desde la vuelta del folio veinte hasta la del treinta y tres, y desde esta á la del cuarenta

[696—3]

vernor of Trinidad. In compliance therewith, after having surveyed the mouths of the Orinoco, a portion of the river, its Angostura, the site of Guayana and the Island of Faxardo, they held a conference in the Island of Trinidad on the 28th June, 1733, wherein it was decided unanimously that the Castle of San Francisco de Asis should remain because it was in the most advantageous position along the whole course of the Orinoco: that certain necessary repairs should be made in it: that the Padraсто Hill should be fortified: that a fort should be built on the bank opposite the Castle of San Francisco and in the island called Limones: and they considered it useless, injurious, and impracticable to fortify the Island of Faxardo with; all else that fully appears from folio 61 to folio 68 of the Acts, as also that the decision of the conference was submitted to the King; but there is nothing to show that His Majesty took action upon the said Report, of which mention has been made here on account of the importance of the opinion of Engineer Faxardo and Governor Arredondo.

4. Don Carlos de Sucre took possession of the Government of Cumaná in August 1733; and in the month of February 1734, after giving such orders as he thought proper at his capital, he started on his journey to the fortress of Guayana, taking with him the Engineer Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo, who was at Cumaná, on his way to Cartagena, after having fulfilled his mission on the Orinoco. Upon his arrival at that fortress he examined its fortifications, and inspected with great care the Angostura and the Island of Faxardo which he had been instructed to fortify. The result is embodied in the report to His Majesty of the 10th May, 1735, wherein he showed the impossibility of fortifying the said island, and that the previous reports given to His Majesty were, doubtless, by some of the clergy, who had no further knowledge in matters of fortification than their own ideas. This report made by Sucre, together with a Memorial of the Marquis de San Phelipe, and another of the Governor of Trinidad, were referred by His Majesty to the Council, so that in view of everything it might give its opinion and judgment. In order to do so upon good grounds, the Council thought it advisable to obtain fresh reports, especially from Fray Francisco del Castillo, one of the Piritu missionaries, who reported, with substantiating documents, that the Faxardo Island was useless, and that the Angostura of the Orinoco was precisely the best and most adequate place in which to build the proposed fortress; this the Council laid before His Majesty, being of opinion that the Angostura should be fortified, and that the necessary measures should be taken for the purpose, to which His Majesty agreed on the 10th December, 1738.

5. Before His Majesty had taken any action on the representations made by the said Sucre, Father Joseph Gumilla laid before the Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies a Memorial or Report, urging, with arguments, very specious to any one unacquainted with the Orinoco, that the fortification in question should be built on the Island of Faxardo, criticizing the conduct of Governor Sucre, and the contents of the Memorial presented by the Marquis de San Phelipe, as shown in the Acts from folio 20 verso to folio 33, and from this to folio 40, another Memorial of the Marquis de San

E

**A** se halla otro memorial del Marques de San Phelipe satisfaciendo con razones mas solidas y de mas conocimiento en la dependencia á el anterior del Padre Gumilla, quien sin duda informó á Su Magestad por sostener el dictamen de los Jesuitas que reconocieron el Orinoco el año de mil setecientos diez y nueve por disposicion de Don Antonio de la Pedrosa y contra lo mismo que sentia dicho Padre Gumilla como consta de la carta escrita á mi antecesor Don Diego Tabares, de letra y puño del expresado Padre que para en autos y testimoniada corre en los que acompañan desde la vuelta del folio cuarenta á la del cuarenta y dos en la que afirma ser inutil la Isla de Faxardo y que escribió á favor de ella por obedecer á su Padre Provincial quien assi se lo mandó; pero que en Dios y en su conciencia halla mucho mejor y á menor costa el fortificar la Isla de Limones pues se cierra el Orinoco; y que de fortificar la de Faxardo es dejar doce leguas á el arbitrio de los Extrangeros y camino para que puedan correr libremente las Provincias de Cumaná, Barcelona y Caracás, con lo demas que de dicha carta consta.

**B** y dos en la que afirma ser inutil la Isla de Faxardo y que escribió á favor de ella por obedecer á su Padre Provincial quien assi se lo mandó; pero que en Dios y en su conciencia halla mucho mejor y á menor costa el fortificar la Isla de Limones pues se cierra el Orinoco; y que de fortificar la de Faxardo es dejar doce leguas á el arbitrio de los Extrangeros y camino para que puedan correr libremente las Provincias de Cumaná, Barcelona y Caracás, con lo demas que de dicha carta consta.

**C** 6. Ni á el Memorial del Padre Gumilla ni á el que en su contestacion presentó el Marqués de San Phelipe se dió providencia por el Consejo; pero sí los tuvo presentes; y habiendose Su Magestad dignado conferir á Don Gregorio de Espinosa el Gobierno de Cumaná con iguales encargos que á su antecesor Don Carlos de Sucre de orden del Consejo formó su Fiscal Don Joseph Borrull, una instruccion su fecha en Madrid en tres de Diciembre de mil setecientos treinta y nueve en la que constan todos los antecedentes en orden á fortificar el Orinoco hasta la fecha de dicha Instruccion la que se entregó á el mencionado Espinosa y con ella los memoriales del Padre Gumilla y Marques de San Phelipe para que le sirviesen de gobierno sus noticias y procediese con el arreglo que se le previno en dicha Instruccion.

**D** 7. En Junio de mil setecientos cuarenta fué relevado Don Carlos de Sucre por su sucesor Don Gregorio de Espinosa quien trajo consigo á el Ingeniero Don Antonio Jordan á el que mui luego despachó al Presidio de Guayana para reparar la ciudad abrasada y saqueada por un Corsario Ingles, y para que reconociese la Angostura y la Isla de Faxardo en el tiempo que lo permitiesen las bajantes de Orinoco, é interin dicho Espinosa se desocupaba de las ocurrencias en la Capital con motivo de la Guerra. El expresado Jordan murió en su comission; y sin embargo de que el Gobernador ocurrió á el de Caracás, y á el Virrey de Santa Fé para que le proveyesen de nuevo Ingeniero no tuvo efecto por lo que en el año de mil setecientos cuarenta y tres pasó á dicho Presidio y en compañía de varias personas practicas reconoció la Angostura, Isla de Faxardo y situacion de Guayana y todos con el mismo Gobernador fueron de dictamen, que el enunciado Fuerte se debia construir en la Isla y boca del caño de Limones frente del Castillo de San Francisco como único y apropósito sitio para cerrar el Rio cuyo dictamen y demas que tuvo por conveniente lo representó á Su Magestad en su Real y Supremo Consejo con fecha de treinta de Septiembre de mil setecientos cuarenta y tres; y por no haber obtenido Real deliberacion en el asunto, nada se adelantó durante su Gobierno.

**E** 8. En Diciembre de mil setecientos cuarenta y cinco fué nombrado el Brigadier Don Diego

Phelipe is to be found, wherein he refutes, upon much more substantial grounds, and much better information, the foregoing one of Father Gumilla, who doubtless had addressed His Majesty only to indorse the opinion of the Jesuits, who, in 1719, had explored the Orinoco by order of Don Antonio de la Pedrosa, and contrary to his own ideas, as shown by a letter written in his own handwriting, to my predecessor, Don Diego Tabares, which is to be found in the Acts hereto appended, from folio 40 *verso* to folio 42, wherein he affirms that the Island of Faxardo is useless, and that he wrote in favour of it in obedience to his Father Provincial, who had ordered him to do so; but that in his own conscientious opinion, the fortification of the Limones Island is much better, because it would close the Orinoco, and would be less expensive, and that to fortify the Faxardo Island would be to leave 12 leagues of territory to the mercy of the foreigners, and an open road for overrunning the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona and Caracás; with the rest that appears in the said letter.

6. The Council took no action on either the Memorial submitted to it by Father Gumilla, or the reply by the Marquis San Phelipe; but it took both of them into proper consideration. When His Majesty was pleased to appoint Don Gregorio de Espinosa, Governor of Cumaná, giving him orders identical with those which his predecessor, Don Carlos de Sucre, had received, the Council ordered its Fiscal, Don Joseph Borrull, to prepare an instruction, dated in Madrid, the 3rd December, 1739, in which is shown the whole history of the plans of the fortification of the Orinoco, up to the date of the Instruction, which was forwarded to the said Espinosa, together with the Memorials of Father Gumilla and the Marquis de San Phelipe, in order that their information might serve for his guidance, and that he might proceed according to the directions in the said Instruction.

7. On June 1740, Don Carlos de Sucre was succeeded by Don Gregorio de Espinosa, who brought with him Don Antonio Jordan, an engineer, whom he at once sent to the fortress of Guayana to rebuild the town, which had been plundered and burnt by an English corsair, and to survey Angostura and the Faxardo Island at such time as the decrease of the waters of the Orinoco would permit; and meanwhile the said Espinosa remained at the capital to attend to certain war business which required his presence. The said Jordan died while performing his duties, and although Governor Espinosa wrote to the Governor of Caracás and the Viceroy of Santa Fé, asking them for another engineer, it was of no avail. For this reason he went, in 1743, to the said fortress, in company with some persons of experience, and surveyed Angostura and the Faxardo Island and the position of Guayana. The Governor and his companions were all of the opinion that the fortress should be built on the Island of Limones, at the mouth of the creek, opposite the San Francisco Castle, as being the only site adequate to close the river. A report to this effect was sent to His Majesty, through his Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies, under date the 30th September, 1743; but for want of His Majesty's deliberation on the matter, no progress was made while he was Governor.

8. In December 1745, Brigadier General Don Diego Tabares was appointed to succeed Don



Tabares para relevar á Don Gregorio de Espinosa, y con igual comision á la de este y su antecesor Sucre para fortificar el Orinoco á cuyo fin se le entregó copia de la Instruccion formada por el Fiscal del Consejo Don Joseph Borrull los memoriales del Padre Gumilla y el Marqués de San Phelipe y á dicha Instruccion se puso una nota por el Secretario del Consejo Don Fernando Triviño en la que constan todas las occurencias en tiempo del Gobierno de dicho Espinosa para que bien instruido Tabares de los antecedentes constantes en los expresados documentos procediese como se le previno por Real Cedula de nueve de Diciembre de mil setecientos cuarenta y cinco y latamente consta en los autos desde la vuelta del folio cuarenta y dos á el cincuenta y cinco.

9. El expresado Brigadier Don Diego Tabares tomó posesion de este Gobierno en Mayo de cuarenta y seis y para desempeñar su comision pasó al Presidio de Guayana en Febrero de cuarenta y siete y en su compañía el Ingeniero Don Gaspar de Lara á quien habia trahido de España; y despues de reconocido el terreno y demas circunstancias prevenidas en la Instruccion acordaron: deberse construir el fuerte en la Isla de Limones é inmediato á el caño del mismo nombre; y con los correspondientes Planos y las razones que tuvieron para la eleccion de dicho parage, dió cuenta el Gobernador á el Excelentísimo Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava Virrey de Santa Fé, como á quien estaba cometida la aprobacion por las Instrucciones y Real orden anteriormente citadas, y en el interin resolvia el Virrey se regresó Tabares á la Capital de Cumaná, dejando encargado á Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Comandante de aquel Presidio, hiciese talar parte del Bosque que contenia la Isla de Limones y observase si las crecencias del Orinoco causaban alguna novedad en el terreno, lo que executó como se dirá.

10. El Virrey de Santa Fé pasó la carta del Gobernador Tabares con un Plano y perfil que la acompañaba á Don Juan Bautista Mac-evan Ingeniero Director de la Plaza de Cartagena para que expusiese su dictamen y en virtud de el aprobó el Virrey el sitio para la construccion del Fuerte y su Plano, mandando se pudiese luego por obra, con otras providencias que dió para el mismo fin, como consta desde el folio ochenta y seis á el noventa y dos; pero sin embargo de dichas providencias, nada se pudo emprender por no haber remitido los oficiales Reales de Carácas los caudales librados en aquellas caxas para el efecto; ni estos se recibieron hasta el año de mil setecientos cincuenta y dos que por el Virrey de Santa Fé se enviaron los diez y seis mil pesos calculados para la obra, y en virtud de Real Orden comunicada por el Excelentísimo Señor Marques de la Ensenada, como consta de la vuelta del folio noventa y dos á el noventa y cuatro.

11. Habidos que fueron dichos caudales y en el oportuno tiempo del año de mil setecientos cincuenta y tres, volvió Tabares con el Ingeniero Lara á Guayana para dar principio al mencionado Fuerte y verificó la novedad que anteriormente se le habia noticiado por el Comandante Don Juan de Dios Valdes que de resultados del desmonte que se hizo en la Isla de Limones, se habian llevado las avenidas del Orinoco veinte y tres varas de la mencionada Isla, por ser toda movediza como consta de las observaciones que á sus tiempos hizo el expresado Comandante, de las que formó la

Gregorio de Espinosa. He was given the same instructions as Sucre and Espinosa, in regard to the fortification of the Orinoco, for which purpose he was supplied with a copy of the Instruction drawn up by the Fiscal of the Council, Don Joseph Borrull, and of the Memorials of Father Gumilla and the Marquis de San Phelipe, and a note, written by Don Fernando Treviño, Secretary of the Council, was appended to the said Instruction showing all that had happened during Governor Espinosa's administration, that Tabares, being thus well acquainted with all the facts given in the said documents, should proceed as directed by the Royal Ordinance of the 9th December 1745. This is shown at length in the Acts from folio 42 *verso* to folio 55.

9. Brigadier Don Diego Tabares took possession of the Government on May 1746, and in fulfilment of his commission went to the fortress of Guayana in February 1747, with Don Gaspar de Lara, an engineer whom he had brought from Spain. Upon examination of the locality and other points set forth in the Royal Instruction, they agreed: that the fortress should be built on the Island of Limones, near the mouth of the creek of the same name. And with the corresponding plans and their reasons for selecting the said place, the Governor sent a report to his Excellency Don Sebastian de Eslava, Viceroy of Santa Fé, to whom His Majesty, as shown by the aforesaid Instructions and Royal Orders, had intrusted the final approval of this matter. While waiting for the action of the Viceroy, Tabares returned to the capital of Cumaná, leaving instructions to Don Juan de Dios Valdés, the Commandant of that fortress, to clear a part of the forest of the Island of Limones and to see whether the risings of the Orinoco caused any change in the soil; which he did, as will be stated.

10. The Viceroy of Santa Fé referred the letter of Governor Tabares, together with a map and outline which accompanied it, to Don Juan Bautista MacEvan, Engineer-in-chief at Cartagena, for his opinion; and in virtue thereof the Viceroy approved the site for the construction of the fort and its plan, ordering the work to be taken in hand at once, with other measures that he directed for the same object, as shown from folio 86 to 96. But notwithstanding the said measures nothing could be done, because the officials of the Royal Treasury at Carácas, from whom the necessary funds were payable, failed to send them. No money was obtained until 1752, when the Viceroy of Santa Fé sent 16,000 pesos, at which sum the work had been estimated. The Viceroy had been instructed to do so by Royal Order transmitted to him by his Excellency the Marquis de la Ensenada, as can be seen from folio 92 *verso* to folio 94.

11. In the year 1753, when the moneys were at hand and the fitting season had arrived, Governor Tabares and Engineer Lara went again to Guayana in order to begin the building of the said fort; but they found, as reported by Commandant Don Juan de Dios Valdés, that in consequence of the clearing of the forest at the Island of Limones, the floods of the Orinoco had carried away some 23 yards of the said island, which is all loose; as appears from the observations made by the said Commandant, respecting which he drew up the Report that runs from folio 55 to 61. The truth of these facts having

**A** relacion que corre desde el folio cincuenta y cinco al sesenta y uno, y en vista de lo cierto de ella se acordó; que el enunciado Fuerte se construyese en la tierra firme por ser terreno al parecer mas solido y nó tan sujeto á las inundaciones de Orinoco, y que inmediatamente se pusiese por obra la abertura de los cimientos, lo que así se executó constando justificadas las razones para todo lo dicho desde el folio sesenta y ocho á la vuelta del ochenta y cuatro y la situacion, figura y diametros de dicho fuerte se ven en el Mapa que acompaña.

**B** 12. En Junio del mismo año de setecientos cincuenta y tres fue promovido Don Diego Tabares á el Gobierno de Cartagena, y entregó este á su sucesor Don Matheo Gual el Fuerte de San Fernando con los cimientos quasi á el plan de la tierra; y á el Ingeniero Don Gaspar de Lara arrestado.

**C** 13. El expresado Gual dió cuenta á Su Magestad con datas de Octubre de cincuenta y tres y Junio de cincuenta y cuatro del estado en que se hallaba dicho Fuerte, gastos que se habian hecho, residuo que quedaba de los diez y seis mil pesos calculados, y dirigidos por el Virrey de Santa Fé y del arresto en que su antecesor le habia entregado al Ingeniero Lara.

**D** 14. Y en Real Orden comunicada por V. E. su fecha en Madrid en veinte y tres de Julio de mil setecientos cincuenta y cinco se digno Su Magestad mandar que luego que empezase la favorable estacion se continuase con ardor la construccion del Fuerte valiendose para ello del residuo de los diez y seis mil pesos y en su defecto de los mas exequibles de estas caxas de suerte que la primera noticia que se diese á su Magestad fuese la de su entera conclusion ó estar para ello, y que no se construyese de la piedra reprobada; y si de Ladrillo. Que á el Ingeniero Don Gaspar de Lara se le sacase del arresto en que se hallava para que continuase la obra sin intervencion de otras personas en lo respectivo á su profesion, aunque bajo de las ordenes del Virrey, Gobernador, ó su Lugarteniente en Guayana. Que sin que parase la obra se dirigiese al Virrey puntual estado de ella, y en caso de no considerarse suficientes caudales con el residuo existente, se formase cálculo para que con noticia de todo dispusiese el Virrey la pronta remesa del que faltase á fin de que tuviese efecto la conclusion de dicho Fuerte y demas que consta de la citada Real Orden que corre desde la vuelta del folio noventa y cuatro al noventa y seis.

**F** 15. Quando Gual la recibió, ya habia remitido á España al Ingeniero Lara por disposicion del Virrey quien en cumplimiento de las ordenes que tambien recibió sobre el asunto determinó por fecha de diez y siete de Agosto de cincuenta y seis, se encargase el Sargento Mayor de esta Plaza Don Gaspar de Salaverría de la continuacion de dicha obra con las circunstancias que previene Su Magestad en su Real Orden librada á el Gobernador. En cuya virtud le mandó este á Salaverría se hiciese cargo de la obra y que formase calculo del caudal necesario ademas del residuo y materiales existentes el que lo executó, y despues de haberlo aprobado el Gobernador, libró decreto á los oficiales Reales para que aprontasen los nueve mil doscientos cuatro pesos

been ascertained, the Governor and the engineer decided to build the fortress on the bank, which seemed firm and not so subject to the inundations of the Orinoco, and to begin at once to build the foundations; which was duly carried out, as stated from folio 68 to folio 84 *verso*. The position, shape, and size of the said fort are shown in the map sent herewith.

12. In June of the same year, 1753, Governor Don Diego de Tabares was promoted and sent as Governor to Cartagena. His successor, Don Matheo Gual, received from him the Fort of San Fernando, with its foundations almost at the level of the ground, and Engineer Don Gaspar de Lara, who was then under arrest.

13. The said Gual reported to His Majesty by letters of October 1753, and June 1754, the actual condition of the fortress, the amount of money which had been expended out of the 16,000 pesos appropriated for the works by the Viceroy of Santa Fé, the balance which was in hand, and the circumstance that Engineer Lara had been put under arrest by his predecessor.

14. His Majesty, by Royal Order transmitted by your Excellency, under date of Madrid, 23rd July, 1755, was pleased to direct that, as soon as the fine weather set in, the work for the building of the fortress should be continued in earnest, making use of the money which had been left unexpended out of the said 16,000 pesos, and also of any other unappropriated moneys which might be found in the Treasury. His Majesty expressed the wish that the next report to be submitted to the Crown on the subject should be that the work was finished or very near completion. It was urged, furthermore, that brick, and not stone of the class which had been objected to, should be used. His Majesty decreed also that Engineer Don Gaspar de Lara should be set at liberty and put in charge of the work, under the supervision of the Viceroy and the Governor, or the representative of the latter at Guayana, but without allowing any other person to interfere with him, as far as his profession was concerned; that from time to time, without stopping the work, a report should be sent to the Viceroy showing exactly all that had been done; and that, in case the balance of the appropriation should be found insufficient, a requisition for the amount needed should be sent to the Viceroy, who would provide the means necessary to complete the work. All this is shown by the Royal Order above cited, which runs from folio 94 *verso* to 96.

15. When Gual received this Royal Order he had already sent Engineer Lara to Spain by order of the Viceroy, who, in fulfilment of the order which he likewise had received on the matter, decided on the 17th August, 1756, to put the work in charge of Don Gaspar de Salaverría, Sergeant-Major of this fortress, with the instructions given in His Majesty's Order to the Governor, and he was directed to make at once an estimate of the amount of money, if any, which would be required, in addition to the balance in hand and the material not yet used. This estimate having been made and approved by the Governor, the proper orders were issued by him to the Treasury to furnish the 9,204 pesos and 1½ reals, which were required, in addition to the unexpended

uno y medio real que se consideraron necesarios sobre los cinco mil doscientos pesos y seis reales de residuo y materiales existentes como se ve justificado desde el folio noventa y seis á ciento cuatro.

16. Practicadas que fueron estas diligencias y dándolo de todo cuenta al Virrey pasó el mencionado Salaverría á Guayana, y en Febrero de cincuenta siete comenzó á continuar sobre los mismos cimientos que dejó Lara la obra de dicho Fuerte para la que le facilitó Gual los correspondientes auxilios durante su Gobierno del que fué relevado por Don Nicolas de Castro en Diciembre de cincuenta y siete quien continuó dichos auxilios á Salaverría hasta Enero de cincuenta y nueve que me entregó el mando.

17. Luego que me impuse en lo importante de este asunto, escribi al mencionado Salaverría noticiándole mi arribo, y encargándole la brevedad de la obra, sin que se faltase en nada á su mayor seguridad, á las Reales Ordenes, ni á las del Virrey, y que me avisase de las ocurrencias y auxilios que necesitase los que le facilité segun me pidió hasta que hallandome en Cabruta en la Comision de Limites, me avisó haber hecho sentimiento los cimientos de la casa á que le contesté lo que me pareció justo. Y habiendome restituido á esta Capital se me presentó Salaverría haciendome saber se habian abierto en el fuerte algunas grietas de poca consideracion, con cuya noticia me pareció deber instruir las correspondientes diligencias para dár cuenta á Su Magestad con autos como lo executé en veinte y nueve de Diciembre de mil setecientos sesenta, é interin pasase á la visita de aquel Presidio y personalmente reconociese los defectos de dicho Fuerte. Esto mismo, y con iguales autos hice presente al Virrey, quien en veinte y tres de Junio de sesenta y uno aprobandome lo practicado, me previno esperase la resolucion de Su Magestad.

18. Por Real Orden de siete de Octubre de sesenta y uno comunicada por V. E. se digno Su Magestad aprobar la suspension de la obra hasta que de resultas de la visita que ofreci hacer del Fuerte, informase con las ultimas noticias de su estado: y que teniendose por conveniente pasase á reconocer dicha obra el Ingeniero de Carácas, se expedia la orden correspondiente á el Gobernador de aquella Provincia para este efecto.

19. Quando recibí esta Real Orden ya tenia hecha la visita General, el reconocimiento del expresado Fuerte, instruidas las correspondientes diligencias á continuacion de las antecedentes, verificado la proxima é irremediable ruina que amenaza; por lo que me conformé con el dictamen del albañil Juan Parilla, quien aseguró no tenia remedio por las razones que alli se tuvieron presentes y diré á el tiempo de exponer el actual estado de las fortificaciones de Guayana; y con los autos operados, dado cuenta á Su Magestad con fecha de veinte y tres de Septiembre de mil setecientos sesenta y uno y por la primera ocasion que se presentó con iguales documentos y con copia de la citada Real Orden de siete de Octubre de sesenta y uno la dí al Virrey con fecha de veinte y ocho de Febrero de sesenta y dos quien con la de treinta de Julio me ordenó esperase la resolucion de Su Magestad en vista de los documentos formalizados al reconocimiento del Fuerte y de lo que digese el Ingeniero de Carácas á quien ya consideraba el Virrey practicando la

[696—3]

moneys of the first appropriation, amounting to 5,200 pesos and 6 reals, and the material not used as yet; as shown from folio 96 to folio 104. A

16. All this having been done and duly reported to the Viceroy, the said Salaverría went to Guayana, and in the month of February 1757 began again to work on the fortress, using the same foundations which Engineer Lara had built. Governor Gual, during the whole period of his government, gave him all the assistance he could, and his successor, Governor Don Nicolás de Castro, who received his appointment in December 1757, did the same thing until January 1759, when he delivered up the command to me. B

17. As soon as I saw the importance of this business, I wrote to the said Salaverría, informing him of my arrival, and urging him to hasten the work as much as could be done without prejudice to its strength, or to the orders of both His Majesty and the Viceroy. I told him furthermore to keep me advised of everything which might happen, and to ask me for such assistance as might be required. This assistance I gave him as he asked for it, until he wrote to me, while I was at Cabruta, in the Boundary Commission, that the foundations of the fort had been damaged, to which I replied as seemed to me to be just. Then, upon my return to this capital, Salaverría came to see me, and informed me that the walls of the fortress had been cracked, but that this accident was not serious. Upon this information I thought it my duty to draw up the requisite protocols and render account thereof to His Majesty, with documents, which I did on the 29th December, 1760, and in the meantime to go and visit that fortress and personally inspect the defects of the said fort. The same information was transmitted by me at the same time to the Viceroy, who, on the 23rd June, 1761, approved my action, and directed me to await the decision of His Majesty. C D

18. The King, by Royal Order of the 7th October, 1761, transmitted to me by your Excellency, was pleased to approve the suspension of the work until I could make the promised visit to the fort and report about its condition; and that as it was deemed advisable to cause the works to be inspected also by the engineer of Carácas, instructions to that effect had been sent to the Governor of that province.

19. When I received this Royal Order, I had already made the general visit, examined the fortress, drawn up the requisite protocols in continuation of the preceding ones, and fully ascertained that the ruin of the fortress was inevitable and impending. For these reasons, and acting in conformity with a report of Juan Parrilla, a mason, who assured me, upon some grounds which I shall set forth hereafter when explaining the present state of the fortifications of Guayana, that the evil was irremediable, I sent a full report to His Majesty, dated the 23rd September, 1761, and at the first opportunity I gave a copy with like documents, and with a copy of the Royal Order of the 7th October, 1761, to the Viceroy, under date of the 28th February, 1762. The Viceroy told me, under date of the 30th July, to wait for the decision which His Majesty might be pleased to give upon examination of the documents drawn up at the survey of the fort, and of the report of the Carácas engineer, whom the Viceroy supposed to be at the fort doing his work of inspection. E F

F

A diligencia; pero esta no se verificó tanto por el rompimiento de la Guerra que ocasionó á dicho Ingeniero precisas ocupaciones en aquella Provincia como por haberle imposibilitado el accidente de gota con el que murió.

20. En Abril de este presente año recibí la Real orden comunicada por V. E. con fecha de veinte y siete de Mayo del pasado de mil setecientos sesenta y dos, la que testimoniada se halla por cabeza de los autos, y en ella se digna Su Magestad mandar entre otras cosas se ciña el fortín de Limones con un pamplanchado nueve pies distante que cabe quatro pies mas que sus cimientos y que se le saque el terraplen que tiene dejándole de dos pies y medio mas alto. Que se abran troueras para la Artilleria, y se pongan portas cubriendo todo el fortín con una azotea por la banqueta de su parapeto dejándole una claraboya para la comunicacion con las centinelas. Que luego se artille con cuatro cañones dos de á ocho que defiendan las avenidas por el agua, y dos de á quatro las de tierra, y en la citada azotea se montese quatro Pedreros sobre tragantes; cuyo punto y demas contenidos en la Real orden han motivado esta representacion. Ultimo estado en que se halla esta dependencia principiada desde el año de mil seiscientos noventa y cuatro y con la indispensable necesidad de abandonar dicho fuerte por las razones que expondre en la Segunda y Tercera Parte.

But the engineer never went there, owing to the war which had just broken out and which required his presence at Carácas, and to an attack of gout, which at last culminated in his death.

20. During the month of April of the present year I received a Royal Order, transmitted by your Excellency, dated the 27th May, 1762, a copy of which is to be found at the beginning of the Acts, in which His Majesty was pleased to command, among other things, that the Fort of Limones should be surrounded with a stockade at a distance of 9 feet, and penetrating into the ground to a depth of 4 feet lower than the foundations; that its mound should be taken away, leaving it  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet higher; that embrasures should be opened for the artillery, and doors should be put; and that the whole fort should be covered with a platform at the height of the banquette of its parapet, leaving a skylight for communication with the sentinels; that the artillery of the fort should consist of four guns, two 8-prs., to prevent an attack from the water side, and the two others 4-prs., to prevent an attack from land; and that four swivel guns on carriages should also be mounted on the platform. These provisions, as well as others of the Royal Order, have given occasion to this Report.

The particulars above stated show what the condition of this work, commenced in 1694, is at present. They show also that we are confronted with the inevitable necessity of abandoning the said fort, for the reasons which I will explain in the second and the third parts of this Report.

## D

Capitulo Siete.—*Progresos en la Provincia de Guayana, desde el año de mil setecientos veinte á el presente de mil setecientos sesenta y tres.*

1. En el deplorable estado que queda dicho tenia el Presidio y Provincia de Guayana en el año de mil setecientos veinte, se mantuvo hasta el de mil setecientos treinta y cuatro que pasó á ella Don Carlos de Sucre. Llevó consigo porcion de tropa de la Guarnicion de Araya, algunos paisanos voluntarios para vecinos de la Ciudad, y tres lanchas armadas con sus pedreros, y despues de haber hecho el reconocimiento de la Isla de Faxardo y Angostura del Orinoco, informado de ello á Su Magestad é interin se obtenia su Real resolucion se dedicó á el reparo y fomento del Presidio y Provincia. Dispuso se talasen los cerrados bosques que circundaban la poblacion; que se aumentase el numero de las casas para alojamiento de los nuevos vecinos y tropa que condujo; recompuso el Castillo de San Francisco quanto permitieron las escaseces de caudales; puso corriente la comunicacion por tierra con las provincias de Barcelona y Cumaná hasta entonces ignorada hizo varios armamentos para perseguir á los Holandeses y demas extrangeros que con los Caribes corrian dichas provincias y Orinoco y para desalojar de sus bocas y Caño de Barima que demuestra el Mapa general á los Suecos que habian intentado establecerse en él segun consta por las dos Reales Cédulas que se vén en los autos desde la vuelta del folio diez y seis á la del diez

Chapter VII.—*Progress made in the Province of Guayana from the year 1720 to the present year 1763.*

1. The deplorable condition, already described, of the fortress and Province of Guayana in 1720 remained unchanged until 1734, when Don Carlos de Sucre went there. He took with him a detachment of troops from the garrison of Araya, some people of the country who volunteered to settle in the city, and three boats armed with swivel guns, and after exploring the Faxardo Island and the Angostura of the Orinoco, and making to His Majesty a report of his work, he engaged himself, while waiting for the Royal answer, in repairing the buildings and improving the condition of the fortress and the province. He ordered the thick forests which surrounded the settlement to be cleared, and caused new houses to be built for the accommodation of the new inhabitants and soldiers whom he brought. He rebuilt the Castle of San Francisco, as far as the funds at his disposal permitted. He opened communication by land, up to this time never thought of, with the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona. He made several expeditions to pursue the Dutch and other foreigners, who in union with the Caribs used to raid the said provinces and the Orinoco, and to dislodge from its mouths and the Creek of Barima the Swedes who had attempted to settle at that place, as is shown by the two Royal Cédulas shown in the Acts from

y nueve: auxilió las Misiones de los Capuchinos Cathalanes principiadas á establecer desde el año de mil setecientos veinte y cuatro con otras muchas y utiles providencias que hicieron mas tolerable el destierro de Guayana en el que subsistió dicho Sucre hasta Junio de cuarenta que restituyendose á la Capital de Cumaná entregó el mando á su sucesor Don Gregorio de Espinosa.

2. En Diciembre del mismo año de cuarenta fué sorprendido el Presidio por un Corsario Ingles quien se apoderó del Cerro y con el fuego del Fusil desalojó del Castillo de San Francisco la poca gente que le guarnecia, el que luego fué ocupado por los Ingleses y de él pasaron al Pueblo, lo saquearon y quemaron todas sus casas, destacaron gente á los inmediatos de Mision que igualmente quemaron, y destrozando quanto les fué posible el Castillo de San Francisco le abandonaron, y hicieron á la vela: con cuyo inopinado suceso se sublevaron los Indios de algunos otros Pueblos; pero se consiguió pacificarlos, y extraer de los Montes donde se havian retirado mediante las providencias del Gobernador Espinosa quien despachó un destacamento de Milicianos de la Ciudad de Barcelona, y á el Ingeniero Don Antonio Jordan para mandar dicho Presidio.

3. A su arribo á él y despues de pacificados los Indios, recogió los vecinos y tropa que se hallaban refugiados en los Montes, y comenzó á fabricar la Poblacion en el sitio en que oy se halla, y como se vé en la Segunda Figura del Mapa que acompaña; pero se adelantó en ella muy poco por haber fallecido el Ingeniero Jordan en Septiembre de cuarenta y uno dispersandose algunos de los vecinos congregados y muerto otros por la suma miseria en que quedaron, sin que durante el Gobierno de Espinosa se hubiesen recogido particulares aumentos.

4. En el Gobierno de Don Diego Tabares ademas de haberse principiado el fuerte de San Fernando como queda dicho se hizo tambien el de San Diego ó el Padrastró y se repararon las ruinas que hicieron los Ingleses en el Castillo de San Francisco.

5. Por Don Matheo Gual, Don Nicolas de Castro y yo hasta el presente con consideracion á lo indefenso del Presidio y extendiendo las facultades á quanto ha sido posible, se han continuado con toda eficacia las útiles providencias y mediante ella restaurado y puesto en el estado que tiene esta importantisima Plaza: congregado mañosamente los vecinos que en ella existen; auxiliados y esforzados para la Fabrica de sus casas unidas y en el buen orden que se manifiesta en dicha Segunda Figura (del Mapa que acompaña: talado todas las inmediaciones de el Pueblo: Fabricado hornos de cal, ladrillo y teja con los tinglados correspondientes para precaver los materiales de las continuas lluvias: reparado las Fortificaciones y puesto en estado de defensa el Castillo de San Francisco: completado la Guarnicion segun la dotacion del Presidio que aunque compuesta de mulatos, mestizos, negros y algunos blancos nunca habia estado tan numerosa, y con ella se ha puesto en respeto á los Caribes, y evitado el que los extrangeros trafiquen el Orinoco con la libertad que lo executaban; no atreviendose en el dia á pasar del Presidio, pues con la sujecion de los Caribes no tienen practicos para ejecutarlo habiendo sido apresados y descaminados quanto

folio 16 *verso* to folio 19 *verso*. He assisted the Missions of the Catalanian Capuchins, who had commenced their work since 1724. And, finally, he took many other measures which rendered the place of exile of Guayana more tolerable, where the said Sucre remained until the month of June, 1740, when he came back to the capital of Cumaná, and resigned his command into the hands of his successor, Don Gregorio de Espinosa.

2. During the month of December of the same year, 1740, the fortress was surprised by an English corsair, who took possession of the hill, and succeeded with the fire of his muskets in driving away from the Castle of San Francisco the few men who formed its garrison; the castle was at once occupied by the English, who next made an attack against the town, which they plundered. They burnt all the houses and sent a detachment to the nearest Missions, which they also destroyed by fire. They did all the harm they could to the Castle of San Francisco, and then abandoned it and set sail. This unexpected event caused the Indians of certain other villages to revolt, but they were pacified and induced again to leave the woods, to which they had withdrawn, by the measures taken by Governor Espinosa, who put Engineer Don Antonio Jordan in command of the said fortress, and sent a detachment of militia from the city of Barcelona.

3. Upon his arrival, and as soon as the pacification of the Indians was accomplished, he collected the settlers and soldiers who had taken refuge in the forests, and began to build the town on the site it now occupies, and as shown in Fig. 2 of the map sent herewith. But not much could be done then owing to the death of Engineer Jordan, which occurred in September 1741, the dispersion of some of the old settlers, and the death of others from the extreme destitution in which they were left. No particular increase was noticed during Governor Espinosa's command.

4. During the administration of Governor Don Diego Tabares, the building of the Fort of San Fernando was begun, as I have already said, and the fortress of San Diego, or the Padrastró, was made, and the damage done by the English to the Castle of San Francisco was repaired.

5. Governors Don Matheo Gual, Don Nicolás de Castro, and myself, up to the present time, have done our utmost, taking into consideration the defenceless state of the fortress, and stretching our powers to the farthest limit, to restore what has been destroyed, and to place that most important place in the condition in which it is now. We have cautiously collected together the settlers dwelling therein, aiding and encouraging them to build their houses close together, in the good order which may be seen on Fig. 2 of the map hereto appended. We have cleared all the forest around the village. We have built limekilns, and established brick and tile manufactories, provided with the proper sheds to protect the materials against the heavy rains of the country. We have repaired the fortifications and put the Castle of San Francisco in a condition to defend itself. We have completed the garrison of the fortress, which although consisting of mulattoes, half-breeds, negroes, and some whites, was never so numerous before, and thus inspired the Caribs with respect; and prevented the foreigners from trading along the Orinoco as freely as they used to do formerly. At present they do not dare to venture beyond the

A lo han intentado: Las Caxas Reales se han arreglado en buena cuenta y razon y en disposicion de que rindan la annual cantidad que consta en el respectivo Estado del Mapa General que aunque corta es la suficiente para entretener las fortificaciones de los precisos reparos y pertrechos que antes se costeaban de Caxas extrañas: Se han auxiliado las Misiones de los Capuchinos Cathalanes y perseguido á los Caribes y Holandeses que por los Rios Cuyuni y Mazaroni y espaldas de dichas Misiones han intentado hostilizadas: Y para evitarlo hecho varios destacamentos, y con uno de ellos sorprendido una casa fuerte que habian formado dichos Holandeses en el Rio Cuyuni en la que recojian todos los Indios que de las demas naciones llevaban los Caribes á quienes se los compraban á cambio de varias vagatelas; habiendose encontrado en la expresada casa algunas armas de fuego y á un Holandés de profesion Minero, sin duda para el reconocimiento de Minas como consta justificado en los Autos desde el folio ciento cinco á ciento cuarenta en donde se halla tambien la cuenta corriente que tenian dichos Holandeses con los Caribes, y se justifica haberse desgraciado dos Hombres en esta expedicion.

C Siendo los supradichos adelantamientos de mucha consideracion respecto del infeliz estado en que estaba la provincia y Presidio de Guayana en el año de mil setecientos treinta y cuatro y en el que quedó en el de mil setecientos cuarenta de resulta de su perdida y quema y ser oy respetable á los extranjeros que solo tratan del ilicito comercio; pero no á los enemigos para quienes está indefensa esta plaza, como lo haré constar en el discurso de esta Consulta.

D

Capitulo Ocho.—*A la Mision de Capuchinos Cathalanes en la Provincia de Guayana se debe el que los Holandeses no se hayan situado en el centro de ella, y los aumentos que se reconocen en el Presidio, el que no puede subsistir sin dicha Mision ni esta sin el Presidio.*

E

1. Asi como los Capuchinos Aragoneses y observantes de Piritu han pacificado las Provincias de Cumaná y Barcelona donde evangelizan y han sido el medio para que los Españoles se situen en las bastas campañas que contienen y para la formacion de la villa de Aragua y Pueblos de la Concepcion del Pao, Rio Caribe y Carupano como queda dicho en su lugar; asi tambien los Capuchinos Cathalanes han pacificado y reducido parte de los Indios de la Provincia de Guayana, evitado el que los Holandeses se hayan internado en ella y auxiliado á el Presidio y ciudad de Santo Thomé, de que ha resultado el estado que oy tiene, y cerrar el Orinoco para el inhumano comercio de los Caribes y dichos Holandeses y que estos y demas extranjeros no corran libremente como lo executaban las Provincias de Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracás, Varinas, y Santa Fé, para cuyo efecto han sido inutilis las muchas anteriores providencias dadas desde el año de mil

fortress, because owing to the subjection of the Caribs they are unable to get pilots. All those who have attempted to pass that limit have been either arrested or put to flight. The affairs of the Royal Treasury have been put in good order, and made to yield the yearly sum shown in the respective statement of the General Map, which, although small, is sufficient to keep the fortifications in needful repair, and to provide them with the necessary supplies which were formerly paid for from other Treasuries. The Missions in charge of the Catalonian Capuchins have been assisted. The Caribs and Dutch who, by way of the Cuyuni and Massaruni Rivers, and on the rear of the said Missions, had attempted to wage hostilities against them, have been harrassed; and to prevent this in future several expeditions have been sent out, and one of these surprised a stronghold, built by the Dutch on the River Cuyuni, where they had gathered all the Indians of other tribes captured by the Caribs and sold to them for mere trifles. A number of fire-arms were found in that stronghold, and a Dutchman, who was a miner by profession, and had undoubtedly come there to make mining surveys, as appears certified in the Acts from folio 105 to 140, together with the current account which the said Dutch kept with the Caribs, and a certificate of the death of two men in that expedition.

The aforesaid progress is remarkable, considering the wretched state of the Province and fortress of Guayana in 1734, which remained the same in 1740, owing to its loss and burning. It is now respected by foreigners who are only concerned with illicit trade, but not by enemies, against whom this place is defenceless, as I will show in the course of this Report.

Chapter VIII.—*The fact that the Dutch have not settled in the central part of the Province of Guayana, with the progress made at the fortress, is due to the Mission of the Catalonian Capuchins. The fortress cannot stand without the Mission, nor can the Mission stand without the fortress.*

1. As the Aragonese Capuchins and the Franciscan Fathers of Piritu pacified the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona where they are engaged in evangelical labours, they having been instrumental in the settlement by Spanish people of the vast territories they contain, and in the foundation of the villa of Aragua and the villages of Concepción del Pao, Rio Caribe, and Carúpano, as stated in the proper place, so also the Catalonian Capuchins have pacified and subdued part of the Indians of the Province of Guayana; prevented the Dutch from settling in the interior of the province; assisted the fortress and town of Santo Thomé; caused things there to have reached the state in which they are now; closed the Orinoco to the inhuman commerce of the Caribs and of the said Dutch; prevented the latter as well as other foreigners from running through the country freely as they used to do in former times in the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona,



seiscientos noventa y cuatro y conseguidose con solo el haber formalizado dicho Presidio y mejorado sus fortificaciones, y con esto aseguradose y pobládose las tales Provincias y en la de Guayana estableciédose diez y seis Misiones por los expresados misioneros Cathalanes y ultimamente por los mismos y ocho leguas tierra adentro la nueva Poblacion de San Antonio de Upata que en lo sucesivo hará respectable aquella Plaza.

2. En la nota diez del Cuaderno de Noticias, tengo dicho que los mencionados Misioneros Cathalanes comenzaron á trabajar utilmente desde el año de mil setecientos veinte y cuatro y las razones por que no lo habian executado antes ni ellos ni otros de distintas religiones que lo habian intentado: que en dicho año fundaron la primera Mision con el nombre de la Concepcion de Suay: que al tiempo de la visita tenian establecidas diez y seis; sin ocho que se han desgraciado, [y] del estado de las unas y motivo de la perdida de las otras dado una individual noticia, la que se justifica aora en los autos que acompañan y desde el folio ciento cuarenta y uno á ciento cuarenta y nueve por lo que omito dilatarme en circunstancias este punto.

3. En la expresada nota y en la octava tengo igualmente expuesto lo mui importantisimas que son estas Misiones para evitar el que los Holandeses se internen por los Rios Cuyuni y Mazaroni que en aquella Provincia manifiesta el Mapa General y resguardo del Presidio á el que proveen de viveres y de Indios necesarios para bogas de las embarcaciones del tráfico Peones en las obras que se han ofrecido y ofrecen asi del Rey como de particulares sin los quales y dichos viveres no puede subsistir el Presidio ni sin este las Misiones que es lo que intento justificar.

4. Segun se ha ido formalizando dicho Presidio, se ha ido facilitando quanta Escolta ha sido posible á los Misioneros y estos internandose al sur estableciendo Pueblos, siendo oy los mas avanzados los nombrados el Hato, Yuruario y Avechica que dista de la Plaza quarenta á quarenta y cinco leguas y á las margenes de los Rios que entran en el Cuyuni como se ven en el Mapa General y con dichas avanzadas Misiones evitádose en gran parte el que los Holandeses protegidos de los Caribes se internen por los Rios Cuyuni y Mazaroni con el fin de hostilizarlos aprisionar los Indios no Caribes y hacer nuevos establecimientos en el centro de la Provincia y para impedirlo se han hecho en distintos tiempos varias expediciones y la ultima en el año de mil setecientos cincuenta y ocho con la que se sorprendió la casa Fuerte que queda dicho tenian en el Rio Cuyuni de la que se tuvo noticia por el aviso que dieron los Misioneros y á estos los Indios de los Pueblos inmediatos al expresado Rio; como plenamente consta justificado en los autos que acompañan y citados folios ciento cinco á ciento cuarenta con lo que se evidencia quanto importa el que esta Mision se interne caminando siempre al Sur y estableciendo quantos Pueblos sean posibles en los fertilisimos terrenos del centro de aquella Provincia y que para ello sea auxiliada dicha Mision en los terminos que tengo expuestos á Su Magestad de resultas de mi visita

[696—3]

Carácas, Varinas, and Santa Fé, to which end the many previous measures taken since 1694 have been useless, and which has only been obtained by the establishment of the said fortress and the improvement of its fortifications, thereby securing and settling those provinces; and in the Province of Guayana sixteen Missions have been established by the said Catalonian missionaries, who, 8 leagues towards the interior, have recently founded the new town of San Antonio de Upata, which will hereafter secure respect to that place.

2. In Note No. 10 of the Book of Notes, I stated that the above-named Catalonian missionaries began to work successfully in 1724, and explained the reasons why neither they nor others of different orders who had attempted it had done it sooner. I said that in the year above mentioned those Fathers founded the first Mission, which they named La Concepción de Suay, and that at the time of my visit they had founded sixteen, without counting eight which have perished, and I gave an individual account of the former and the cause of the loss of the latter. This is now shown in the Acts hereto appended, from folio 141 to 149, and so I will not dwell any longer on this subject.

3. In the said Note and in No. 8 I have equally insisted upon the vast importance of these Missions, both for the purpose of preventing the Dutch from reaching the interior of the country, by way of the Cuyuni and the Massaruni Rivers, the position of which can be learned by looking at the General Map, and of protecting the fortress, to which they furnish provisions, and the Indians needed to row the boats engaged in trade, and labourers to do such other works, public as well as private, as may be necessary. Without these Indians and provisions the fortress cannot continue, nor can the Missions without the fortress. This is the point which I shall endeavour to prove.

4. As the said fortress has become established, as large an escort as possible has been afforded to the missionaries who have pushed southwards into the interior, founding villages, the most advanced at the present time being those named El Hato, El Yuruario, and Avechica, the latter at about 40 or 45 leagues from the town, on the banks of rivers which fall into the Cuyuni, as can be seen in the General Map. By means of these advanced Missions, the Dutch, protected by the Caribs, have been prevented, to a great extent, from reaching the interior of the country through the Cuyuni and the Massaruni Rivers, to commit acts of hostility, to kidnap Indians, not belonging to the Carib tribe, and to make new settlements in the centre of this province. Several expeditions, the last of which was organized in 1758, have been fitted out at various periods to prevent those invasions. The last expedition succeeded in surprising the stronghold which, as before stated, they held on the banks of the River Cuyuni, which fact had been reported by the missionaries upon information furnished to them by the Indians of the villages in the neighbourhood of the said river. All of this is fully proved in the Acts appended hereto on the said folios 105 to 140, from which it is shown how important it is that this Mission should go inland southwards, and establish as many villages as may be possible on the very fertile lands of

G

**A** general y consta en los autos que acompañan desde el folio doscientos cincuenta y uno a la vuelta de cincuenta y dos único medio para contener á los Holandeses y evitar los establecimientos que intenten en aquellas desconocidas campañas las que atalayan los Pueblos inmediatos, y vigilancia de los Misioneros, quienes pasan el aviso al Presidio.

**B** 5. Quando en el año de mil setecientos veinte y cuatro se estableció la primera Mision de la Concepcion de Suay, se hallava el Presidio en el miserrimo estado que tenia en el de mil setecientos veinte y asi se mantuvo hasta el de mil setecientos treinta y cuatro que paso á el Don Carlos de Sucre quien entre las muchas útiles providencias que dió fué una de ellas la de auxiliar la Mision con la Escolta y bastimentos que pudo arbitrar con lo que se internaron los Misioneros y fundaron en terrenos fértiles las Misiones de San Francisco de Altagracia, y la Divina Pastora y sostuvieron las quatro anteriormente plantadas en terrenos inmediatos al Orinoco y por tanto areniscos y poco fértiles.

**C** 6. Establecidas que fueron dichas dos Misiones y otras sucesivamente, y mediante el cuidado de los Misioneros comenzaron á hacer los Indios mayores sementeras de las precisas para la manutencion de los Pueblos y con lo sobrante á proveer el Presidio; y oy lo continuan de suerte que sin este auxilio no pudiera haberse formalizado mantener la gente que contiene, ni traficarse el Orinoco con la facilidad que se executa mediante las providencias de cazabes y demas comestibles precisos que de las Misiones concurren á dicho Presidio en donde se proveen las embarcaciones y **D** en faltando el socorro de las Misiones perecen los habitantes de aquella Plaza por lo remotos y costosos de otros recursos.

**E** 7. Los viveres con que diariamente proveen al Presidio son Cazabes, maices, frutas, arroz y todo genero de aves, y el jabon preciso para el consumo; pero no lo suministran todos los pueblos y solo sí quatro ó cinco de ellos que gozan de fértiles tierras y sus naturales ya bien educados cuyos efectos son administrados por los Misioneros con grande economia, y buen orden, y mediante esto logran el estar vestidos y provistos de las heramientas necesarias. Otras Misiones pudieran executar lo mismo que las cinco anteriores respecto de disfrutar iguales fértiles terrenos pero no lo permite lo recién plantadas y por tanto sus Indios poco hechos al trabajo y la mucha distancia que media á el Presidio imposibilita y no costea la conduccion de dichos viveres, sino en caso de suma necesidad

**F**

8. Las Misiones de las inmediaciones al Orinoco en nada sufragán las escaseces del Presidio por estar situadas en terrenos areniscos y nada fértiles y viver sus Indios mas de las pesquerias que de las labores del campo como lo tengo dicho en la citada decima nota.

9. Los viveres con que contribuyen los cinco Pueblos, no es en excesiva abundancia y solo sí

the central part of that province, and that for this purpose the said Mission must be given assistance, as I explained to His Majesty when I gave an account of the general visit, and as is stated from folio 251 to 252 *verso*. There is no other way to check the Dutch, and prevent them from making settlements, as they attempt to do, in those unexplored regions, which are watched by the neighbouring villages, and kept under the vigilant eyes of the missionaries, who report to the fortress.

5. When in the year 1724 the first Mission, namely, the Mission of La Concepción de Suay, was established, the fortress was in the same wretched condition as in 1720. It continued in the same state until 1734, when Don Carlos de Sucre visited it, and directed, among many other useful measures, that the missionaries should be provided with such escort and supplies as could be obtained, which enabled the missionaries to push inland and establish on fertile lands the Missions of San Francisco de Altagracia and La Divina Pastora, and support the other four Missions which they had already founded in the immediate neighbourhood of the Orinoco River on lands rather sandy and of little fertility.

6. After the establishment of the said two Missions, and others which were founded afterwards, the Indians began, under the care of the missionaries, to cultivate the land on a larger scale than required for the support of the villages. The surplus was then, as it still is, supplied to the fortress, and without this assistance it would have been impossible to support the people who live in it, or to trade along the Orinoco with as much facility as they can do at present owing to the supplies of cassava and other provisions sent from the Missions to the fortress, where they supply the boats. Should the Missions fail at any time to furnish this assistance, the inhabitants of the fortress would certainly starve. Supplies from other sources would be very costly, and only to be obtained at very distant places.

7. The provisions with which the fortress is daily supplied consist of cassava, corn, rice, fruit, and all kinds of poultry, and of the soap required for use; but this is furnished, not by all the villages, but only by four or five out of their number, which enjoy fertile lands, and are inhabited by Indians already educated, whose property is managed by the missionaries with great order and economy. These natives are therefore dressed and supplied with necessary implements. Some other Missions might be able to do the same as the five just referred to, because of their enjoying equally fertile lands; but so far they are prevented from contributing, as explained, owing to the recent date of their foundation, and that the Indians who have settled in them are not as yet fully accustomed to work, and the great distance which separates them from the fortress renders the conveyance of the said provisions difficult and too costly, except in case of extreme necessity.

8. The Missions in the neighbourhood of the Orinoco cannot furnish anything to the fortress, owing to their being located on sandy ground, of no fertility at all, and to the fact that their Indians, as I have said in Note No. 10, above cited, live rather by fishing than by agriculture.

9. The provisions furnished by the five villages above referred to are not given in excessive

con la suficiente para la Guarnicion y corto vecindario, provision de las pocas embarcaciones menores que alli hay, y de las que llegan de fuera, y algun corto número de gente que se agregue á dicho Presidio; por lo que en habiendo escasez en los expresados cinco pueblos por la casualidad de los tiempos, por que los Misioneros no tengan especial cuidado de que hagan crecidas sementeras ó que se saque gente de dichos Pueblos para esquivar embarcaciones ó para los trabajos que ocurren (como únicos Indios que hasta avia se sujetan á el) se padecen grandes necesidades en la plaza, cuyo contratiempo no es mui remoto y sí mui frecuente y en el tiempo de mi Gobierno ha acaecido tres años y uno de ellos el pasado de sesenta y dos, lo que me causó notable cuidado, pues por mas exquisitas diligencias que se practicaron por aquel Comandante por el Prefecto de las Misiones y providencias que dí desde aqui, no fué posible acopiar el repuesto de cien cargas de casabe para en caso de que fuese invadida dicha Plaza, lo que si asi hubiera sucedido (como estuvo para acaecer) con dificultad se hubiera sostenido por la falta de dichos viveres de repuesto y diaria necesidad que en ella se padecia, como consta justificado en los autos que acompañan desde la vuelta del folio ciento noventa á ciento noventa y seis omitiendose otros documentos que igualmente lo patentifican por no hacer mas voluminosos dichos autos: justificandose tambien con lo expuesto lo importante de las expresadas Misiones para la subsistencia de dicha Plaza y con esto mismo evidenciaré en la Segunda parte que los pocos viveres que producen las Misiones no permiten emprender el cumplimiento de la Real Orden de veinte y siete de Mayo para trasladar la ciudad á la Angostura.

10. Asi como las expresadas Misiones son importantes al Presidio por los viveres que le subministran, lo son tambien por los Indios que concurren á los trabajos que aunque mui lentos y voluntariosos son los que los executan y con ellos se han hecho los reparos de las fortificaciones, el Fuerte San Fernando y materiales de ladrillo y cal para el necesarios y con dichos Indios se proveen de bogas las embarcaciones que con precision se arman, como la del situadista que anualmente sube á Santa Fé y en todo el año pasado que duró la guerra dos canoas que dispuse se mantuviesen de vigia en las principales bocas del Orinoco para que con anticipacion avisasen de toda embarcacion ó embarcaciones que entrasen en dicho Orinoco para que con el anticipado aviso se evitase toda sorpresa en aquella Plaza segun consta en el capitulo quinto de la Instruccion por mi dada al Comandante Don Juan de Dios Valdés para precaver y sostener aquel Presidio en caso de ser acometido cuya instruccion corre desde la vuelta del folio ciento setenta y siete á la del ciento ochenta y seis.

11. Pero es de notar y debe tenerse presente para lo que se dirá en la segunda parte que las expresadas peonadas cuesta mucho trabajo á los Misioneros el sacarlas de los Pueblos por la resistencia que á ello hacen los Indios á quienes en el Presidio es menester tratar con gran suavidad y sin violentarlos, pues de lo contrario toman el Monte, y no es poca fortuna quando se vuelven á su pueblo el que con facilidad abandonan, y por mui bien tratados que sean no hay forma de

abundance; but only sufficient for the support of the garrison and of the inhabitants, not many in number, of the place, and for supplying what is necessary to the small vessels of the locality, or which arrive from outside, and for a small number of troops allotted to the said fortress. Wherefore, when scarcity is felt in the five villages above referred to, whether on account of bad seasons or to the failure to make extensive plantations, or because men are sometimes withdrawn from the said villages to man the ships, or for the public works that may be required (they being the only Indians thus far subjected thereto), great distress is suffered in the fortress. This is no very remote accident, but, on the contrary, of very frequent occurrence. During my own term of office it has happened three times, one of them, namely, in the year 1762, when it caused me to feel extremely uneasy, all the efforts of the Commandant, of the Prefect of the Missions, and of myself having failed to secure an extra supply of 100 loads of cassava to be kept in store in case of invasion of the place; and had this occurred (as was nearly the case) it would have been very difficult for it to resist the enemy, owing to the want of stores and the daily need it suffered, as shown in the Acts hereto appended from folio 190 to 196. Further evidence of this fact might easily have been produced, but I have decided to omit it, in order not to increase unnecessarily the volume of the said Acts. All this proves how important the Missions are for the fort; and it proves also, as I shall explain more in full in Part II of this Report, that the insufficient supply of provisions to be so far obtained from the Missions precludes the Royal Order of the 27th May, for the transfer of the city to the Angostura, from being carried into effect.

10. But while the said Missions are important to the fortress, on account of the provisions which they supply to it, they are also important on account of the Indians who do the work, and although they are very slow and not under compulsion, it is they who do it. These Indians have repaired the fortifications; they have built the fort of San Fernando; they have made the bricks and the lime necessary for these works. They also provide the rowers for the vessels which necessarily have to be fitted out, as, for instance, the Government vessel which yearly goes to Santa Fé, and the two barges which during the whole of last year, owing to the state of war, were stationed at the principal mouths of the Orinoco, to watch, and report at once, should any vessel or vessels be discovered by them] to try to enter the said Orinoco, in order to avoid surprises in that fortress, as is shown in Chapter V of the Instruction given by me to the Commanding Officer of the fortress, Don Juan de Dios Valdés, for the defence and preservation of that fortress should it be attacked. The said Instruction runs from folio 177 to 186.

11. But it must be noticed and borne in mind, for the proper understanding of what will be said in Part II, that it is extremely difficult for the missionaries to supply these Indian labourers. They do not leave their villages, except very reluctantly, and when at the fortress they must be treated with great kindness and without severity, or else they run away and take refuge in the forests. Only in a few cases do they come back to their villages, which they easily abandon.

**A** detenerlos mas de ocho dias, pör lo que costó suma dificultad y trabajo la subsistencia de las canoas arriba expresadas.

**B** 12. Igual consideracion se debe tener en el poco número de Indios que se pueden facilitar para peones por lo mucho que distan las mas de las Misiones del Presidio, como se reconoce en el Mapa General y ser todavia de Gentiles algunas de sus inmediatas como consta en los autos que acompañan, por lo que forzosamente ha de recaer la mayor parte del trabajo en las cinco ya bien instruidas y obedientes, y de quienes penden los viveres para el Presidio como dicho queda arriba; y si han de atender á las labranzas como principal obgeto, mui pocos podrán concurrir á los trabajos segun se dirá en la Segunda Parte.

**C** 13. Tan precisas como son las Misiones para la subsistencia del Presidio, lo es este para que aquellas no se deshagan y pierdan, y es la razon que las más de ellas son nuevas, y sus Indios, con mas inclinacion á el Monte de donde han sido extrahidos, que á la Poblacion en que viven lo que no executaran; y si hicieran mil picardias á no tener respeto y miedo á la tropa que ocurre á evitar las inquietudes, especialmente en los Pueblos de Caribes altivos por naturaleza y propensos á sublevarse de que hay repetidas experiencias con las perdidas de los Pueblos como consta justificado en los autos; y si por desgracia fuese acometido el Presidio y tomado por los enemigos de la Real Corona, debe tenerse por cierto que se perdieron inmediatamente las Misiones, pues sus mismos habitantes son los que las saquean, pegan fuego y luego se retiran al Monte como acaeció en el año de mil setecientos cuarenta y dos en el que se experimentó mas estrago hecho por los Indios que por los Ingleses: Con lo que se justifica que aunque el Presidio no tuviera otras ventajas por solo sostener las Misiones merece una grande atencion y mucho más siendo la seguridad de todas estas Provincias, como diré quando trate y exponga lo importantísimo de esta Plaza. Quedando asimismo evidenciado que sin ella no pueden adelantarse las Misiones, ni asegurarse de que las existentes no se subleven quando menos se piense que es quando lo practica la nacion Caribe respetable por su genio atróz, traidor y guerrero.

And no matter how good their treatment may be, it is always impossible to keep them at work for more than eight days, and consequently it was with extreme difficulty that the barges above referred to could be kept with the proper crew.

12. Another thing to be taken into consideration is the small number of Indian labourers which can be furnished conveniently to do this work, owing to the great distance between most of the Missions and the fortress, as can be easily seen upon inspection of the General Map, and also to the fact, well shown by the appended Acts, that some of those in the immediate neighbourhood of the fortress still consist of heathens. Hence, it is, that the five Missions, whose inmates, as above said, are well instructed and obedient, are the only ones called upon to furnish labourers, as well as the provisions, without which the fortress could not be kept in existence. And if they have to devote themselves to the farms as their chief object, very few can assist in the works, as will be stated in Part II.

13. But, if the Missions are absolutely indispensable for the preservation of the fortress, the fortress is also indispensable to prevent them from being disorganized and disbanded. And the reason is because most of them are new, and their Indians feel more inclination for the forests than for the settlement in which they live. It is probable that they would go back to the woods and carry on a thousand rascalities were it not for fear of the troops who are at hand to repress disturbances, especially in the villages of the Caribs, who are by nature haughty and apt to rebel. The Acts hereto appended show what the lessons of experience and losses of villages have been; and it is clear that if through some unfortunate circumstances the fortress is attacked and taken by the enemies of the Royal Crown, the Missions would at once be destroyed. Their own inhabitants would plunder them, set them on fire, and return to the forests, as happened in 1742, when it was found that the Indians did much more harm than the English. From here it is to be concluded that if the fortress were productive of no other advantages than the preservation of the Missions, it deserves the most serious attention; and much more so, being, as it is, the safeguard of all these provinces, as I will show when treating of the extreme importance of this place. It is likewise clear that without it the Missions can neither be extended nor be certain that those now existing will not rebel when it is least expected, namely, when driven to do so by the Carib tribe, which is formidable from its fierce, treacherous, and warlike character.

Capitulo Nueve.—*Presente Estado de las Fortificaciones del Presidio y Ciudad de Santo Thomé de la Guayana y Poblaciones de Españoles de esta Provincia en el que hay alguna variacion á el que tenia al tiempo de la visita.*

Chapter IX.—*Present condition of the Fortifications and Defences of the City of Santo Thomé de la Guayana and the Spanish Settlements of this Province, where a difference is found from what it was at the time of the visit.*

[Dejan de copiarse los párrafos de 1 al 91.]

\* \* \* \*

92. En el Quarderno y últimos capitulos de las Notas nueve y diez expuse mui abreviadamente y por via de noticia el estado que tenian las nuevas ciudades de Real Corona y Ciudad Real, que en la Provincia de Guayana emprendió establecer el Xefe de Esquadra Don Joseph de Iturriaga y que indispensablemente vendran á deshacerse, por lo que no debian contarse por poblaciones de dicha provincia.

93. Ni en dichas Notas, ni aqui, me es permitido el hacer constante la utilidad ó inutilidad de las nuevas ciudades, gastos ó aumentos que hayan ocasionado y causen al Real Erario; y perjuicios ó ventajas á estas provincias pues esto compete á solo el Xefe de Esquadra Don Joseph de Iturriaga á quien Su Magestad tiene facultado la formacion de las poblaciones que tenga por convenientes mandando á los Virreyes Gobernadores y demas justicias de las Indias faciliten lo que les pida Don Joseph de Iturriaga, tocante á la execucion de varios encargos de su Real servicia como consta de Real Cedula su fecha en Buen Retiro á catorce de Diciembre de mil setecientos cincuenta y tres: Pero no me persuado haberme excedido en lo que por via de noticia, como de poblaciones de la gobernacion de mi cargo expuse en las expresadas notas; ni que me excederé en justificar el estado que en el dia tienen dichas ciudades, y la de San Fernando, que se emprendió en territorio del nuevo Reyno de Santa Fé, por lo muy importante que es para evidenciar en el discurso de esta representacion las invencibles dificultades que hay para fundar poblaciones de Españoles en parages remotos sin anticipar la pacificacion de los Indios que los habitan, y que pacificados estos, las poblaciones de Españoles se forman fácilmente sin el menor costo del Real Erario y con solo los privilegios y mercedes que concede Su Magestad por sus Reales Leyes para el buen gobierno de estos sus dominios.

94. Y asi digo: Que en virtud de dichas facultades con que se halla el mencionado Xefe, emprendió establecer en la Provincia de Guayana las Ciudades Real Corona y Ciudad Real: Para la primera comisionó con titulo de Capitan Poblador y bajo de sus ordenes á un tal Don Alonso de Soto á quien señaló el anual sueldo de quinientos pesos situados en las caxas de Santa Fé, cuyo cobro no sé si ha tenido efecto. Hicieronse por cuenta de la Real Hacienda, la Yglesia y como unas veinte y cinco casas las que fueron repartidas entre los nuevos pobladores que se reclutaron en las Provincias de Caracas y Barcelona y para conseguirlos se les ofrecieron por el expresado Don

[696—3]

92. In my Memorandum and last Chapters of Notes 9 and 10 I have shown very briefly and, by way of indication, the state of the new cities of Real Corona and Ciudad Real, the establishment of which in the Province of Guayana was undertaken by Commodore Don Joseph de Iturriaga, and which must necessarily fail, and ought not, therefore, to be counted as settlements of the said province.

93. I could not explain in the said Notes, nor can I do so here, the use or uselessness of the said new cities, the expenses that they may have occasioned and do occasion to the Royal Treasury, nor the advantages or disadvantages to these provinces, as that subject entirely concerns Commodore Don Joseph de Iturriaga, whom His Majesty has allowed the necessary powers for the formation of the settlements that he considers desirable, commanding the Viceroy, Governors, and other officers of the Indies to facilitate what he requires in carrying out the various charges intrusted to him for the Royal Service, as shown by the Royal Cedula, dated at Buen Retiro on the 14th December, 1753. But I am not conscious of having exceeded my limits in what, by way of indication, as concerning settlements of the Government under my charge, I have expressed in the above-mentioned Notes, nor that I shall exceed any in representing the condition in which the said cities are found to-day, and that of San Fernando which was made in territory of the new Kingdom of Santa Fé, as it is of the utmost importance to show, in the course of this representation, the insurmountable difficulties found in the way of establishing Spanish settlements in remote places, without first pacifying the Indians inhabiting them, and that after the said Indians are reduced these Spanish settlements are easily formed without the least expense to the Royal Treasury, with merely the privileges and franchises which His Majesty grants by his Royal Laws, for the good government of these his dominions.

94. And I say, that in virtue of the power with which the above-mentioned Commodore is invested he undertook to establish in the Province of Guayana the towns of Real Corona and Ciudad Real. For the first one, with the title of Captain Settler, and under his orders, he commissioned one Alonso de Soto, to whom he assigned the annual salary of 500 pesos to be paid by the Treasury of Santa Fé, and I do not know whether he has drawn the said pay. At the cost of the Royal Treasury a church and about twenty-five houses were built and assigned to the new settlers, brought from the Provinces of Caracas and Barcelona. In order to obtain them they were offered by the said Alonso de Soto

H

A Alonso de Soto otras muchas ventajas desproporcionadas y sin el menor arreglo á las Reales disposiciones que tratan de nuevas poblaciones. Pero viendo los tales pobladores que no se les daba quanto se les habia prometido y que experimentaban extorsiones no regulares, desampararon la nueva ciudad y repasando el Orinoco se volvieron á sus antiguas habitaciones de donde fueron reclutados y de asi haberlo executado, y de las razones que á ello les movió me dieron cuenta.

many other advantages, excessive and without the slightest regard to the Royal Regulations about the new settlements. But the new settlers seeing that they were not allowed what had been promised, and under the experience of irregular extortions, abandoned the new city, recrossed the Orinoco, and returned to their old homes, whence they had been drawn, and they gave me an account of what they had done, and their reasons for so doing.

B (Dejan de copiarse los párrafos 95 y 96.)

\* \* \* \*

C 97. Del establecimiento de la Ciudad Real de Uyapi se hizo cargo el referido Xefe de Esquadra Don Joseph de Iturriaga la que segun repetidos informes con que me hallo consiste hoy en su Iglesia costeadá por la Real Hacienda; pero ya enteramente arruinada y cincuenta casas fabricadas y costeadas por la misma Real Hacienda: Las treinta de ellas, vacias y desiertas y las veinte ocupadas por Don Joseph Iturriaga y sus familias, Cirujano, Capellan, y otros dependientes de la expedicion de Limites, que aun subsisten allí; el Sargento Mayor de esta Plaza y destacamento de su guarnicion que se halla á las órdenes del mencionado Xefe y mas seis ó siete familias la una agregada á la de Don Joseph de Iturriaga otra de un Holandes (allí mui perjudicial) nombrado Adrian, dos de la Isla Margarita y tres que anteriormente vivian en el pueblo de Cabruta, y todas mantenidas á costa del Real Erario. Este es el estado que tiene la Ciudad Real, sin que pueda esperarse en ella mayores ventajas y si, prometerse su total desolacion luego que falte el expresado Don Joseph de Iturriaga, único que con su familia y dependientes la tiene poblada pues las siete familias en el dia la desampararan si se les negase la tal qual racion que se les subministra y las mas con solo que se les diese libertad para ejecutarlo.

97. Of the establishment of Ciudad Real de Uyapi, said Commodore Don Joseph de Iturriaga took charge, and by the repeated information I have received it consists to-day of a church, paid for by the Royal Treasury, but already completely in ruins, and fifty houses built and paid for by the same Royal Treasury, thirty of them are deserted and empty, and twenty are occupied by Don Joseph de Iturriaga, his family, surgeon, chaplain, and other employés belonging to the Boundary Expedition that remain there yet; the Sergeant Major of this fortress and the detachment of this garrison under the orders of the above-mentioned Commodore together with six or seven families: one added to that of Don Joseph de Iturriaga, another of a Dutchman (very injurious there) called Adrian, two from the Island of Margarita, and three who were formerly at the settlement of Cabruta; and all are supported at the cost of the Royal Treasury. Such is the condition of Ciudad Real, without hopes of any greater advantages, but with the promise of a total dissolution directly it is left by the said Don Joseph de Iturriaga, the only one who keeps it inhabited with his family and those who depend on him, for the seven families remaining to-day will abandon it as soon as their rations fail, and the rest will quit whenever they are allowed to do so.

E 98. La ciudad de San Fernando fundada por el tercer Comisario Don Joseph Solano, aun fué mas desgraciada que las dos antecedentes por haber perecido los mas de sus pobladores. Situóse esta ciudad mucho mas arriba del Rio de Vichada, que se vé en el Mapa General á orillas del de Orinoco y en territorios de la gobernacion de Santa Fé habitados de Indios aun por pacificar. Para primeros pobladores, se remitieron algunos forzados de la Provincia de Caracas y vecinos involuntarios, aunque no á la cadena como los antecedentes; y para custodia de unos y otros un grueso destacamento de las guarniciones de Cumaná y Araya, y el todo á las ordenes y direccion del tercer Comisario Don Joseph Solano.

98. The town of San Fernando, founded by the Third Commissioner, Don Joseph Solano, was still more unfortunate than the two preceding cities, as most of the settlers perished. This town has been placed considerably above the Vichada River, shown by the General Map on the banks of the Orinoco, within the territory of the Government of Santa Fé, inhabited by Indians still to be reduced. As first settlers, some galley-slaves were sent from the Province of Carácas, and also some forced settlers, though not chained like the preceding; and, as a guard for both, a strong detachment from the garrisons of Cumaná and Araya, the whole being under the orders of Third Commissioner Don Joseph Solano.

F 99. En la abertura, desmante y establecimiento del nuevo terreno, con el mal temperamento de las orillas de Orinoco y la suma escasez de viveres, pereció una gran parte de dichos involuntarios pobladores y de los soldados que los custodiaban que entre unos y otros pasaron de ciento y cinquenta personas, esto durante la residencia allí de Don Joseph Solano. A su retirada, y poco despues se retiró tambien el destacamento dejando á los miserables pobladores en aquel desierto sin viveres, sin pasto espiritual, sin escolta, y destituidos de todo humano socorro, con los Indios á la espalda, el gran Orinoco al frente y sin suficientes embarcaciones para navegarle.

99. In the opening and clearing of the forests and establishment of the new settlements, owing to the bad climate on the banks of the Orinoco River, and to the extreme scarcity of victuals, a great portion of the said forced settlers perished, as also of the soldiers detached for their custody, making in all 150 persons, during the time of the residence there of Don Joseph Solano; at his retirement or shortly after, the detachment also withdrew, leaving the miserable settlers in that desert, without provisions or spiritual attendance, without escort, and destitute of all human help, with the Indians at their back, the great Orinoco in front, and no vessels suitable for its navigation.



100. Subsistieron en aquel parage y con suma adiccion, algunos dias; pero estrechados de la necesidad, se internaron parte de dichos pobladores de quienes no se tiene la menor noticia; y los restantes en pequeñas canoas se echaron rio abajo. Dos de ellas se perdieron ahogandose la gente que conducian á excepcion de un buen nadador que fué el que contó la desgracia: Otras quatro ó cinco llegaron felizmente á las Misiones de los Jesuitas pero desnudos los miserables y pasados de necesidad de la que se repararon en dichas Misiones y de ellas se internaron en los llanos de las Provincias de Caracas y Barcelona en donde subsisten con toda precaucion para no ser aprehendidos de nuevo. Con lo que se acabó la ciudad de San Fernando y se justifica las grandes dificultades é irreparables perjuicios que se siguen de emprender poblaciones en parages tan remotos, desiertos y por pacificar.

101. Si el formar Poblaciones en parajes distantes, desiertos y por pacificar es insuperable; el establecerlas despues de pacificados los Yndios es facilisimo y nada costoso al Real Erario, como se evidencia con el dia en la misma Provincia de Guayana con la nueva Poblacion de San Antonio de Upata á la que se dió principio en el año pasado de sesenta y dos por las razones siguientes.

102. Habiendo emprendido mi visita general en el año de mil setecientos sesenta y uno y á el practicar la de las Misiones que en aquella Provincia se hallan al cargo de los reverendos Padres Capuchinos Cathalanes y con conocimiento y examen de los fertiles terrenos que ocupan las establecidas tierra adentro y distante de las orillas de Orinoco, mui apropiado para cria de Ganados, todo genero de sementeras y plantages de caña y cacao, el temperamento fresco, sano y libre de las plagas que producen las inmediaciones á el Orinoco, conferencié con el Prelado y comunidad lo muy importante que seria el establecimiento de alguno ó algunos Pueblos de Españoles para que desde luego sirviesen de resguardo y contencion á los de Mission y en lo sucesivo de antemural á las Colonias Holandesas defensa del Presidio de Guayana y que este lograrse ser provisto con abundancia de los viveres que produgesen los Pueblos de Españoles que se estableciesen y no pendiese dicho Presidio de las cortas cosechas y labranzas de los Indios como al presente acaece.

(Deja de copiarse el resto del Capitulo.)

Capitulo Diez.—*El Presidio de Guayana es la Plaza mas importante que tiene el Rey Nuestro Señor en estos sus Americanos Dominios á excepcion de la Habana y Vera-Cruz.*

(Dejan de copiarse los parrafos 1-29.)

30. Y por lo respectivo á la mayor utilidad y preferencia en que pongo al Presidio de Guayana sobre las demas Plazas que mantiene el Rey en la América no lo digo tampoco sin ningun conocimiento pues he visto en la Mar del Sur las de Valdivia Concepcion de Chile, Valparaiso y el Callao y me hallo con bastante noticia de lo que

100. For a few days they remained in that place in the greatest affliction, but, pressed by want, some of them went inland, and nothing is known of what became of them. The remaining settlers went down the river in small boats, two of which were lost and the people drowned, with the exception of a good swimmer, who brought the news of the misfortune; four or five others reached the Jesuit Missions safely, but in the utmost misery, where their wants were attended to, and thence they proceeded inland to the plains of the Provinces of Carácas and Barcelona, where they live, full of precaution to avoid being apprehended again. That was the end of the town of San Fernando, which shows the great difficulty and irreparable injuries of undertaking settlements in places so remote, desolate, and still to be reduced.

101. If the formation of settlements in distant, desolate, and unreduced places is impossible, their establishment, after the Indians are pacified, is very easy, and of no expense to the Royal Treasury, as shown to-day in the same Province of Guayana in the case of the new settlement of San Antonio de Upata, which was commenced in the year 1762, for the following reasons:—

102. Having undertaken my general visit, in the year 1761, and while inspecting the Missions in that Province in charge of the Reverend Catalanian Capuchin Fathers, and upon survey and examination of the fertile lands occupied by those established inland, away from the banks of the Orinoco River, very fit for breeding cattle and every kind of farming and for sugar-cane and cocoa plantations, in a temperate climate, healthy, and free from the diseases bred in those adjacent to the Orinoco River, I had a conference with the Prior and community about the importance of the establishment of one or more Spanish villages to serve at once for the safety and restraint of those of the Missions, and in future as a barrier to the Dutch Colonies and a defence to the fortress of Guayana, which would thus be abundantly provided with the products of the said Spanish villages to be established, so as not to have the said fortress dependent on the short crops and Indian farms, as at present.

Chapter X.—*The Fortress of Guayana is the most important stronghold held by the King our Lord in these his American Dominions, Havana and Vera Cruz only excepted.*

30. And in reference to the greater utility and preference which I attribute to the fortress of Guayana over all the other fortresses maintained by the King in America, I do not say so without knowledge, for I have seen in the South Pacific those of Valdivia, Concepcion de Chile, Valparaiso, and Callao, and I have sufficient information

A. son las de Panamá, Acapulco y Sonsonate. En la mar del Norte tengo vistas las de Buenos-Aires, Montevideo, Cartagena, y Habana y la de Cumaná al presente á mi cargo ; y tengo no poca noticia de las de la Guaira, Puerto Cabello, Maracaibo, Puertovelo é Islas de Barlovento y hecho cargo de todo, tengo por sin duda que de ninguna resultaria tan considerable perdida como del Presidio de Guayana y que si los enemigos le tomasen sera para quien le poseyese colonia quatuplicadamente ventajosa que la del Sacramento que los Portugueses tienen en el Rio de la Plata que tambien he visto y sé en lo que consiste su comercio.

B. (Dejase de copiar el párrafo 31 y último.)

of what those of Panamá, Acapulco, and Sonsonate are. In the North Pacific I have seen those of Buenos Ayres, Montevideo, Cartagena, Havana, and Cumaná, at present in my charge, and I have a good idea of those of La Guaira, Puerto Cabello, Maracaibo, Puerto Bello, and the Windward Islands, and taking account of all, I have come to the conclusion that none would cause so great a loss as that of the fortress of Guayana, and that, if the enemies were to take it, it would be, to its possessors, a Colony four times more valuable than that of Sacramento, held by the Portuguese on the La Plata River, which I have likewise seen and know in what its commerce consists.

\* \* \* \*

## Segunda Parte.

## Second Part.

C. 1. Haré evidentes en esta Segunda Parte los irreparables perjuicios que se seguirán á el servicio de ambas Magestades si se pone en practica la Real Orden de veinte y siete de Mayo del año pasado de mil setecientos sesenta y dos, como lo tengo propuesto en el numero quinto y principio de esta Consulta ; y para executar lo con la posible brevedad y claridad pondré dicha Real orden al margen y contestaré á sus asuntos, probando lo que expusiere con varios instrumentos que citaré, y con los diez capitulos de la Primera Parte ó sus numerados párrafos que sean necesarios en los que se podrán ver los documentos á que en ellos me refiero para su comprobacion.

D. Real Orden "Teniendo el Rey presente lo que V. S. expone en carta de veinte y siete de Agosto del año próximo pasado."

2. Por dos Reales Ordenes y uno de Julio de mil setecientos cincuenta y nueve y trece de mayo de mil setecientos sesenta se dignó Su Magestad prevenirme que habiendose tratado muchas veces de la demolicion del Castillo de Araya y opinandose en este asunto con variedad, expusiese yo mi dictamen en quanto á la utilidad ó inutilidad de dicha Fortificacion asegurandome primero en él por todos los medios posibles para en su vista, tomar Su Magestad la resolucion mas conveniente.

E. (Dejanse de copiar los párrafos 3-7.)

F. 8. La situacion de la ciudad de Guayana, es en el mejor parage, y mas ventilado que permite aquel terreno y por tal lo tubo el Ingeniero Don Antonio Jordan que fué quien la estableció en el año de mil setecientos cuarenta y uno, de resultas de haber sido abrasada por los Ingleses la antigua Guayana situada á orillas del Rio Usupamo como queda dicho en la Primera Parte Capitulo siete numeros dos y três ; y en la Segunda Figura del mapa que acompaña se vé el sitio en que al presente se halla sin que haya habido quien le repruebe, ni tenido á otro por mas proposito para la subsistencia y sanidad de dicha ciudad ni á esta por inutil ; y sí por muy precisa pues sin ella no pudieran mantenerse las fortificaciones en el estado que oy tienen ó se pusiesen ; unicas que guardan y pueden guardar el Orinoco.

(Dejanse de copiar los párrafos 9-15.)

"Teniendo á el medio dia internados diez y ocho

1. In this Second Part I will show the irreparable injuries which will result to the service of God and the King from the enforcement of the Royal Order of the 27th May, 1762, as I have stated in No. 5 and at the beginning of this Report. In order to do so as briefly and clearly as possible. I will place the said Royal Order in the margin, and will answer its contents, proving what I shall have to show with several documents that I will quote, and the ten Chapters of the first part or its numbered paragraphs, as may be necessary, and where the documents I refer to may be seen and compared.

Royal Order: "The King, bearing in mind what you express by letter of the 27th August of last year."

2. By the two Royal Orders, of the 21st July, 1759, and 13th May, 1760, His Majesty was pleased to point out that the demolition of the Castle of Araya having been often contemplated, and various opinions having been expressed on the matter, I should give my view as to the utility or inutility of the said fortification, after having examined it by all possible means, so that His Majesty in view thereof might take the most suitable Resolution thereon.

\* \* \* \*

8. The situation of the town of Guayana is in the best place, and as airy as that territory permits. It was regarded as such by the Engineer Don Antonio Jordan, who established it in the year 1741, on account of the destruction of Old Guayana by the English, who set it on fire, when it was situated on the bank of the River Usupamo, as stated in Part I, Chapter VII, Nos. 2 and 3 ; and in Fig. 2 of the accompanying map the present site is shown, nor has any one been found to object to it, or prefer another as more suitable for the subsistence and salubrity of the said city, or regard the latter as useless, but rather as very necessary, for without it the fortifications could not be maintained in the condition in which they are, or might be, and they are the only ones that do, and can defend the Orinoco.

"Having in the south, in the interior, eighteen

Pueblos de Indios reducidos por los Misioneros Capuchinos Catalanes.

16. Ni el todo de los Pueblos de Mision reducidos por los misioneros Capuchinos Cathalanes estan internados al medio dia; ni son diez y ocho como han informado á Su Magestad pues los de Piacoa, Aripuco, Caroni, y Aguacagua están sobre las Riberas de Orinoco y á el Oriente y Occidente de la Guayana (circunstancia de consideracion para lo que luego se dirá) come se manifiestan en el mapa que acompaña y en el general se ven los restantes; pero no en numero de diez y ocho, y sí, en el de diez y seis unico y mayor á que han llegado pues aunque se han perdido ocho ha sido en distintos tiempos y aun antes de ascender al citado numero diez y seis existentes al tiempo de la visita y al presente como consta en la Primera Parte Capitulo ocho numero dos: con lo que se justifica lo nada impuesto que estaba quien dió las noticias á Su Magestad.

(Dejense de copiar los párrafos 17 á 21.)

"Ha resuelto Su Magestad que la citada ciudad de Guayana se situe treinta y cuatro leguas arriba del Castillo en la Angostura donde el Orinoco se estrecha ochocientas varas."

21. En la translacion de la Poblacion de Guayana á el sitio de la Angostura ó que se mantenga en el que está consiste que el Rey Nuestro Señor asegure ó pierda la gran parte de la América que defiende y pende de aquel Presidio; asunto de suma consideracion que se hace preciso tratarle con mas individual extension que los restantes contenidos en la Real Orden para que cerciorada Su Magestad de lo cierto pueda resolver lo que fuese de su Real agrado.

22. El gran Rio Orinoco despues de haber recibido en si á el de Meta sigue su curso doscientos leguas poco mas ó menos hasta desaguar en la mar por el laberintho de bocas que se vé en el mapa General. Lo ancho de su cauce en toda esta distancia, los dilatados llanos por donde corre las grandes playas que en ellos deja en su mayor bajante, lo mucho que inunda las campañas en su mayor creciente, la confusion de brazos en que se divide y la infinidad de yslas que estos forman; ha motivado las dudas y opiniones que se controvierten de sesenta años á esta parte en orden á fortificar este importantissimo Rio de modo que evite que los extrangeros le naveguen, y se aseguren el todo de las Provincias á que facilita la internacion, para lo que solo tres parages se han creido aproposito que son el de la Angostura setenta leguas tierra adentro del laberintho de bocas por donde derrama el de la Ysla de Faxardo doce leguas Ria abajo de la Angostura y el del Presidio de Guayana siete ú ocho leguas mas abajo de la expresada Ysla de Faxardo y veinte de la Angostura (y no treinta y cuatro como han informado á Su Magestad) cuyas tres situaciones se ven en el Mapa General y en el que acompaña de las que trataré con separacion justificando los dictámenes en pró ó en contra de cada una de ellas.

23. A favor de la Angostura informó á Su Magestad el Gobernador de Cumaná D. Juan de la Tórnera, como consta en la primera parte, Capitulo segundo numero primero. Pero por los documentos que alli se citan se justifica que dicho Gobernador no trató ni informó á Su Magestad con el fin de fortificar el Orinoco y solo sí el

settlements of Indians reduced by the Catalanian Capuchin missionaries." A

16. Not all the settlements of the Missions reduced by the Catalanian Capuchin missionaries are in the interior of the south, nor are there eighteen, as they reported to His Majesty; those of Piacoa, Aripuco, Caroni, and Aguacagua are on the banks of the Orinoco, and to the east and west of Guayana (a circumstance of importance for what will forthwith be said), as shown in the accompanying map, and in the general one the rest are shown, not to the amount of eighteen, but only sixteen, the greatest and the only number that they have attained, for although eight of them have been lost, it was at different times, and before reaching the above-mentioned number of sixteen existing at the time of the visit and at the present, as shown in my first part, Chapter VIII, No. 2. This shows the want of information of the person who sent the advices to His Majesty. B

\* \* \*

"His Majesty has decided that the said city of Guayana be placed at 34 leagues above the castle at the Angostura, where the Orinoco's breadth is reduced to 800 yards." C

21. Upon this transfer of the settlement of Guayana to the site of the Angostura or its maintenance where it is depends whether the King, our Lord, secures or loses the great portion of America which is defended by, and depends upon that fortress—an affair of the greatest importance that must be treated with more particular fulness than the rest of the contents of the Royal Order, so that His Majesty, being well informed of the truth, may decide what may meet his Royal pleasure.

22. The great Orinoco River, after having received the waters of the Meta, follows its course for about 200 leagues until it falls into the sea through the labyrinth of mouths seen in the General Map; the breadth of its channel throughout this distance, the extensive plains through which it runs, the broad shores left in them during its lowest waters, the great extent of land covered by its floods at the highest point, the net-work of branches into which it is divided, and the infinity of islands formed by them, has raised doubts and opinions, which have been under discussion for the last sixty years, about the fortification of this most important river, so as to prevent its navigation by foreigners, and secure the whole of these provinces, to which it affords ingress. For this only three places have been considered adequate, that is to say: the Angostura, 70 leagues from the labyrinth of mouths through which it empties its waters; the Island of Faxardo, 12 leagues below the Angostura; and the fortress of Guayana, 7 or 8 leagues below the said Island of Faxardo, and 20 leagues from the Angostura (and not 34 leagues, as they have reported to His Majesty). These three positions are shown in the General Map and in the one sent herewith, and I will deal with them separately, weighing the opinions for and against each one of them. D

23. The Governor of Cumaná, Don Juan de la Tórnera, reported to His Majesty in favour of the Angostura, as shown in Part I, Chapter 2, No. 1; but by the documents quoted there it is shown that the said Governor did not consider or report to His Majesty with the object of fortifying the Orinoco, but only of preventing the entrance of E

I

**A** de defender la entrada de los Caribes y extrangeros por la Angostura y precaver los extragos que ocasionaban en la Provincia de Barcelona entonces desconocida y por pacificar, creyendo dicho Tornera y los exploradores de los Rios Orinoco y Cary que la Angostura era el unico y preciso paso para la internacion de los extrangeros; pero estos eran ya practicos del camino que dirige desde el Presidio de Guayana á los Llanos de Barcelona y Caracas que es el que se manifiesta en el Mapa que acompaña que aun le ignoraban los Españoles quando Tornera en el año de mil setecientos veinte y cuatro informó á Su Magestad: Justificase asimismo que el expresado Gobernador tuvo por suficiente un fuerte y para la subsistencia de su Guarnicion alguno ó algunos pueblos de Mission en aquellas inmediaciones; pero no consta fuese de sentir se trasladase á la Angostura la poblacion de Guayana de la que tenia mui remotas noticias por lo que no pudo informar á Su Magestad de la mas ó menos utilidad del Presidio y si debia ó no ser preferido á la Angostura.

**B** 24. A favor de esta informó tambien el Padre Fray Francisco del Castillo Misionero en la Provincia de Barcelona como consta en el Capítulo seis, numero cuatro, y folio cuarenta y siete de los Autos de cuyo informe dimanó la Real Resolucion que allí se cita para que se fortificase dicha Angostura y no la Isla de Faxardo como anteriormente estaba mandado respecto de haberla dado por inutil el mencionado Fray Francisco del Castillo quien instruyó su informe en los mismos terminos y sin otro fin que el del Gobernador D. Juan de la Tornera y asi nada produjo en orden á la utilidad ó inutilidad del Presidio de Guayana ni á fortificar el Orinoco para precaver que los enemigos de la Real Corona se hiciesen dueños de él; y solo **C** si trató de la Isla de Faxardo haciendo constar que no era proposito para la construccion del Fuerte que Su Magestad tenia mandado se hiciese en ella y que dicho Fuerte debia establecerse en la Angostura con lo que creyo se evitarian los estragos que ocasionaban los Caribes y extrangeros en las Misiones de la Provincia de Barcelona acargo de su comunidad; sin que conste haya tenido la Angostura mas dictámenes á su favor y los dichos, no para fortificar el Orinoco y sí para abanzar un Fuerte que como el anterior de clarines sirviese de antemural á las Misiones de Barcelona como se deduce de los citados instrumentos existentes en el Real y Supremo Consejo y Autos que acompañan, **D** pues aunque Don Christobal Felix de Guzman propuso á Su Magestad, el construir á su costa y en el sitio de la Angostura el mencionado Fuerte se denegó la propuesta como consta al folio cuarenta y seis de los Autos.

**E** 25. A favor de la Isla de Faxardo expusieron su sentir los Padres de la Compañia Juan Capitel y Juan Romes quienes con otras personas y con especial comision reconocieron el Orinoco en el año de mil setecientos diez y nueve como consta en el Capítulo sexto numero dos y en vista de los documentos que se formalizaron deliberó Su Magestad se construyese un Fuerte en dicha Isla como latamente consta en el citado numero dos. Pero los Padres de la Compañia y demas personas acompañaron aunque despreciaron la Angostura, no reprobaron el Presidio de Guayana, antes sí se persuadieron que con fortificar la mencionada Isla

the Caribs and foreigners through the Angostura and preventing the ravages they occasioned in the Province of Barcelona, then unknown and not pacified, the said Tornera, as well as the explorers of the Orinoco and Cary Rivers, thinking that the Angostura was the one only passage for the ingress of foreigners, whereas they were already acquainted with the road leading from the fortress of Guayana to the plains of Barcelona and Carácas, as shown in the accompanying map, and which was not known to the Spaniards when Tornera, in the year 1724, sent his Report to His Majesty. It is likewise shown that said Governor considered one fort sufficient, and for the subsistence of its garrison he thought one or a few missionary villages were enough in that neighbourhood, but he does not show that he was of opinion that the settlement of Guayana, of which he had very distant knowledge, should be transferred to the Angostura, and so he could not inform His Majesty upon the more or less importance of the fortress, and whether it was to be preferred or not to the Angostura.

24. Father Fr. Francisco del Castillo, a missionary of the Province of Barcelona, likewise reported in favour of this, as shown in Chapter VI, No. 4, and folio 47 of the Acts. The said Report elicited the Royal Resolution, quoted there, for the fortification of the said Angostura, and not of the Island of Faxardo, as had been decided before, on the ground that it was considered useless by the said Fr. Francisco del Castillo, who drew up his Report in the same terms and with the same object as the Governor Don Juan de la Tornera, so he adduced nothing with reference to the utility or uselessness of the fortress of Guayana, nor to the fortification of the Orinoco, to prevent the enemies of the Royal Crown from seizing it, and only the Island of Faxardo was discussed, making it evident that it was not suitable for the construction of the fort which His Majesty had ordered to be built thereon, and that the said fort ought to be erected at the Angostura, by which means he believed that an end would be put to the ravages caused by the Caribs and foreigners among the Missions of the Province of Barcelona in charge of his community. No other Reports in favour of the Angostura are known to exist, and those above mentioned do not deal with the subject of fortifying the Orinoco, but have in view only the advancement of a fort, which, like the former one of Clarines, might serve as a protection to the Missions of Barcelona, as may be gathered from the above-mentioned documents existing in the Supreme Royal Council, and the "Aytos" accompanying the same, for although Don Cristobal Felix de Guzman proposed to His Majesty to build the said fort at his own cost on the site of the Angostura, the proposal was rejected, as shown at folio 46 of the documents.

25. In favour of the Island of Faxardo were the Reverend Fathers of the Society, Juan Capitel and Juan Romes, who, with other persons, and by special commission, explored the Orinoco in the year 1719, as shown in Chapter VI, No. 2, and in view of the documents presented at the time, His Majesty directed the construction of a fort in the said island, as fully shown in the said No. 2; but the Fathers of the Society, and the other persons accompanying them, although they deprecated the Angostura, did not disapprove of the fortress of Guayana, but, on the contrary, they were persuaded that by fortifying

se aumentaba la fuerza del Presidio y que este y dicha Isla cerraban y aseguraban el Orinoco; único dictamen á favor de la Isla de Faxardo y desestimado por quantos de él han sido noticiosos como diré.

26. El Presidio de Guayana es el que ha merecido la general atencion de los profesores en la fortificacion y de los practicos del Orinoco y á cuyo favor se han hecho á Su Magestad repetidissimas representaciones despreciandose en ellas la Angostura é Isla de la Faxardo.

27. El año de mil quinientos cuarenta y uno segun el Padre Gumilla al folio ocho de su Orinoco Ilustrado se situaron los primeros Españoles en el Rio Orinoco. Para su primer establecimiento no hicieron elecion de la Angostura, Isla de Faxardo, ni la Guayana; y sí, de la Boca del Caroni que se señala en el Mapa que acompaña, sin duda por el ningun conocimiento que tuvieron del Rio y sus mas ventajosos terrenos. Subsistieron en su primera poblacion hasta el año de mil quinientos setenta y nueve que la quemaron los Holandeses. Sus habitantes ya practicos del Orinoco despreciando la Angostura y Isla de Faxardo, se situaron siete leguas mas abajo de esta, y en la garganta de dicho Rio en donde segunda vez se estrechan sus aguas á mil cuatrocientas ó mil y quinientas varas. Fundaron la Ciudad de Santo Thomé de la Guayana; y como les fué possible se fortificaron en la peña que hoy forma el Castillo de San Francisco cuyo fuerte terreno guardaron y mantuvieron hasta el año de mil setecientos veinte con la constancia y miserias expuestas en el Capitulo seis numero primero.

28. Dejase comprender muy bien que los primeros fundadores de la Guayana previeron que aquel era el único, ventajoso y fuerte terreno que evitaba la navegacion del Orinoco y la internacion en las provincias por donde corre, y no la Angostura que aunque en ella se estrechan las aguas á ochocientas ó novecientas varas, hallandose muy tierra adentro no puede evitar el desembarco en las veinte leguas que median hasta la Guayana y que en esta situacion defendian el todo de las provincias y la navegacion del mismo rio.

29. Tubieron presente tambien, que las inmediaciones de la Angostura en los terrenos de la misma provincia las inundaba el Orinoco cinco ó seis leguas tierra adentro á la bajante dilatadas lagunas como la de Caymanes que se vé en el Mapa que acompaña. Que carecian de leña y maderas para fábricas, de terrazgos para sementeras; que sus dilatados arenales eran inutil para la subsistencia de Ganados; que tan indispensables circunstancias ó comodidades solo se encontraban ocho ó nueve leguas tierra adentro; y que de la parte opuesta y en la Provincia de Barcelona habia iguales dificultades por las que ni aun los Indios habitaban aquellos territorios.

30. Igualmente tuvieron presente que el terreno nada se defiende por ser llano y de continuados arenales, en el que de ningun modo podian fortificarse y sí en la Guayana como lo executaron por contribuir á ello el mismo terreno, lo que les acreditó la experiencia pues nunca los pudieron desalojar, aunque á los miserables no les fué posible hacer mayor resistencia á los extrangeros como consta en el citado numero uno del Capitulo seis quienes libremente entraban por delante de aquella infeliz fortificacion de que dimanaron los repetidos recursos que se hicieron á S. M. como consta de su siguiente numero dos.

the said island the strength of the fortress would be increased, and that it and the said island closed and secured the Orinoco. That is the only Report in favour of the Island of Faxardo, which has been rejected by every one who has had to do with the subject, as I will show. **A**

26. The fortress of Guayana has deserved the general attention of all the professors of fortification and of those conversant with the Orinoco, and in its favour repeated representations have been made to His Majesty, rejecting Angostura and the Island of Faxardo.

27. In the year 1541, according to Father Gumilla (folio 8 of the "Orinoco Ilustrado"), the first Spaniards were located in the Orinoco River. For their first establishment the Angostura was not selected, nor the Island of Faxardo, nor Guayana; it was the mouth of the Caroni River, marked in the accompanying map, undoubtedly for the want of knowledge of the river and its more advantageous grounds. They subsisted in their first settlement until the year 1579 when the Dutch destroyed it by fire. Its inhabitants, already familiar with the Orinoco, setting aside Angostura and the Island of Faxardo, were located 7 leagues lower down, in that gorge of said river, where for the second time the breadth of the water is reduced to 1,400 or 1,500 yards, and there they founded the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, and, as far as possible, they fortified themselves on the rock that forms to-day the Castle of San Francisco, which strong position they kept and maintained until 1720, with the courage and misfortunes stated in Chapter VI, No. 1. **B**

28. It is well understood that the first settlers of Guayana foresaw that it was the only strong and advantageous spot for preventing the navigation of the Orinoco and entrance into the provinces through which its runs, and not the Angostura, where, although the breadth of the water is reduced to 800 or 900 yards, it is too far inland to prevent a landing being effected in the 20 leagues' distance from Guayana, and that in this position the whole of the provinces and the navigation of the said river was defended. **C**

29. They likewise considered that the immediate surroundings of Angostura, in the territory of the same province, were inundated 5 or 6 leagues inland, leaving at low water extensive lagoons, such as that of Caimanes, shown in the accompanying map; that they had no kindling wood or timber for building, no grounds for farming, and that the extensive sand-banks around were unfit to support cattle, and that these indispensable conveniences and circumstances were only met with at 8 or 9 leagues further inland, and that on the opposite bank of the river, within the Province of Barcelona, there were the same difficulties, which prevented even the Indians from inhabiting those territories. **D**

30. They likewise considered that the land is not adapted for defence, as it is all flat and sandy, and no fortifications could be erected except in Guayana, which they did fortify, as the shape of the land itself helped them, and experience has justified them, for they could never be dislodged, although the miserable party could not oppose any greater resistance to foreigners, as shown in my said first paragraph of Chapter VI. They entered freely in front of that unhappy fortification, and that was the origin of the repeated appeal to His Majesty, as shown in the second paragraph. **E**

- A** 31. En el número tres se justifica que el Ingeniero Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo y el Gobernador de la Trinidad, Don Agustin de Arredondo, que por la Real Orden allí citada fueron comisionados para el reconocimiento de las fortificaciones de Orinoco y de la utilidad, ó inutilidad de ellas y demas que se necesitasen construir despreciando la Angostura, é Isla de Faxardo, informaron á Su Magestad á favor de la Guayana con razones tan sólidas, que en el dia nada tienen que adicionar ; de cuyo acertado informe, no se sabe que resultasen providencias.
- B** 32. A el Ingeniero Faxardo, y Gobernador Arredondo, siguió el Coronel y Gobernador de Cumaná, Don Carlos de Sucre quien vino con comision de fortificar la Angostura, ó Isla de Faxardo ; y habiendo examinado bien los terrenos, informó á Su Magestad reprobando la mencionada Isla de Faxardo. Y aunque se infiere por los documentos constantes en los Autos, que se inclinó á que se fortificase la Angostura, fué sin perjuicio del Presidio de Guayana á quien prefirió por mas util véase su Consulta citada, en el número cuatro de dicho Capitulo sexto que original para en el Real y Supremo Consejo de Indias.
- C** 33. A favor del Presidio de Guayana y despreciando la Angostura é Isla de Faxardo, informó á Su Magestad el Marquis de San Phelipe segun se deduce del número doce del Memorial presentado por el Padre Gumilla constante en los autos que acompañan, pues de la Consulta del Marques de San Phelipe, que allí se cita, no hay exemplar en el archivo de este Gobierno ; pero sí se encontrará en el Real y Supremo Consejo de Indias junta con la que dirigió el Gobernador de Cumaná, Don Carlos de Sucre, por los motivos expuestos en el Capitulo sexto número cuatro.
- D** 34. El Padre Joseph Gumilla por medio de un memorial que presentó á Su Magestad en su Real y Supremo Consejo de Indias contradijo los dictámenes de Sucre y Marques de San Phelipe, y sostubo el de los Padres de la Compañia que reconocieron el Orinoco, el año de mil setecientos diez y nueve instando á que se fortificase la Isla de Faxardo, pero despues confessó para descargo de su conciencia que habia presentado á Su Magestad el citado memorial por obedecer á su Padre Provincial, sin embargo de que conocia que la Isla de Faxardo era inútil y que el único sitio ventajoso del Orinoco era la Guayana, como se justifica por los documentos citados en el número cinco de dicho capitulo sexto,
- E** 35. El memorial del Padre Gumilla y otras ocurrencias motivaron las nuevas providencias que se tomaron por el Real y Supremo Consejo de Indias como consta á el número sexto del mismo Capitulo, y del siete consta que vino Comisionado el Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, y el Ingeniero Don Antonio Jordan á sus ordenes para fortificar la Angostura ó Isla de Faxardo, arreglado á la Instruccion que se le dió y consta del citado número seis ; para ponerla en práctica passó el Ingeniero Jordan á Guayana, y con inspeccion de los terrenos, reprobó el de la Angostura, é Isla de Faxardo, y en virtud de esto se bajó á la Guayana, y comenzó á recomponer sus fortificaciones, y reedificar la Ciudad abrasada y destrozadas aquellas por los Ingleses ; pero dicho Ingeniero Jordan murió antes de exponer su dictámen á Su Magestad pues
31. The third paragraph shows that Engineer Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo and the Governor of Trinidad, Don Augustin de Arredondo, who, by Royal Order herein quoted, were commissioned to examine the fortifications of the Orinoco, and their utility or uselessness, and to report on those that ought to be constructed, setting aside the Angostura and the Island of Faxardo, reported to His Majesty in favour of Guayana, alleging reasons so solid that to-day there is nothing to add. It is not known that any measures were taken in consequence of this well-grounded Report.
32. After Engineer Faxardo and Governor Arredondo followed the Colonel and Governor of Cumaná, Don Carlos de Sucre, who came down with a commission to fortify Angostura or the Island of Faxardo, and having well examined the ground, they reported to His Majesty, rejecting the Island of Faxardo, and although it is to be inferred from the documents which appear in the proceedings that he was inclined to fortify Angostura, it was without prejudice to the Fortress of Guayana, to which he gave the preference as more advantageous, as may be seen in his above-mentioned Report in the fourth paragraph of said Chapter VI, the original of which is at the Supreme Royal Council of the Indies.
33. In favour of the fortress of Guayana, and rejecting Angostura and the Island of Faxardo, was the Report to His Majesty by the Marquis de San Phelipe, as may be deduced from the twelfth paragraph of the Memorial presented by Father Gumilla in the accompanying proceedings, for of the Report of the Marquis de San Phelipe, quoted there, there is no copy found in the archives of this Government, but it will certainly be found at the Supreme Royal Council of the Indies, together with the one sent by the Governor of Cumaná, Don Carlos de Sucre, for the reasons explained in Chapter VI, fourth paragraph.
34. Father Joseph Gumilla, by means of a Memorial presented to His Majesty through His Supreme Royal Council of the Indies, contradicted the opinions given by Sucre and the Marquis de San Phelipe, and sustained that of the Fathers of the Society, who explored the Orinoco in the year 1719, insisting on the fortification of the Island of Faxardo ; but afterwards he confessed, in discharge of his conscience, that he had presented the said Memorial to His Majesty in obedience to the wishes of the Father Provincial, notwithstanding that he knew that the Island of Faxardo was useless, and that the only advantageous position on the Orinoco was Guayana, as shown by the above-mentioned documents in the fifth paragraph of the said Chapter VI.
35. The Memorial of Father Gumilla, and other circumstances, brought about new steps taken by the Supreme Royal Council of the Indies, as shown in the sixth paragraph of the same Chapter, and from the seventh it appears that Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, with Engineer Jordan, under his orders, came as Commissioner to fortify Angostura or the Island of Faxardo, according to the instructions given him, as shown in the said sixth paragraph. In order to carry it out Engineer Jordan went to Guayana, and after inspecting the district, rejected the Angostura and the Island of Faxardo, and therefore went down to Guayana and commenced the repairs of the fortifications and the rebuilding of the city which the English had burned and destroyed, but Engineer Jordan died before



para ejecutarlo esperaba el arribo de Don Gregorio de Espinosa quien pasó después á el Presidio y reprobando la Isla de Faxardo, y la Angostura informó á Su Magestad á favor de la Guayana, vease su Consulta citada en dicho capítulo sexto y su número siete.

36. Después del predicho informe nombró Su Magestad para suceder á Don Gregorio de Espinosa á el Brigadier Don Diego Tabares, y con igual Comision para fortificar la Angostura ó Isla de Faxardo para cuyo efecto se le entregaron copia de las Instrucciones dadas á Espinosa con mas otros documentos para que arreglandose á ellos dicho Tabares procediese como se le previno en la Real Cédula que se cita en el capítulo sexto número ocho, y en este se citan tambien los instrumentos que justifican todo lo anteriormente relacionado.

37. El Brigadier Don Diego Tabares trajo de España á el Ingeniero Don Gaspar de Lara con quien pasó á Guayana, y reconocidos los terrenos, de acuerdo con dicho Ingeniero, y demas personas prácticas que concurrieron despreciando la Isla de Faxardo, y Angostura, y con arreglo á la Instruccion informó á el Virrey de Santa Fé á favor de la Guayana, como consta del número nueve del citado capítulo sexto.

38. El Virrey de Santa Fé, con parecer del Ingeniero Director de la Plaza de Cartagena Don Juan Baptista Mac-evan, aprobó la representacion de Tabares, y mandó se construyese el Fuerte en la Isla de Limones, como consta al número diez Capítulo sexto.

39. De lo hasta aquí expresado, resulta ; que la Angostura solo ha tenido á su favor los dictámenes de Gobernador de Cumaná Don Juan de la Tornera, y de Fray Francisco del Castillo Misionero de Piritu y que estos solo miraron á evitar y contener las hostilidades que los extrangeros, y Caribes, ocasionavan en la Provincia de Barcelonas, por lo que nada produgeron en orden á utilidad, ó inutilidad del Presidio de Guayana, ni á fortificar el Orinoco para que los extrangeros no se estableciesen en él, pues para esto no es presumible considerasen a proposito la Angostura.

40. Que la Isla de Faxardo, solo ha tenido á su favor el dictamen de los Padres de la Compañia Juan Capitel y Juan Romes que juntos reconocieron el Orinoco, y creyeron que este se cerraba fortificando dicha isla con lo que se daba mayor fuerza á las fortificaciones de Guayana, las que no desestimaron, cuyo dictámen nadie le ha tenido por conforme.

41. Que á favor del Presidio han expuesto sus acuerdos el Ingeniero Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo : el Gobernador de la Trinidad Don Agustin de Arredondo : el Coronel y Gobernador de Cumaná Don Carlos de Sucre : su Teniente el Marques de San Phelipe : el Padre Joseph Gumilla ; y este con poderosas razones, sin embargo de haber sostenido ántes el dictamen de los Padres Capitel, y Romes : el Ingeniero Don Antonio Jordan : el Brigadier y Gobernador de Cumaná Don Diego Tabares : el Brigadier y Gobernador de Cumana Don Gregorio de Espinosa : el Ingeniero Don Gaspar de Lara : el Ingeniero Director de la Plaza de Cartagena Don Juan Bautista Mac-evan ; y en virtud de su dictamen, la aprobacion del Excelentísimo Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava : y quantos en Compañia de los nominados han concurrido á

he could send his Report to His Majesty, for A in order to do so he awaited the arrival of Don Gregorio de Espinosa, who went afterwards to the fortress, and, rejecting the Island of Faxardo and Angostura, sent his Report to His Majesty in favour of Guayana, as may be seen in his said Consulta in the seventh paragraph of Chapter VI.

36. After the said Report His Majesty appointed Brigadier Don Diego Tabares to succeed Don Gregorio de Espinosa, with the same commission to fortify the Angostura and the Island of Faxardo, giving him for that purpose a copy of the instructions given to Espinosa, with several other documents, so that he could, in accordance B with their contents, proceed as directed by the Royal Cedula quoted in Chapter VI, No. 8, where the several documents are quoted in justification of all that has been previously stated.

37. Brigadier Don Diego Tabares brought with him from Spain Engineer Don Gaspar de Lara, with whom he went to Guayana and examined the ground, and, in accordance with said engineer and other experts who concurred, he rejected the Island of Faxardo and Angostura, and, according to his instructions, sent his Report to the Viceroy of Santa Fé in favour of C Guayana, as shown by No. 9 of the said Chapter VI.

38. The Viceroy of Santa Fé, after the Report of the engineer director of the fortress of Cartagena, Don Juan Bautista MacEvan, approved the opinion of Tabares, and directed the construction of the fortress in the Island of Limones, as shown in No. 10 of Chapter VI.

39. From what has been expressed heretofore, it appears that the Angostura has only had in its favour the opinions of the Governor of Cumaná, Don Juan de la Tornera, and of Father Francisco del Castillo, a Piritu missionary, and that they D thought only of preventing and restraining hostilities from foreigners and Caribs in the Province of Barcelona, and that they brought forward nothing upon the utility or inutility of the fortress of Guayana or the fortification of the Orinoco, so that the foreigners should not establish themselves therein, as it is not likely that they should have considered Angostura the proper place for that purpose.

40. That the Island of Faxardo has had in its favour only the opinion of the Fathers of the Society, Juan Capitel and Juan Romes, who explored together the Orinoco River, and thought E that it could be closed by fortifying said island, adding a new strength to the fortifications of Guayana, which were not discarded, in which opinion no one has concurred.

41. In favour of the fortress have been the Report of the Engineer Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo, the Governor of Trinidad, Don Augustin de Arredondo, the Colonel and Governor of Cumaná, Don Carlos de Sucre, his lieutenant, the Marquis de San Phelipe, Father Joseph Gumilla, the last with very powerful reasons notwithstanding his former Report in support of the opinions of F Fathers Capitel and Romes, Engineer Don Antonio Jordan, Brigadier and Governor of Cumaná, Don Diego Tabares, Brigadier and Governor of Cumaná, Don Gregorio de Espinosa, Engineer Don Gaspar de Lara, Engineer Director of the fortress of Cartagena, Don Juan Bautista MacEvan, and in virtue of his opinion the approbation of the most excellent Don Sebastian de Eslava, and as many as in the company of the above-mentioned

K

A la exploracion, y exámen de los terrenos, ya como practicos de ellos, ó con alguna inteligencia en materias de fortificacion unanimes y conformes sintieron á favor del Presidio, y lo mismo sucederá á quantos Ingenieros, y personas verdaderamente practicas del Orinoco, destine Su Magestad para el mas exacto exámen como lo executen sin parcialidad, sin fines particulares, ó por hacerse tales: y solo sí con el del mayor servicio de Dios y del Rey.

42. Pero para que se ha de ocurrir á nuevos y repetidos exámenes, dictámenes de Ingenieros, prácticos de Orinoco, ni modernos discursos, quando la experiencia ha decidido este tan controvertido é importantísimo asunto, y declarado las providencias que convienen, y deben tomarse, sin admitir impugnacion, ni contrarias deliberaciones: Y como lo ha decidido la experiencia? Dirélo con la brevedad posible.

43. En el año de mil setecientos veinte se hallaba la Gobernacion de Cumana en el miserrimo estado relacionado en el Capítulo primero, y padeciendo los continuos extragos que executaban los Indios Caribes sostenidos de los Holandeses, Ingleses, y Franceses quienes con dichos Caribes corrian toda esta Gobernacion, la de Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fé, y Provincia de Guayana, esclavizando, y matando quantos Indios no Caribes podian haber, y quemando los Pueblos de Mission y de Españoles que en las expresadas Provincias se establecian sin que para evitarlo bastasen las providencias de los Gobernadores mis Antecesores, no obstante que las tomaron mui activas y acertadas, sin embargo de sus pocas facultades como lo justifican los siguientes exemplares.

44. De resulta de haber quemado el Pueblo de San Pheliz de la Penitencia, congregó la gente que pudo el Gobernador Don Joseph Carreño, y con ella hizo entrada por la serrania de Cumana hasta el Rio Guarapiche, y en sus Riveras tubo una reñida funcion con los Caribes, y Franceses de que dió cuenta á Su Magestad como consta en el Capítulo primero número cinco.

45. En el Gobierno de Don Juan de la Tornera, se comenzaron á hacer entradas en los Llanos de la Provincia de Barcelona, y mui al principio de ellos, y á orillas del Rio Huere se dió otra reñida funcion á los Caribes é Ingleses, y se quemaron las casas que alli tenian dichos Ingleses de que el Gobernador Tornera dió cuenta á Su Magestad en Noviembre de mil setecientos veinte y siete, y antes, con fecha de Enero de setecientos veinte y quatro tenia hecho el correspondiente recurso suplicando á su Real Benignidad se fortificase la Angostura como consta del Capítulo dos número primero.

46. En el Gobierno de Don Carlos de Sucre se dieron varias providencias para perseguir á dichos Caribes, y extrangeros, se descubrió y habilitó el camino que de los Llanos de Barcelona dirige al Presidio de Guayana, y otras utilissimas que por no dilatarme omito; pero no bastaron para evitar el desgraciado suceso de la Mission de Nuestra Señora de los Remedios, executado por los Caribes, y Franceses, como queda dicho en el Capítulo dos desde el número dos al seis.

47. En el Gobierno de Don Gregorio de Espinosa se continuó el desvelo para contener los extrangeros: se comenzaron á poblar los Llanos de Barcelona, y á pacificar los Indios Caribes sus habitantes, segun el Capítulo dos citado, y desde el número siete á el diez.

48. En el Gobierno de Don Diego Tabares se pusieron eficaces medios para continuar las Poblaciones, y contener los Extrangeros, especialmente

persons have attended to the exploration and examination of the ground as experts or conversant with the subject of fortifications, all unanimously were in favour of the fortress, and the same thing will happen with every engineer and practical person familiar with the Orinoco sent by His Majesty to examine the subject accurately, if they do so impartially and without any private ends or desire for self-aggrandizement, and only in the interest of the best service of God and the King.

42. But there is no need of any new and repeated explorations, reports of engineers, experts of the Orinoco, nor modern discussions, since experience has decided this point, so much controverted and of paramount importance, showing what steps are proper to be taken, without contention or contrary opinions. And how has it been settled by experience? I will answer as briefly as possible:—

43. In the year 1720, the Province of Cumana was at the lowest condition of misery, as stated in Chapter I, suffering constant ravages from the Caribs, supported by the Dutch, English, and French, who, with the Caribs, overran all this province, that of Carácas, Barinas, Santa Fé, and the Province of Guayana, enslaving and slaughtering all the Indians, other than Caribs, whom they could seize, and burning the Mission villages and Spanish settlements established in the said provinces, while the measures of the Governors, my predecessors, proved insufficient to prevent it, although they took very active and well-considered steps in spite of their restricted means, as the following instances prove:—

44. After the destruction by fire of the village of San Felix de la Penitencia, the Governor, Don Joseph Carreño, at the head of all the people that he could gather, marched through the mountains of Cumana and entered the Guarapiche River, on the banks of which he had a severe fight with the Caribs and French together, which he reported to His Majesty, as shown in Chapter I, No. 5.

45. During the Governorship of Don Juan de la Tornera, incursions began to be made in the plains of the Province of Barcelona, and at the very beginning of the plains, on the banks of the River Huere, another encounter took place with the Caribs and English, and the houses which the said English possessed there were burnt, as reported by Governor Tornera to His Majesty in November 1727, and before, in January 1724, he had applied and requested likewise the fortification of the Angostura, as shown in Chapter II, No. 1.

46. During the government of Don Carlos de Sucre, several steps were taken to attack the said Caribs and the foreigners; the road from the plains of Barcelona to the fortress of Guayana was discovered and opened up, and other most useful measures, that I omit out of brevity, but it was not enough to avoid the unfortunate event which occurred at the Mission of Nuestra Señora de los Remedios, carried out by the Caribs and French, as explained in Chapter II, No. 6.

47. During the government of Don Gregorio de Espinosa efforts were continued to restrain the foreigners. The plains of Barcelona began to be settled, and the Carib Indians who inhabited the same, to be pacified, as shown in Chapter II, already quoted, Nos. 7 to 10.

48. During the government of Don Diego Tabares, efficient measures were adopted for the continuance of the settlements and to restrain the

en el Presidio de Guayana, como luego diré: y sucesivamente Don Matheo Gual Don Nicholas de Castro y en mi tiempo.

49. Pero la vigilancia de dichos mis Antecesores, no fué suficiente para precaver el todo de los estragos que en distintos tiempos han executado los Indios Caribes, siempre sostenidos y persuadidos de los extranjeros especialmente los Holandeses: veanse los autos que acompañan desde los folios veinte y uno á el veinte y quatro, y en ellos el contenido de los números dos á el siete del memorial del Padre Gumilla, omitiendo la justificación de otros muchos desórdenes que dichos extranjeros han motivado hasta en las mas remotas Provincias, á que el Orinoco facilita la internacion.

50. Bien que se evidencia por el contenido de los Capítulos dos y siete, que en el día se hallan tranquilizadas las Provincias de esta Gobernacion, poblados los mas de los Indios sus habitantes á excepcion de los desconocidos en la de Guayana sin que de la Nacion Cariba se experimenten inquietudes, ni mas desgracias, que las tales quales que ocasionan sus embriagueces, y de dicha Nacion formados varios Pueblos en la Provincia de Barcelona á cargo de los observantes de Piritu: Igualmente en la Provincia de Guayana á el de los Capuchinos Cathalanes; y los Gentiles, habitantes en las inmediaciones de las Colonias Holandeses que se ven en el Mapa General amedrentados, y sin aliento para introducirse por el Orinoco, ni centro de la misma Provincia de Guayana, sino es mui rara vez, y con sumas precauciones, y esto mediante, y el cuidado que con ellos se tiene, se van internando y estableciendo con felicidad las Misiones á cargo de los Capuchinos Cathalanes, como consta del capítulo ocho, á que se ha seguido tambien el establecimiento de la nueva Poblacion de San Antonio de Hupata, como dicho es en el capítulo nueve y números ciento uno á ciento cinco.

51. Que en ninguna de dichas Provincias se ven ya extranjeros que las corran, y hostilizen, ni á ello muevan á los Indios Caribes sus aliados á excepcion de los Holandeses que les compran quantos esclavos no Caribes les llevan. No se ve tampoco, que dichos extranjeros naveguen el Orinoco esto es de la Guayana para arriba; que en sus bocas, y hasta las inmediaciones de dicho Presidio lo executan con toda libertad; pero sin serles posible hacer desembarco en las citadas Provincias, ni mas comercio, que el que se les permite en la Plaza, y en los términos expuestos en la Nota trece del Quaderno de noticias; y sin la condescendencia allí dicha, y precisa, nada pueden executar, siendo facilissimo el remedio á este tan corto, y despreciable daño, como lo expondré en la tercera parte; No teniendose noticia hayan internado por el Orinoco desde el año de mil setecientos cuarenta y seis mas extranjeros, que un Francés nombrado Ignacio gran practico de él, el que le navegó en el año de mil setecientos cincuenta y dos hasta las Bocas de Apure, en donde se hizo fuerte como consta de la vuelta del folio ochenta y quatro á el ochenta y seis de los autos que acompañan; pero fueron apresadas sus embarcaciones, y del mismo modo en otras dos ocasiones que despues lo intentó; con lo que desengañado, y rico de trabajos y desdichas ha desistido enteramente de semejantes empresas, sin haber otros que quieran experimentar iguales infortunios á los del predicho Francés Ignacio: Siendo todo lo narrado tan cierto, y positivo, que no habrá quien justifique lo contrario. Igualmente lo es, que mediante la tranquilidad de estas Provincias, se han establecido en los Llanos de Caracas, y Barcelona distintas Poblaciones de

foreigners, especially in the fortress of Guayana, A as I will show by-and-bye; and these were continued successively by Don Mateo Gual, Don Nicolas de Castro, and in my time.

49. But the vigilance of my predecessors was not enough to prevent all the ravages that at different times had been carried out by the Carib Indians always supported and encouraged by foreigners especially by the Dutch. See the accompanying proceedings, from folios 21 to 24, and there the contents of Nos. 2 to 7 of the Memorial of Father Gumilla, omitting the evidence of many other outbreaks which the said foreigners have perpetrated even in the remotest provinces in communication with the Orinoco B

50. Evident as it is by the contents of Chapters II and VII that the tranquillity of said provinces, most of them inhabited by Indians, except the unknown parts of the Guayana, has been secured nor are disturbances created by the Carib tribe nor any further misfortunes, save such as are caused by their drunken brawls. From the said Caribs several settlements have been established in the Province of Barcelona under the Father Observants of Piritu. The same thing has been done in the Province of Guayana, under the C Catalanian Capuchins, and the heathen inhabitants in the vicinity of the Dutch colonies, shewn in the General Map, who are in fear, and discouraged from entering into the Orinoco, or centre of the Province of Guayana, but very seldom, and with the utmost precautions, by these means, and the care taken of them, are moving inwards, and Missions under the Catalanian Capuchins are being successfully established, as shown in Chapter VIII, followed likewise by the establishment of the new settlement of San Antonio de Upata, as shown in Chapter IX, Nos. 101 to 105. D

51. That in none of the said provinces are foreigners any longer seen overrunning them and committing hostilities or exciting the Caribs, their allies, to do so, except the Dutch, who purchase from them all the Indians that are not Caribs. There are no foreigners navigating the Orinoco, that is, above Guayana, for at its mouth and up to the neighbourhood of the said fortress they do so freely, but without being able to land in the said provinces, nor do any more trade than the fortress allows, and within the terms explained in my Note 13 of my Book of Notes, and without the E toleration therein stated, which is absolutely necessary, they can do nothing; and the remedy for this very slight and contemptible injury I will set forth in Part III. There is no record that since 1746 any foreigners have gone into the interior along the Orinoco, except a Frenchman named Ignace, who was thoroughly acquainted with it, and who, in 1752, navigated it up to the mouth of the Apure River, where he made a stand, as shown from folio 84 verso to 86 of the accompanying proceedings, but his vessels were seized then and on two other occasions in which he tried to do the same; and being thus undeceived and rich in troubles and misfortunes, he desisted entirely from undertaking similar enterprises, and no other persons have been willing to risk like misfortunes to those of the said Frenchman Ignace. All these facts are true, and subject to no contradiction. It is likewise a fact that, through the tranquillity of these provinces, several F settlements of Spaniards and natives have been established in the plains of Caracas and Barcelona, and the fields contain all sorts of cattle, yielding

A Españoles, y naturales, y los Campos se han (pob-  
lado de toda especie de Ganados, de que resultan  
las utilidades y comodidades que se expresan en el  
capítulo dos.

52. La pacificacion, y Poblacion de los Indios  
de esta Gobernacion se debe á mis Antecesores, y  
á los Cuerpos de Mission que evangelizan en ella,  
como queda dicha en el todo de los capitulos tres y  
ocho.

53. Y el que los extrangeros no se internen oy  
por el Orinoco, en esta Gobernacion, en las de  
Caracas, Varinas, y Santa Fé de qué dimana, ó á  
quien se debe? es, por ventura á las providencias  
B libradas por Su Magestad en consecuencia de los  
varios recursos de los Gobernadores, y Cuerpos de  
Misioneros citados en el capítulo seis número dos?  
no por cierto; pues de estas solo ha resultado una  
confusion de opiniones que al cabo han pasado en  
la fabrica del desgraciado fuerte de San Fernando,  
como consta del todo del capítulo seis.

54. Débese, pues, á esta fortificacion? tampoco,  
porque sin haber llegado el caso de montarle un  
cañon, ni aun de concluirla, se halla hecha quar-  
teles, y enteramente inservible como consta en el ca-  
pitulo nueve y números cincuenta á ochenta y ocho.

55. Pues como internandose los extrangeros tan  
libremente por el Orinoco hasta el año de mil  
setecientos treinta y quatro, y con poca menos  
osadia hasta el de mil setecientos cuarenta y seis  
no lo executan en el dia? quien se lo impide, ó  
que puerta se les ha cerrado? esto está claro y  
notorio á todos habitantes de estas Provincias, y á  
los mismos extrangeros, que consiste en haberse  
formalizado el Presidio de Guayana, poniendo sus  
Fortificaciones en estado de defensa, completado su  
poca Guarnicion, yaumentado aquel vecindario, que  
aunque en corto número, [es?] suficiente para guar-  
dar la entrada del Orinoco, y resistir á los extran-  
geros que la intenten, lo que no podian executar  
D en el año de mil setecientos veinte que se hallaba  
aquel Presidio en la infelicidad que consta en el  
capítulo cinco, y número uno del sexto, y en la  
misma se mantubo hasta el año de mil setecientos  
quarenta y siete, que de resulta de su quema, se  
comenzó á formalizar por el Gobernador Tabares.

56. Y el haberse formalizado dicho Presidio ha  
sido efecto de las Reales Disposiciones en virtud  
de los repetidos recursos que han hecho los Gober-  
nadores mis Antecesores? No habra quien así  
lo diga, pues no se encuentra en el Archivo de  
Gobierno ninguna Real orden, que mande se  
E emplee una pELLADA de barra en sus Fortificaciones  
y solo sí, las citadas en el capítulo seis para la  
construccion del Fuerte de San Fernando, y una  
Real Cédula con fecha de veinte y uno de Marzo  
de mil setecientos cinquenta aprobando al Gober-  
nador Don Diego Tabares la construccion del Fuerte  
de San Diego, que executó de proprio oficio, como  
consta al número quarenta y quatro capítulo nueve.

57. Pues no habiendo Reales Disposiciones para  
el aumento, ó composicion de las Fortificaciones  
del Presidio; en virtud de qué facultades se ha  
formalizado, y puesto en el estado respetable que  
tiene para que los extrangeros no se atrevan á  
F internarse por el Orinoco y por consecuencia, no  
puedan hacer las correrias que anteriormente  
executaban en esta Gobernacion y en las inmedia-  
tas? digo: que hechos cargo mis Antecesores de lo  
importantissimo de aquella Plaza, y de que es la  
precissa llave del Orinoco, y todas estas Provincias,  
y como responsables de ellas, de proprio oficio, y  
con quanto han podido estender sus facultades,  
ademas de las representaciones que han hecho á  
su Magestad cada uno en su tiempo ha dado sus  
particulares providencias, y procurado sus reparos  
hasta el estado que hoy tiene.

advantages and profits to all the inhabitants, as  
shown by Chapter II.

52. The pacification and settlement of the  
Indians of this province is due to my predecessors  
and to the bodies of missionaries spreading the  
Gospel throughout, as stated in Chapters III and  
VIII taken together.

53. And why is it, or to whom is it due, that  
foreigners do not now penetrate inland along the  
Orinoco in this Government or in those of Caracas,  
Barinas and Santa Fé? Is it on account of the  
steps taken by His Majesty, in consequence of the  
various appeals of the Governors and bodies of mis-  
sionaries mentioned in Chapter VI? No, indeed,  
as from these nothing but a confusion of opinions  
has resulted, ending in the construction of the  
unfortunate fort of San Fernando, as shown in  
Chapter VI.

54. Is it due to this fortification? Just as little:  
for before a single cannon could be mounted, or it  
was even finished, it fell to pieces and became utterly  
useless, as shown in Chapter IX, Nos. 50 to 58.

55. Then how is it that foreigners who entered  
so freely by the Orinoco up to 1734, and with little  
less boldness up to 1746, do not do so now?  
Who prevents them, or what door has been shut  
against them? It is clear, and a notorious fact  
to all the inhabitants of these provinces and to  
the very foreigners, that the reason is the forma-  
tion of the fortress of Guayana, placing its  
fortifications in state of defence, completing its  
small garrison and increasing that neighbourhood  
which, although of short number, is enough to keep  
closed the entrance of the Orinoco and to resist  
the foreigners intending to force it, which was not  
possible in the year 1720, in which that fortress  
was in a wretched condition, as shown in  
Chapter V and No. 1 of Chapter VI, and it re-  
mained in the same state up to 1747, when, in  
consequence of its destruction by fire, Governor  
Tabares commenced its restoration.

56. And is this formation of said fortress the  
result of Royal direction, in virtue of the repeated  
appeals made by the Governors, my predecessors?  
Nobody could say so, as there is no Royal Order  
whatever on the subject, in the archives of this  
Government, directing the least help for these  
fortifications, and only those quoted in Chapter VI  
for the construction of the fort San Fernando,  
and a Royal Cedula, under date of the 21st March,  
1750, approving the request of the Governor, Don  
Diego Tabares, for the construction of the fort  
San Diego, carried out by his own authority, as  
shown in Chapter IX, No. 44.

57. Then as there is no Royal Order for the  
increase or repairs of the fortifications of Guayana,  
by virtue of what powers has it been restored and  
put into its present excellent condition, so that  
foreigners do not dare to enter by the Orinoco, and  
consequently cannot make the incursions they used  
to make in this Government and the adjoining  
ones? I say that my predecessors, well aware of  
the supreme importance of that place, and that it  
was the very key of the Orinoco, and of all these  
provinces, and as responsible for the same, by  
their own authority and by stretching their powers  
to the utmost, every one in turn, besides the  
representations sent to His Majesty, has taken  
special precautions to advance the state of repair  
in which the fortress is now.

58. Y qué particulares providencias son las que han dado los Gobernadores desde el año de mil setecientos treinta y quatro que Don Carlos de Sucre se hizo cargo del Presidio de Guayana, y en el que segregandose del Gobierno de la Trinidad se agregó á este de Cumaná? El justificar los particulares recursos que se han hecho á su Magestad, y las providencias que cada uno de mis antecesores ha dado para la seguridad y fomento del Presidio, no lo concibo aquí tan preciso, pues en virtud de los documentos que paran en estos Archivos se podrá executar con mas ó ménos extension siempre que convenga, teniendo aora por suficiente lo que por mayor dejo dicho en el todo del capítulo siete; en el número cinco del ocho; en los números veinte y siete á treinta y uno, y el quarenta y quatro del capítulo nueve, y otros lugares de la primera parte.

59. Pero sí creo, que combendrá saber si las citadas providencias de mis Antecesores, y las tomadas en mi tiempo han puesto al Presidio de Guayana en terminos de regular defensa para resistir á los enemigos de la Real Corona que intenten tomarle, bien sea para mantenerse en él, ó para saquearle, y destrozarle, como lo han executado en otras ocasiones.

A que satisfaga diciendo: que en el capítulo nueve de la primera parte, y desde su número ocho á el quarenta y nueve se justifica el actual estado del Castillo de San Francisco, y Fuerte de San Diego, ó el Padraastro, y la mas ó ménos resistencia que pueden hacer: Desde el número cinquenta á el ochenta y ocho, la inutilidad del Fuerte de San Fernando: En el número ochenta y nueve la poca Guarnicion del Presidio, como se emplea, y necesidad de su aumento: En el número noventa el corto número de sus Milicias y lo mucho que auxilian á la Guarnicion: Y en el todo de los citados lugares ó números, se evidencia que dicho Presidio se halla indefenso para resistir á los enemigos de la Real Corona, que intenten establecerse en él, ó saquearle; pero suficientemente fortificado para defender el que los extrangeros ilicitos tratantes, naveguen el Orinoco, hagan desembarco en las Provincias de esta Gobernacion é internen y hostilizen las de Caracas, Varinas, y Santa Fé, como lo executaron hasta el año de mil setecientos treinta y quatro y poco menos hasta el de cuarenta y seis: que es á quanto han podido extender sus facultades dichos Gobernadores mis Antecesores, y á representar á Su Magestad la necesidad de fortificar dicho Presidio y aumentarle su Guarnicion para precaver que los enemigos de su Real Corona se establezcan en él, y se hagan dueños del gran comercio que prometen las dilatadas Provincias que guarda. Esto mismo tengo representado á su Real Benignidad, de resultas de mi Visita General, y en la consulta de veinte y siete de Agosto, tratando de la demolicion de Araya; además de los reparos que con motivo de la Guerra dispuse se hiciesen en aquellas Fortificaciones, como consta en los supracitados números del Capítulo nueve.

60. Pues, aora bien, si con haber los Gobernadores formalizado aquella Plaza se ha verificado cerrar el paso á los Extrangeros, tanto para navegar el Orinoco, como para hacer desembarco, internarse, y hostilizar las Provincias por donde corre; y mediante á esto ha sido fácil la pacificacion de los Yndios habitantes en las de Barcelona y Caracas, y parte de los Guayanos, y el establecimiento de varias Poblaciones de Españoles y naturales en dichas Provincias, y sus dilatadas Campañas pobládose de Ganados, sin que en estas, ni en los Pueblos se experimente á el presente la menor

[696—3]

58. And what special precautions are those taken A by the Governors since the year 1734, when Don Carlos de Sucre took charge of the fortress of Guayana, and in which it was separated from the Government of Trinidad and annexed to this of Cumaná? To justify the special appeals made to His Majesty and the steps taken by each of my predecessors for the safety and improvement of the fortress I do not consider necessary, for in virtue of the documents held in these archives, it may be done with more or less fulness whenever it may be convenient, taking as sufficient for the present what I have stated in Chapter VII, No. 5 of Chapter VIII, and No. 44 of Chapter IX, and other places of Part I.

59. But I think it will be useful to know whether the above-mentioned steps of my predecessors, and those taken in my time, have placed the fortress of Guayana in a proper state of defence, and able to resist the enemies of the Royal Crown who may endeavour to take it, in order to hold it or sack it and destroy it, as they have done at other times.

I will answer the questions by saying that in C Chapter IX, Part I, Nos. 8 to 49, the actual condition of the Castle of San Francisco is shown, as well as that of the fort San Diego or the Padraastro, and the more or less resistance which they may oppose. From No. 50 to No. 88 the inutility of the fort of San Fernando is shown. In No. 89 the scanty garrison of the fortress, how it is employed, and the necessity of its increase are stated. In No. 90 the short number of militiamen and the great help they render to the garrison. And in all the above-mentioned places and numbers it is shown that the said D fortress is unable to resist an enemy of the Royal Crown, who may endeavour to establish themselves in it or to sack it, but sufficiently fortified to prevent the foreigners and illicit traders from navigating the Orinoco and landing in these provinces, or going inland to commit hostilities in those of Carácas, Barinas, and Santa Fé, as they did until the year 1734, and more or less until that of 1746: and this is as far as the Governors, my predecessors, have been able to extend their powers, and to lay before His Majesty the necessity of fortifying the said post and increasing its E garrison, so as to prevent the enemies of the Royal Crown from establishing themselves there and becoming masters of the great commerce promised by the said extensive provinces guarded by it. I have represented the same thing, laying the case before His Royal Majesty as a result of my general visit, and in the "Consulta" of the 27th August, dealing with the subject of the demolition of Araya, besides the repairs that, on account of the war, I ordered to be made in these fortifications, as shown in the above-mentioned numbers of Chapter IX.

60. Now, the mere fact of the Governors constructing that fortress has been sufficient to close the F pass to the foreigners, not only for navigating the Orinoco, but for landing and going inland to carry hostilities to the provinces through which it runs; and this fact has facilitated the pacification of the Indians inhabiting Barcelona and Carácas and part of Guayana, and the establishment of several Spanish settlements and native villages in the said provinces and their extensive plains, full of cattle, and neither in the plains or villages, up to the present time is there the slightest hostility or

L



- A** hostilidad; ni inquietud por dichos extranjeros, ni Caribes sus aliados. Se justifica tambien que el Yngeniero Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo el Gobernador de la Trinidad Don Agustin de Arredondo y demás que siguieron, reprobando la Angostura, y Ysla de Faxardo, y produciendo sus dictámenes á favor del Presidio hasta la aprobacion del Excelentísimo Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava, procedieron con perfecto conocimiento; y por consecuencia no parecen necesarios nuevos exámenes ni dictámenes de Yngenieros, y Prácticos de Orinoco, ni que debe quedar genero de duda que la situacion del Presidio, es la fuerte, única y ventajosa de todo este formidable Rio: y que dicha Plaza le cierra enteramente, como precisa Puerta que facilita su navegacion y la internacion en tan dilatados Dominios como guarda, y penden de ella; y que por esta razon debe ser fortificada aun mas que la de Cartagena, no solo para evitar el que los extranjeros naveguen el Orinoco; sino tambien para que no puedan situarse en ella: pues si asi lo intentasen (que no esta léjos de suceder) lo conseguiran facilmente respecto de su ninguna defensa al presente, y conseguido, indispensablemente se perderia las Provincias de Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Varinas, Santa Fé, Popayan, y Quito, segun, y en los terminos expuestos en el todo del décimo Capítulo de la Primera Parte: y para su mayor comprobacion, diré aun todavia en el Discurso de esta Consulta: Por lo que no me persuado, que á vista de tan justificados é irreparables perjuicios, será del Real agrado, que se abandone esta importantisima Plaza, trasladando á la Angostura la pequeña Poblacion en que se aloja la corta Guarnicion de sus Fortificaciones; se pierdan las Misiones á cargo de los Capuchinos Cathalanes antemural de las Colonias Holandesas, cuyas misiones no pueden subsistir sin la Poblacion de Guayana; ni esta en la Angostura ni en donde al presente está sin dichas Misiones, como queda expuesto en el todo del Capítulo ocho de la Primera Parte, y en fin, se pierda lo abanzado en seguridad del Orinoco, y vuelva este, y Provincias por donde corre, al miserrimo estado que tenian en el año de mil setecientos treinta y quatro (que será lo mas favorable) ó se establezca en el Presidio de Guayana una Colonia extrangera aun mas perjudicial que la del Sacramento en el Rio de la Plata pues esta no puede dominar mas terreno que el recinto de la Plaza: y la del Presidio será árbitra de la dilatada Provincia de Guayana, y de disfrutar las de Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Varinas y Santa Fé, con mas facilidad que la del Sacramento la Provincia de Buenos-Aires, y sus inmediatas.
- B**
- C**
- D**
- E**

- F** 61. No es de admirar, que las noticias últimamente dadas á Su Magestad hayan sido sin conocimiento de las anteriores Reales providencias para fortificar el Orinoco, y demás varias ocurrencias que dejo justificadas, pues no tubieron presentes los documentos existentes en estos oficios, y Archivo de Gobierno, sin los quales, tampoco pudiera yo haber instruido los autos adjuntos, y justificativos de esta Consulta. Pero, con sobrados fundamentos presumo, que no previnieron ni informaron á Su Magestad otras invencibles dificultades, crecidos gastos, y irreparables perjuicios que resultarán de la translacion, de la

disturbance from the said foreigners or the Caribs, their allies. It is likewise proved that the Engineer, Don Carlos Diaz Faxardo, and the Governor of Trinidad, Don Agustin de Arredondo, and the rest who followed them, rejecting the Angostura and the Island of Faxardo, and giving their reports in favour of the fortress, until the approbation of the Most Excellent Don Sebastian de Eslava, acted with perfect knowledge, and consequently new examinations and reports of engineers and experts about the Orinoco do not seem necessary, nor that any doubts should remain that the situation of this fortress is the only strong and advantageous one throughout this formidable river; or that the said place closes it entirely, being at the same time the very gate which facilitates its navigation and the entry into the extensive dominions which it guards and which depend upon it; and for this reason it must be fortified even more than that of Cartagena, not only to prevent the navigation of foreigners through the Orinoco, but likewise to make their establishment along the river impossible; for if they should have such an intention (which is not far from happening) it would be easy for them to succeed, on account of the want of defence at present, and after having succeeded, the loss of the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, Carácas, Barinas, Santa Fé, Popayan, and Quito would be inevitable, according to the terms explained in Chapter X of Part I; and for further proof, I may say even up to this point in the argument of this "Consulta." Wherefore I do not think that in consideration of the irreparable injury, fully explained, His Majesty will approve of the abandonment of this most important fortress, transferring to the Angostura the small settlement in which the scanty garrison of its fortifications is lodged; or of the loss of the Missions under the Catalanian Capuchins, the bulwark against the Dutch Colony; for the said Missions could not subsist without the settlement of Guayana, nor this at the Angostura, nor even where it stands at present, without the said Missions, as has been stated in Chapter VIII of Part I, nor that finally His Majesty will approve that the advance in the security of the Orinoco should be lost, and that it, with the provinces through which it runs, should return to the miserable condition in which they were in the year 1734 (which will be the best that may happen), a foreign Colony should establish itself at the fortress of Guayana, even more injurious than that of Sacramento in the Rio de la Plata, for the latter cannot control any more territory than the environs of the stronghold, and that of the fortress will control the extensive Province of Guayana, and draw the revenues of those of Cumaná, Barcelona, Carácas, Barinas, and Santa Fé, with more ease than Sacramento can control the Province of Buenos Ayres and its surroundings.

61. It is no wonder that the reports lately sent to His Majesty were in ignorance of the previous Royal measures for the fortification of the Orinoco and the other circumstances that I have shown, as the documents existing in the archives of this Government were not noticed, and they have been necessary for my present Report. I have good reasons to presume that they did not anticipate, or report to His Majesty, the insuperable difficulties, large expenses, and irreparable injuries which will necessarily accompany the transfer of the city of Guayana to the Angostura, for if they had reported the case with the proper accuracy,



Ciudad de Guayana á la Angostura, pues á haber informado su Real Animo con la veracidad que corresponde, creo no hubiera deliberado su Real Benignidad la predicha translacion: Por lo que, aunque me dilate en este Punto, tengo por mui de su Real servicio, el exponer en él, parte de las sumas dificultades gastos, y perjuicios que se seguirán en dicha translacion para que en vista de todo, resuelva Su Magestad lo que fuese de su Real Agrado.

62. Entre las invencibles dificultades que imposibilitan la translacion de la Ciudad de Guayana á la Angostura, es una de ellas la inutilidad del terreno, y demas indispensables comodidades para la situacion y subsistencia de una Poblacion. Es el terreno occidental de la Angostura en la Provincia de Guayana, mui bajo, y el mas expuesto á las inundaciones de Orinoco las que se internan quatro ó cinco leguas, y poco menos de la parte oriental á dicha Angostura, quedando en la bajante del Rio, dilatadas Playas, y diferentes grandes Lagunas como la de Caimanes, que se vé en el Mapa que acompaña. Las aguas que inundan las campañas occidentales á la Angostura, no tienen comunicacion con las que se tienden y derraman en las campañas orientales por mediar una calzada ó cordillera formada de continuados, y bajos cerros. El ancho de esta es de media legua poco mas ó ménos, y el largo, como de quatro leguas. A la parte del Norte se forma la Angostura con lo mas estrecho de dicha calzada la que ensanchandose mas ó ménos y siempre siguiendo el rumbo de Norte á Sur, se interna las quatro leguas, y al fin de ellas se incorpora con una baja serrania.

63. En las dilatadas Playas que deja el Orinoco á el Oriente y Occidente de la Angostura en las areniscas Campañas que no se inundan en la calzada ó cordillera de pequeños cerros que la forman ni en la arida serrania con quien se incorpora, se encuentran maderas para leña, ni fábricas, yerbas para los Ganados de consumo, y Caballerias del uso, ni terrazgos para sementeras, á ménos de que por todo lo dicho no se interne nueve á diez leguas: á que se agrega que lo mas del año, ha de beber el Pueblo las aguas inmundas, y arrastradas por las campañas tanto á el derramarse, como al recogerse á la baxa del Orinoco en la que solo subsisten un mes sin alteracion. ser todas aquellas Playas y terrenos propensos á calenturas como afirman los Indios comarcanos, cuya deposicion no parece deberse despreciar, maxime quando dichos Indios no se ven poblados ni arranchados en sus inmediaciones y que la nueva Poblacion de que se trata ha de tener á el Oriente, y á la Brisa la gran Laguna de Caimanes, la que sin duda ha de ocasionar intemperie, con otras muchas incomodidades que concurren no solo en la parte ó territorio de la Provincia de Guayana, sino tambien en la opuesta de Barcelona, que todas sin duda las tubieron presentes los primeros que se establecieron en el Orinoco el año de mil quinientos quarenta y uno y los fundadores del Presidio de Guayana en el año de mil quinientos setenta y nueve: no ignorandolas los extrangeros quienes si los terrenos fuesen a proposito, y la Angostura defendiese el Orinoco, hubieran procurado establecerse en ella como intentaron en otros parages quando libremente navegavan dicho Rio: Igualmente las tubieron los que han reprobado la Angostura é informado á Su Magestad á favor del Presidio de Guayana (veanse sus Consultas anteriormente citadas) y por ultima están á la vista aun del mas topo ó poco reflexivo, por lo que no me detengo á

no such transfer could have been directed. On this point I think it is due to the Royal service that I explain part of the great difficulties, expenses, and injuries attending the transfer contemplated, so that His Majesty may decide whatever may be His pleasure.

62. Among the insuperable difficulties making impossible the transfer of the city of Guayana to the Angostura, is the poor quality of the soil and the want of the necessary conveniences for the location and subsistence of a settlement. The western ground of Angostura, in the Province of Guayana, is very low, and exposed to the inundations of the Orinoco River, which may flood 4 or 5 leagues, more or less, of the eastern portion of Angostura, leaving at low water extensive saltings and various large lagoons like that of Caimanes, as may be seen by the accompanying map. The waters flooding the lands to westward of the Angostura are not in connection with the floods of the eastern portion, as there is on that side a kind of causeway of continuous hills and low mounds of earth; its breadth is about half a league and the length about 4 leagues. On the northern part the Angostura is formed by the narrowest part of the said causeway, which, widening more or less, runs constantly from north to south, running inland about 4 leagues, where it is incorporated with a low ridge of hills.

63. On the extensive ground left dry by the Orinoco, to the east and west of the Angostura, and all that sandy country, which is not inundated, nor on the causeway or chain of low hills which form it, nor in the arid range into which it runs, is found either firewood or timber, or grass for the pasture of cattle or horses, or farm lands, unless by going inland for a distance of 9 to 10 leagues.

It is to be added that for the greater part of the year, both at the rise and fall of the Orinoco, which only remains unaltered in its channel for one month, the people have to drink impure water, drained off the land; that all those marshes and lands are favourable to fevers, according to the report of the Indians, which cannot be overlooked, especially as they never settle or stay in that neighbourhood. The new settlement in question is to have on the east and north-east the great lagoon of Caimanes, which is certainly unhealthy, besides many other inconveniences, not only in the region or territory of the Province of Guayana, but likewise on the opposite side, on those of Barcelona, which the first settlers had undoubtedly in mind when they established themselves on the Orinoco in the year 1541, and the founders of the fortress of Guayana in the year 1579. The foreigners were not ignorant of this fact, and if the ground had been suitable and the Angostura could have defended the Orinoco, they would have tried to establish themselves there as they did in other places when freely navigating the said river. Such inconveniences have likewise influenced the report to His Majesty of those who have rejected the Angostura and favoured the fortress of Guayana. (See their Reports given before.) Indeed, the fact is so plain to the eye of the most indifferent person that I hardly need to continue giving any further justification. With the inundations of the country around, the want of building timber and kindling wood, pasture, and farming grounds

**A** mayor justificacion. Conque inundandose las campañas, careciendose de maderas para leña, y fábricas, yerbas, y terrazgos, y una gran parte del año de Aguas Buenas, y siendo el terreno propenso á calenturas sin probabilidad, ni experiencia de lo contrario; no parecen necesarias muchas razones para persuadir la imposibilidad de la subsistencia de esta Poblacion y así pasará á hacer constante la segunda y no pequeña dificultad que hay para su translacion.

**B** 64. En el Capítulo nueve de la primera parte, y su número noventa y uno dejo dicho, que la Ciudad de Guayana consiste oy en su Iglesia, el Cuartel de la Tropa, y setenta y tres casas situadas en el orden que se ven en la segunda figura del Mapa que acompaña, y previene su particular, y marginal explicacion. Dichas setenta y tres casas avaluadas con toda moderacion, y una con otra á razon de cuatrocientos pesos, importan veinte y nueve mil doscientos, á que se agregan cuatro mil que costó el Cuartel, y cuatro mil que valdrá la Iglesia y materiales acopiados para reedificarla segun está proyectado; con lo que asciende el todo á treinta y siete mil y doscientos pesos que es lo ménos en que me persuado se puede valorar el material de dicha Ciudad. En el mismo capítulo número, y Mapa se vé, y consta poseer aquellos vecinos veinte y ocho ó treinta pequeñas Haciendas que unas consisten en plantages de frutas y caña, cuyas mieles aprovechan en la saca de Aguardiente para el consumo de la Ciudad, y en la fábrica de azúcar de mas mala calidad á que llaman papelon; pero única que allí y en las Misiones se consume: Otras se reducen á mas pequeñas Arboledas de Cacao que principian á fructificar, y entre todas, y al presente rinden de seis á ocho fanegas: Y otras situadas en la parte opuesta y territorios de la Provincia de Barcelona consisten en Ganados vacunos con los que escasamente se abastece de carnes el Presidio. Avaluadas las tales Haciendas, y una con otra á razon de mil pesos importan todas treinta mil, cuyo principal se justifica muy bien por lo que rinden los Diezmos, los que regulados por un quinquenio se rematan annualmente en ciento diez y ocho pesos y seis reales como consta en el correspondiente estado del Mapa General y Autos que le acompañaron: y agregandose á los ciento diez y ocho pesos y seis reales que exive el Dezmero, los gastos de recoger dichos Diezmos, y alguna tal qual utilidad que le quede resulta ser el principal de las Haciendas aun muchos mas de los supradichos treinta mil pesos considerando que produzgan aun cuatro por ciento.

**C** 65. Las solas setenta y tres casas, Iglesia y Cuartel que á donde estan valen treinta y siete mil doscientos pesos, en el sitio de la Angostura no se harán por cinquenta mil respecto de la total falta de maderas, paja, y demás materiales: de operarios para su construccion, de Indios para los trabajos, y esquivar las muchas embarcaciones necesarias para la conduccion de materiales y de viveres para la subsistencia de todos. Tiene librados Su Majestad quatro mil pesos de ayuda de costa para la fábrica de la nueva Iglesia como diré, á cuya cantidad se deberán agregar cinco ó seis mil pesos que el Real Erario gastará en un Cuartel preciso en dicha Angostura para que sirva de Plaza de Armas como el del Presidio pues lo llovioso del Pais no permite que al raso se pasen las diarias y mensuales revistas, y se arrimen las armas para montar la Guardia y demas funciones militares á excepcion del exercicio que se hace fuera quando el tiempo lo permite. Rebatidas estas dos cantidades del total de dichos cinquenta

and the poor water nearly the whole year, with a sickly climate exposed to fever, it seems to me that few reasons are necessary to prove the impossibility of the subsistence of this population, and therefore I will go on to show the second, and no little difficulty of the transfer of the same.

64. In Chapter IX of Part I, No. 91, I have said that the city of Guayana consists to-day of a church, the quarters of the troops, and seventy-three houses, situated in the order shown by Fig. 2 of the accompanying map, with the marginal and especial explanations. Said seventy-three houses at a moderate estimate averaging 400 dollars each, are worth 29,200 dollars, added to 4,000 dollars, the cost of the head-quarters, and 4,000 dollars that of the church and materials gathered for its rebuilding, the whole will amount to 37,200 dollars, as the lowest value, I believe, of the material cost of said city. In the same Chapter, number, and map will be seen marks of from twenty-eight to thirty small plantations, belonging to the residents; some yield fruits, and some of them sugarcane, used in the manufacture of rum for consumption in the city, and of sugar of very poor quality, which they call papelon, the only kind in use there and in the Missions. Other farms are reduced to a few cocoa groves, beginning to yield, and among them all there is at present a yield of 6 to 8 fanegas. On the opposite side of the river, in the territory of the Province of Barcelona, they consist of herds of cattle which scarcely supply the fortress. The said farms are, on an average, valued at 1,000 dollars each, and the whole at 30,000 dollars, and this total is shown to be correct by the returns of the tithes, which, on a five-year basis, amount yearly to 118 dol. 6 reals, as shown by the corresponding Statement and General Map with the accompanying proceedings. Adding to the 118 dol. 6 reals stated by the collector the expenses of collection and some slight remuneration to him, it appears that the capital of the farms must considerably exceed even the said 30,000 dollars, considering that they still produce 4 per cent.

65. The seventy-three houses alone, together with the church and quarters of the troops, are worth, as they are, 37,200 dollars; they could not be built in Angostura for 50,000 dollars, considering the absolute want of timber, thatch, and other materials, and mechanics for the construction, Indians for the work, and to manage the numerous boats necessary for carrying materials and provisions for the subsistence of all.

His Majesty has given 4,000 dollars to help the construction of the new church, as I will show; to this said sum we must add five or six thousand dollars from the Royal Treasury for the construction of suitable military quarters in Angostura, to serve as a drill ground, like those of the fortress, as the constant rains of the country do not permit the daily and monthly reviews in the open, or the laying down of arms to mount guard and other military functions, except outdoor exercise when the weather is propitious. Subtracting these two amounts from the total of the said

mil pesos, resulta ser necesarios quarenta y un mil para la Fábrica de otras iguales setenta y tres casas en que puedan alojarse las noventa familias que habitan las existentes en el Presidio; en cuya cantidad será pensionado aquel pobrisimo vecindario además de los treinta mil pesos valor de sus pequeñas Haciendas, que deberán abandonar (aquí entra ahora la dificultad) pues como es presumible que unos pobres miserables que con sus familias, penden de solo el sueldo que gozan como soldados y sus respectivos oficiales abandonen las casas que á costa de muchos años y afán han fabricado, y pasen á construir las de nuevo en un arenal que no ofrece la menor comodidad, ni arbitrios para ser auxiliados? y como es creible, que los vecinos no soldados abandonen sus propias Haciendas de Campo, y casas en la Ciudad, y quedando de esta suerte en miserrima pobreza, passen á la Angostura á establecer sus casas, y nuevas Haciendas en los desconocidos Montes distantes nueve ó diez leguas de la poblacion, sin Indios que les auxilien en el trabajo ni caudal para costear estos ni viveres para la subsistencia? esto, sin embargo de las noticias dadas á Su Majestad, es moralmente imposible, á menos de que no pasen muchos años, y en ellos, y á costa de sumas considerables se vayan facilitando tan insuperables dificultades al presente.

66. Es la falta de viveres la tercera y poderosa razon que imposibilita la translacion de la Ciudad de Guayana. Mantienense las quinientas treinta y cinco personas que contienen las noventa familias de los pocos que cosechan en las treinta pequeñas Haciendas que cultivan, y de lo que escasamente subministran cinco pueblos de Mision á cargo de los Capuchinos Cathalanes, como difusamente lo deje expuesto en el Capítulo ocho de la primera parte, y desde su número seis á el doce. El todo de los viveres que concurren, al Presidio es en tan corta cantidad, que mui raro año abundan, y mui frecuentes, los que padecen extremas necesidades, y en el mas feliz no pueden entrar cien Hombres en dicho Presidio sin que estos y sus habitantes experimenten el hambre, y las consequentes enfermedades, como lo ha enseñado la experiencia. (Digalo la expedicion de Limites.) Cuyas necesidades no son remediabiles por lo remoto, y costoso de los recursos, que han de ser precisamente á la Provincia de Cumaná, y sus valles de la costa del Norte en caso de que en ellos no se padesca igual contratiempo que tambien es frecuente.

67. Siendo innegable quanto aquí y en el citado Capítulo ocho deje expuesto; y notorio á quantos han estado en el Presidio, se sigue, que aun quando el terreno de la Angostura no fuese tan enteramente inutil, y fácil el que transmigrasen á él las noventa familias, es imposible su subsistencia, pues abandonando las treinta pequeñas Haciendas, han de pender dichas quinientas treinta y cinco personas, y demas que manda Su Magestad que allí se agreguen, de los pocos viveres que produjeran los cinco pueblos de Mision no suficientes hoy para mantener la mitad del expresado número de personas, cuyos viveres los han de tener en la Angostura á unos excesivos precios por los indispensables gastos y perdidas que ocasionará su transporte desde las Misiones á Guayana, y de allí por agua, á la Angostura.

68. Tal vez quien dió las noticias á Su Magestad se persuadiria que con las labranzas que hiciesen los nuevos pobladores en la Angostura, se proveerian suficientemente de los viveres necesarios para los que transmigrasen del Presidio, y demas

50,000 dollars there remains 41,000 dollars as the necessary amount for building the seventy-three houses above mentioned, for the lodging of the ninety families inhabiting those existing at present at the fortress. Said amount will have to come out of the pockets of those poor people, besides 30,000 dollars, value of their small plantations that they will have to abandon (there is now the difficulty), as how is it possible that such a miserable people and their families, that are entirely dependent upon their salaries as soldiers, and the corresponding officers, should have to abandon the houses they have built at the expense of many years' savings and labour, to go over to build them again in a sandy place, without any convenience or means to secure any support? And how is it credible that the townsmen, not soldiers, should give up their own farms and fields and their city houses, and, being left in the direst poverty, should go to the Angostura to establish their houses and new farms on unknown forests, distant 9 or 10 leagues from the settlement, without Indians to help them in their work, or money to pay the same, or the provisions for their subsistence? That is, notwithstanding the reports sent to His Majesty, morally impossible, unless there is a lapse of many years, during which, at considerable expense, these now insuperable difficulties could be overcome.

66. The want of provisions is the third powerful reason making impossible the transfer of the city of Guayana. The 535 persons composing the 90 families derive their supplies and livelihood from the scanty products of the 30 small plantations in cultivation, and some small supplies from the five settlements of the Missions in charge of the Catalan Capuchins, as I have elaborately shown in Chapter VIII of Part I, Nos. 6 to 12. The total amount of victuals brought to the fortress is short, and there is very seldom a year of real abundance, but very frequently they endure extreme want, and in the happiest times not 100 men can come to the fortress without producing a famine for themselves and the inhabitants, and consequent sickness, as has been demonstrated by experience. (The Boundary Expedition may attest it.) Their wants are not to be remedied, on account of the distance and cost of the resources, which must come from the Province of Cumaná and the valleys along the northern coast, whenever these are not suffering the same inconvenience, as happens not infrequently.

67. As everything I have explained in the above Chapter VIII is undeniable, and notorious to all those who have been in the fortress, it follows as a consequence that, even if the ground of the Angostura were not so entirely useless, and were easy for the transfer of the ninety families, their subsistence is impossible; for, after having to abandon the thirty small plantations, the said 535 persons, and any others whom His Majesty may order to join them, will have to depend on the few supplies produced by the five settlements of the Missions, not sufficient to-day to support half the said number of persons, which provisions must be sold in Angostura at excessive prices, on account of the unavoidable expenses and losses occasioned by the transportation from the Missions to Guayana, and from there by water to the Angostura.

68. Perhaps whoever sent the report to His Majesty thought that the new farms undertaken by the new settlers of the Angostura would be sufficient to afford the necessary supplies for those persons transferred from the fortress, and the rest of

- A que se agregasen ; pero no tubo presente, que las dilatadas Playas que circundan la Angostura, lo árido de las inmediatas serranias, y Campañas que no se inundan, la necesidad de internarse nueve ó diez leguas en solicitud de terrazgos apropósito, la falta de Indios que los cultiven, el poco número de vecinos que pueden dedicarse al Campo, y que esto no es fácil lo executen los soldados, máxime á tanta distancia de la poblacion, el riesgo á que estarán expuestos, en aquellos desiertos desconocidos, y aun por pacificar, las ningunas facultades del vecindario para costear esclavos, herramientas, carruages, ó caballerias, y abrir caminos en los
- B incultos montes, y rozarlos para dichas sementeras, y hacer en ellas algunas casas en que recogerse, como lo executan en las que abandonan con las Haciendas, y otras muchas dificultades que ofrecen aquellas dichas desiertas Campañas, no permiten el hacer las proyectadas sementeras, á menos de que no pase medio siglo en continuo y eficaz afan, peresca mucha gente en abrir y poblar los incultos montes, y se empleen crecidas sumas en mantener los operarios. Para comprobacion de esto, no es menester mas justificacion, que reflexionar el infeliz actual estado que tiene la
- C Guayana, despues de ciento ochenta años de establecida, y de tanto como se ha trabajado en adelantarla, y gente que ha perecido á fuerza de las muchas necesidades que en todos tiempos han padecido, como lo dejo dicho en los Capítulos cinco y ocho de la primera parte.

69. Pero dado, y no concedido, que el terreno de la Angostura, fuese mui apropósito para situar una poblacion ; y que á el transmigrasen los Guayanos, y demas que manda Su Magestad que alli se agreguen, con todo gusto, y sin la menos incomodidad, resultarán otras dificultades, y los muchos gastos que diré. Las cien plazas de dotacion del
- D Presidio, y las cinquenta y ocho que contiene la Compañia de milicias formada de todo aquel vecindario que frecuentemente son empleadas como las regladas segun lo tengo dicho en el Capítulo nueve de la primera parte, y sus números ochenta y nueve y noventa, es cortissima Guarnicion para aquella plaza. Assi lo han representado mis antecesores á Su Magestad, y de resulta de la Visita General y en la Consulta de veinte y siete de Agosto, tratando de la demolicion de Araya, repeto la suplica de dichos mis antecesores, pidiendo se dignase Su Magestad mandar aumentar dicha Guarnicion con setenta plazas inclusos en ellas los correspondientes Cabos. Pues trasladando aora aquella poblacion á la Angostura, parece que el destacamento que deberá guarnecer el Presidio será correspondiente á las cien plazas oy regladas las cinquenta y ocho que compone la compañía de milicias, y setenta que se consideran necesarias de aumento, y el todo de doscientos veinte y ocho hombres, que tantos son precisos para proveer el destacamento de las Misiones de los Capuchinos Cathalanes, el de la Isla de la Trinidad, guarnecer el Presidio, enfermos que deben considerarse, y alguna gente supernumeraria para las prontas ocurrencias como la de armar
- F Lanchas, reforzar los destacamentos ó entradas si se sabe que los Holandeses han internado la Provincia de Guayana ; todos movimientos mui frecuentes en aquel Presidio, y á que concurren oy los milicianos. Pero doile que no sean mas que las ciento setenta plazas regladas ; que de estas passen treinta á las Misiones y diez á la Trinidad, y subsistan en el Presidio ciento treinta hombres entre enfermos y sanos ; y donde se alojará esta gente ? por que el Castillo de San Francisco no tiene mas que el pequeño cuerpo de Guardia, que

those added to them, not considering that the extensive swamps which surround the Angostura, the aridity of the neighbouring ridges and of the meadows which are not inundated, the necessity of going inland 9 or 10 leagues in quest of proper grounds, the want of Indians for the cultivation, the scanty number of inhabitants who can work the fields, and the inability of the soldiers to do that kind of work, especially at such a distance from the settlement, the risk they run in those unknown deserts not yet reduced, and the absence of means of the residents to buy slaves, implements, carriages, and horses, and to open roads in those wild forests, to till and plant them, building a few houses in which to find shelter, like those they are abandoning with their farms, and many other difficulties which are met with in that desert country, not permitting the establishment of farms before the lapse of half a century of continuous and efficient work, with the loss of a great many persons contriving to open up and settle amid those forests, requiring a large amount to keep and support the labourers. In justification of all that has been said, it is only necessary to reflect on the unhappy actual condition of Guayana after 180 years of its establishment, and in spite of all that has been done to improve it, and the people that have perished from want at all times, as I have said in Chapters V and VIII of Part I.

69. But supposing, though not allowing, that the Angostura site was fit for the location of the settlement, and that the inhabitants of Guayana would go there willingly, as well as the others directed by His Majesty to join them, without the least inconvenience, other difficulties are yet to be encountered, and excessive expenses, as I will show. The 100 persons of the staff of the fortress, and the 58 militiamen of the company of residents formed in that neighbourhood, who are frequently employed to render service as regular troops, as I have said in Chapter IX, Part I, Nos. 89 and 90, is a very small garrison for that fortress. So my predecessors have represented the case to His Majesty, and, in the account of the general visit, and in the Consulta of the 27th August, while dealing with the subject of the demolition of Araya, I repeated the same request of my predecessors, asking His Majesty kindly to increase the said garrison by seventy persons more, including the corresponding corporals.

If that settlement be now transferred to the Angostura, it seems to me that the detachment to garrison the fortress should be equivalent to the 100 regulars, the 58 forming the militia company, and the 70 which are considered a necessary addition, and should be in all 228 men, which are requisite to provide the detachment for the Missions of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers, that for the Island of Trinidad, to man the fortress, allowing for sickness, and to provide a supernumerary force for sudden contingencies, such as the armament of launches, the reinforcement of detachments, or for expeditions upon news of the Dutch being in the interior of the Province of Guayana ; all these movements are frequent enough in that fortress, in which the militiamen take a part. But supposing that there were no more than 170 regulars, and from these 30 to go to the Missions, and 10 to Trinidad, leaving in the fortress 130 men, between sound and sick persons, where are these people to be quartered ? The Castle of San Francisco has only its small guard-room, marked in the plan of the accompanying map, Fig. 3,

se marca en el plano figura tercera del Mapa que acompaña con la letra J en donde no hay cocina ni extension para poner camas. En el Fuerte de San Diego ó el Padrastro, hay solo un alojamiento de quatro varas en quadro, como dicho es en el Capitulo nueve y su número quarenta y siete. Luego no habiendo alojamiento en estas fortificaciones, se hace preciso, que el Rey haga, y mantenga un formal Quartel con el correspondiente para oficiales, camas, y demas utensilios para la tropa. Igualmente un Hospital botica, cirujano, y asistentes con veinte y cinco ó treinta camas para la cuarta parte de la Guarnicion, y destacamentos, que es lo ménos que en aquel temperamento, se debe considerar siempre enferma; y oy se cura en sus respectivas casas. Deberá tambien mantener Su Magestad la Capilla y Capellan; é igualmente un Almacen para depósito de los viveres que vayan trahiendo los Indios de las Misiones. Y quien de cuenta de Real hacienda los pague; y por la misma ó por la de proporcionado Assentista se remitan á la Angostura; pues el Indio que viene con tres ó quatro carguitas de Carabe, huebos gallinas, arroz y frutas, no es regular, ni posible, que por sí, ni por su cuenta, y riesgo se haga la conduccion, ó demore por su corto producto. Calculense los gastos para el todo de lo dicho, é indispensables, y se verá, que sube á sumas considerables, iguales perdidas, y dificultades. Son tambien necesarias en aquel Presidio algunas casas (aunque no por cuenta del Rey) para que se aposenten los traficantes de estas provincias é Indios que conducen viveres de las Misiones, quienes oy lo executan en casa del Sindico de la comunidad donde con su intervencion, se hace la feria de los que portan, y aquellos en las de los demas vecinos sus conocidos, y sin este recurso habrán de estar al raso, ó ha de ser muy escasa la comunicacion con estas provincias. Hacesse tambien indispensable residan allí un Guarda Almacen de los Pertrechos de las fortificaciones, y el Teniente de estos oficiales Reales para recaudar los tales quales derechos, que adeudan las embarcaciones del trafico como primer puerto donde llegan. Y en fin se hace preciso, haya la misma poblacion que se levanta, y aun no suficiente en aquel Presidio, ó que sus fortificaciones no subsistan.

“Para que de este mode tenga la tropa un segundo puesto donde repararse detener el progreso del enemigo, y congregadas allí mayores fuerzas, podrán bajar á desalojarle, conservar la poblacion, aumentar, y socorrer la tropa de la Castillos.”

70. Del Presidio de Guayana á la Angostura, no median las treinta y quatro leguas que han informado á Su Magestad; y solo sí veinte: Estas mismas hay desde el Pueblo de Cary, situado en la Mesa de Guanipa Norte Sur con la Angostura hasta el Puerto del Camino Real frente del Presidio (veanse los Mapas General, y particular que acompaña, y remitome á su exámen ademas de lo que consta en varios instrumentos de los autos adjuntos) bien, que me persuado, que de dicho Presidio á la Angostura, tomando el Camino por tierra en la misma Provincia, haya las treinta y quatro leguas, ó tal vez mas segun los tiempos. En el verano por la facilidad de vadear el Rio Caroni en la inmediacion de la Mission de Marucuri, y no estar las opuestas campañas inundadas sin duda se abreviará mucho. En le invierno es forzoso subir á vadear el Caroni antes que reciba al Rio Paragua pues incorporado este ya no da vado aquel, siendo el passo muy arries-

letter J, where there is no kitchen or space A for beds.

In the fort of San Diego or Padrastro there is only one lodging-room of 4 square yards, as represented in Chapter IX, No. 47, and consequently, if there is no lodging room in these fortifications, it is necessary for the King to build and keep up regular quarters, with the corresponding ones for officers, bedsteads, and other utensils for the troops, as well as a hospital, drug store, surgeon, and assistants, with twenty-five or thirty beds for one-fourth part of the garrison and detachment, which is the smallest number that, in that climate, can be taken as always on the sick list, whereas now the sick are taken care of in their private houses. His Majesty would have to keep likewise a chapel and chaplain, as well as a store to keep the provisions brought by the Indians from the Missions, and the person who, on account of the Royal Treasury, has to pay for the same, and by whom, or by a regular purveyor, they may be forwarded to the Angostura, as the Indian who brings three or four small loads of cassava, eggs, chickens, rice, and fruit could not on his own account and risk take upon himself the transportation, or be delayed to wait for the small proceeds. Let the expenses of all this be reckoned up, and how indispensable they are, it will be found out that they will amount to large sums, involving losses and difficulties. In that fortress a few more houses are wanted (not on account of the King) for lodgings of the traders of these provinces, and for the Indians bringing supplies from the Missions. The latter at present come to the Syndic of the community, and with his intervention the sale is made to the public of what they bring, and the former come to their acquaintances among the neighbours, and without this resource they would keep in the open air, thus making the communication with these provinces very scanty. It is necessary to have a store-keeper for the ammunition and appliances for the fortification, and a Lieutenant of the Royal officers to collect dues from the trading vessels, as being the first port of entry. And, finally, it is necessary to retain the same population that is removed, and which is not even sufficient in that fortress, or that its fortifications be not kept up.

“So that in this manner the troops may hold a second place wherein to refit, stop the progress of an enemy, and collecting their superior forces may go down the river and dislodge them, preserve the population, and increase and reinforce the troop of the Castles.”

70. From the fortress of Guayana to the Angostura the distance is not 34 leagues, as reported to His Majesty, but only 20; it is the same distance from the settlement of Cari, situated on the table-land of Guanipa, north to south of the Angostura, down to the port of Camino Real, opposite the fortress (see the general accompanying map and the special one, to which I refer for an examination, besides what appears from various documents in the proceedings herewith), although it seems to me that the said fortress of Angostura by the land route of the same province may be distant 34 leagues, and occasionally more, according to the season. In summer, on account of the facility for fording the Caroni River, in the neighbourhood of the Mission of Murucuri, when the country around is not inundated, there is no doubt the road will be much shorter. In winter it is necessary to go up and ford the Caroni River before it receives the Paragua



- A gado por lo precipitado de su corriente hasta despeñarse en la Mision de Aguacagua. Y vadeados los Rios Caroni y Paragua se encuentran las campañas mas, ó menos inundadas, por lo que se han de hacer varios giros en la Serrania hasta dar con la calzada que como anteriormente es dicho, forma la Angostura, en cuyo tiempo es mui presumible se anden mas de las dichas treinta y quatro leguas: pero ignorase lo cierto por ser esta mera noticia de los Yndios, no habiendo de los Guayanos, ninguno que sea práctico de las campañas, y Serranias occidentales á los Rios Caroni y Paragua; y solo sí, de las orientales donde se hallan situadas las Misiones de los Reverendos Padres Capuchinos Cathalanes.
- B

(Dejanse de copiar los parrafos, desde el 71 al 100.)

101. Y por la que hicieron los Misioneros Capuchinos Cathalanes, libró Su Magestad la que sigue. Los Misioneros Capuchinos Cathalanes de la Jurisdiccion de Guayana han representado los daños y muertes que cometieron en sus Misiones, algunos Pueblos de Caribes de ellas, por influxo de los Holandeses de Esquibo segun se presume por haberse refugiado á esta Colonia, y por que el Gobernador de ella les da Patentes para que hagan esclavos todos los Yndios que encuentren; para cuyo remedio, pidieron entre otras cozas se les aumentase la Escolta hasta quarenta hombres con un Capitan, y un subalterno consignandoles los sueldos en Santa Fé, cuyos soldados sean personas de buena vida y costumbres debiendose poner otros en su lugar á representacion del Prefecto, y conjudices de las Misiones en el caso de que den mal exemplo; y que para que no se pierdan las Almas de los Caribes sublevados se les yndulte de este delito. Enterado Su Magestad de esta representacion y de lo que en vista de ella, y de una carta de V. S. expuso el Consejo de Yndias, he resuelto que V. S. cuide mui particularmente de que las Misiones de estos Religiosos esten resguardadas aplicando á este fin la tropa que le parezca suficiente de toda la que tiene á su cargo, aunque sea destacando alguna del Castillo de Araya, respecto de que no considera V. S. necesaria esta fortaleza, como lo avisa en carta posterior y que quando esto no lo considere conveniente pueda V. S. aumentar las plazas que le parescan, á el Presidio de Guayana para atender al referido resguardo siendo de la aprobacion del Virrey de Santa Fé, á quien dara V. S. antes cuenta y á Su Magestad para que tambien lo apruebe. Y Asi mismo manda Su Magestad que V. S. tenga particular cuidado en que los soldados de la escolta sean de la mejor vida y costumbres apartándoles y poniendo otros en su lugar si diesen mal exemplo ó causasen alguna inquietud luego que V. S. esté informado de sus defectos por informe de los Misioneros como proponen. Y atendiendo á desvanecer el mismo de los Yndios sublevados, quiere Su Magestad que V. S. en su Real nombre los yndulte del delito de la sublevacion, exhortandolos y previniendolos para en adelante.
- F

Dios guarde á V. S. muchos años.

(Dejanse de copiar los parrafos, desde el 102 al 124.)

125. Verificada que sea la transmigracion de los Guayanos á la Angostura por consecuencia quedan abandonadas las Haciendas que poseen

River, for when once both of them are joined together it cannot be forded, and to cross it becomes very risky, on account of the strong current up to the falls at the Missions of Aguacagua. After fording the Caroni and Paragua Rivers, the country around is found more or less inundated, making necessary several detours in the hills, up to the place where the low ridge and causeway before mentioned forms the Angostura, during which time it is very probable that more than the 34 leagues are traversed; but this is not certain, being a mere report from the Indians, as nobody from Guayana is conversant with the country and the hills on the west of the Caroni and Paragua, knowing only those towards the east, where the Missions of the Reverend Catalanian Capuchin Fathers are located.

\* \* \* \*

101. And, at the instance of the Catalanian Capuchin Missionaries, His Majesty issued the following Resolution: The Catalanian Capuchin Missionaries of the jurisdiction of Guayana have represented the injuries and atrocities perpetrated in their Missions by some Carib settlements, under the influence of the Dutch from Esequibo, as it is surmised, on account of their having taken refuge in the said Colony and because the Governor of the same grants them letters patent to make slaves of all the Indians whom they meet, and as a remedy they ask, among other things, the increase of their escort, up to forty men, with a Captain and a subaltern, their salaries to be payable from Santa Fé, the said soldiers to be of good morals and habits, and to be replaced by others upon the representation of the Prefect and Judges of the Missions, in case they set a bad example; and in order to rescue the souls of the rebellious Caribs, to have them pardoned for the present offence: His Majesty, being informed of this representation and of what, in view thereof, and of a letter from you, has been expressed by the Council of the Indies, has decided that you are to take very particular care that the Missions of the Reverend Fathers be well guarded, detaching for this purpose the troops that you may find sufficient from all those in your charge, and even by detaching some from the Castle of Araya, since you do not consider this fortress necessary, as you report in a further letter; and in case you do not find it convenient to do this, you may increase the number of men that you think fit for the fortress of Guayana, in order to afford the required protection, subject to the approval of the Viceroy of Santa Fé, to whom you will send a report beforehand, as well as to His Majesty, for approval. His Majesty directs likewise that you will take particular care that the soldiers of the escort be of the best morals and habits, removing and replacing them if they set a bad example, or cause any disturbance, directly you receive the reports of their faults from the missionaries as they suggest. And in order to dispel any fears on the part of the rebellious Indians, His Majesty desires you, in His Royal name and behalf, to pardon them for the crime of rebellion, exhorting and cautioning them for the future.—May God preserve you many years.

\* \* \* \*

125. When once the transfer of the residents of Guayana to the Angostura has been carried out the abandonment of the plantations will follow, as it



pues no es fácil que mediando veinte leguas bajen á cultivarlas, y interin se efectua dicha transmigracion, se les podra prohibir que hagan nuevas sementeras, y obligar á que talen ó peguen fuego á las expresadas Haciendas; pero en este caso es necesario, que al todo de las familias se les subministre la diaria racion que deberan obtener en la Angostura, y de lo contrario, ni aun en el mismo Presidio podrán subsistir respecto de que los viveres que producen las interiores Misiones no son suficientes á mantener la mitad de las quinientas treinta y cinco personas que contienen las noventa familias como lo dejo dicho en los anteriores números sesenta y seis á sesenta y ocho, y demas allí citados lo que sin duda ignoraron cuando dieron las noticias á su Magestad é igualmente que á las margenes del mismo Orinoco estan situadas las quatro Misiones de Piacoa, Aripuco, Caroni, y Aguacagua, segun el antecedente número diez y seis: que dichos quatro Pueblos, aunque en nada sufragan á las necesidades del Presidio, tampoco penden de este, ni de las interiores Misiones, y sí de sus mismas Labranças que aunque cortas y poco abundantes por lo infructifero de sus terrenos, son las suficientes para la subsistencia de cada uno de ellos: que si á estos Indios se les prohíbe que las continuen en sus respectivos resguardos en las margenes de Orinoco, tampoco podrán mantenerse, á menos de que no sea á costa del Real Erario; ó que se les haga transmigrar á situarse tierra adentro, que esto es aun mas difícil que trasladar los Guayanos, y si á ello se les violentase, es segura la perdida de estas Misiones, recién fundadas, como consta en los autos que acompañan desde el folio ciento quarenta y tres á ciento quarenta y ocho, y que se retiren á las bocas de Orinoco de donde á costa de sumo trabajo han sido extraídos algunos de ellos.

126. La Mision de Suay situada dos leguas y media al mediodia del Presidio de Guayana, no contiene ningun ganado, y como las restantes al cargo de los Capuchinos Cathalanes disfruta el Hato que llaman de la Mission situado cinquenta leguas tierra adentro como anteriormente queda dicho: subsiste de las labranzas que hacen en sus poco fertiles terrazgos, como las de Piacoa, Aripuco, Caroni, y Aguacagua, y por tanto en nada provee al Presidio: Es la mas antigua, y fundada en el año de mil setecientos veinte y cuatro, como consta al capítulo ocho número dos: Sus naturales los mas ladinos, y bien educados; una de las tres únicas Misiones en donde hasta aora se ha podido fabricar Iglesia: En ella tiene la comunidad la Casa Capitulár, Libreria, y Archivo: hay una casa Real bastantemente cómoda, y Hospicio para los Indios que de tierra adentro conducen viveres á la Guayana en cuya Mission hacen escala: De ella pasan á la Ciudad dejan las cargas en poder del sindico y en el mismo dia retornan á Suay; por lo que si este Pueblo se levanta, se sigue un grande extravio á la comunicacion y comercio de las interiores Misiones, pues la mas inmediata de las situadas al medio Dia, y que abastecen la Ciudad es la de Altagracia, distante diez leguas del Presidio, en cuyo intermedio ni los Indios ni Misioneros tendran donde hacer alto, ni hospedarse; y si se levanta la Poblacion de Guayana, habran de andar veinte leguas sin tener donde refugiarse, ni hacer algun descanso: Sin embargo de todo lo dicho ninguna dificultad tiene retirar este Pueblo de tierras allá; pero con el evidente riesgo de que sus naturales [?] á los Montes por lo difícil que es extraerles de su nativo terreno; cuyo punto no me detengo á justificar respecto de que es bien notorio á quantos han estado en la América y

will not be possible to continue their cultivation at a distance of 20 leagues, and while the transfer is in process of completion the inhabitants can be prevented from planting new farms and forced to destroy by fire or otherwise those which they possess. But it will then be necessary to allow the inhabitants daily rations at the Angostura, as otherwise not even those in the fortress could subsist, when the products from the interior Mission are not sufficient to support half of the 535 persons composing the ninety families already mentioned in preceding paragraphs. These circumstances were not thought of at the time of sending to His Majesty the Report referred to. And likewise that on the banks of the Orinoco River are situated the four Missions of Piacoa, Aripuco, Caroni, and Aguacagua, as before represented in No. 16. Said four villages do not afford any assistance to meet the wants of the fortress, but do not depend on it or on the inland Missions their inhabitants have their own farms, which, although small and not abundant, on account of the poor land, suffice for their own subsistence, and if these Indians are forbidden from continuing in their own grounds on the banks of the Orinoco, they, too, could not subsist unless at the expense of the Royal Treasury, or if compelled to go farther inland, and that would be still more difficult than the transfer of the Guayana people, and if forced to do so the loss of the Missions recently founded will ensue, as shown in the accompanying proceedings from folios 143 to 148, and some of these Indians will go back to the mouth of the Orinoco from where they have been removed with great labour.

126. The Mission of Suay is situated 2½ leagues to the south of the fortress of Guayana, it has no cattle, and, like the rest in charge of the Catalan Capuchins, is supplied from the cattle farm known as that of the Mission, situated 50 leagues inland, as I have already stated. It draws its subsistence from its farms in poor lands, such as those of Piacoa, Aripuco, Caroni, and Aguacagua, which do not render any help in the way of provisions to the fortress. It is the oldest settlement, and was founded in the year 1724, as shown by Chapter VIII, No. 2. Their natives are the most intelligent and well educated. It is one of the only three Missions where up to the present time they have been able to build a church. The community has its Chapter-house therein, and its library and archives. There is a town hall of fair size, and a lodging for the inland Indians bringing provisions to Guayana by way of said Mission. From there they go to the city and leave their loads in the hands of the Syndic, returning on the same day to Suay. If this settlement is removed the communication and commerce with the inland Missions will have to go a long way round, as the nearest stopping-place to the south, through which the city is supplied, is that of Alta Gracia, at a distance of 10 leagues from the fortress, and there is no stopping-place or lodgings for the Indians or missionaries throughout that distance. If the settlement of Guayana is removed they will have to go 20 leagues without any refuge or stopping-place for resting. And notwithstanding all that has been said, there is no difficulty in removing this settlement from there but that of running the risk of the flight of the natives to the forests, where it is difficult to recover them from their native haunts.

- A adquirido algun conocimiento de lo que son Indios, y que las Reales Leyes para el buen Gobierno de las Indias encargan el gran tiento y reflexion con que se ha de proceder en orden á mudar á los Indios de los terrenos de su naturaleza pues para abandonarlos nada los persuade ni convence; y sí los trae á una suma melancolia que les acarrea la muerte: de que pudiera exponer varios exemplares que he presenciado en la parte de América que he andado, y aun en este Gobierno, al presente á mi cargo: Por lo que me parece poder asegurar, que si á los Indios de Suay se les precissa á que se muden de tierras allá, y á los de Aripuco,
- B Piacoa, Caroni, y Aguacagua á que no hagan seimenteras en sus resguardos de las márgenes de Orinoco, la mayor parte de ellos se retirarán al monte de donde han sido extrahidos: Cuyos inconvenientes no advirtieron quando dieron las noticias á Su Magestad, ni lo importante que es á su Real servicio el que á las margenes de Orinoco se vayan situando Misiones, que son las que con el tiempo pueden asegurar estas Provincias, y ser motivo de que se funden Poblaciones de Españoles como las de San Antonio de Upata, y Maturin citadas en el Capítulo nueve y sus números ciento uno á ciento doce y en otros términos son impracticables.
- C

“Que luego que las obras de los fuertes esten concluidas, passe el Comandante á residir en la Angostura: la cierre con una Bateria que pondrá en la parte que llaman de San Phelipe; y en la punta oriental de una loma que hace espaldas, haga una casa fuerte que sirva de Quartel, y defienda las espaldas de la Poblacion, y la Bateria; y que desde allí atienda á la Guarnicion de los fuertes, embaraze la internacion del extrangero, y proteja las Misiones, dando á estas las Escoltas necesarias.”

- D
127. Juzgo supérfluo quanto puedo decir en contestacion del todo del presente Capítulo de la Real orden respecto de que en en el discurso de esta Segunda Parte dejo evidenciado lo mucho que se inundan las Campanas orientales, y Occidentales de la estrecha Cordillera que forma la Angostura: que en ella se carece de Leña Maderas, Yervas, y terrazgos: que esto, y la falta de viveres impossibilita la transmigracion de los Guayanos, y su subsistencia: que la Angostura no defiende ni puede defender la internacion de los extrangeros, y su comercio en las Provincias de Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Varinas, y Santa Fé, ni que los naturales de ellas tengan franco trato con dichos extrangeros: Que la seguridad de estas Provincias pende de las fortificaciones del Presidio de Guayana: que perdido este, de ningun modo puede defenderse la Angostura aunque en ella se haga una fortificacion como la demolida de Araya: Que los reparos y providencias que de oficio han dado los Gobernadores para la seguridad del Presidio, evita que los extrangeros ilícitos tratantes hagan desembarco, y corran las Provincias que baña el Orinoco como lo executaron hasta el año de mil setecientos treinta y quatro y aun el de cuarenta y seis: que en el dia solo navegan el Laberinto de Bocas por donde derrama sin atreverse á llegar á el Presidio: que este se halla enteramente indefenso para los enemigos de la Real Corona que intenten tomarle, y situarse en él: Que si se diese este caso (que está mui próximo) perdiera Su Magestad la gran parte de la América que pende de dicho Presidio, y á que el Orinoco facilita la inter-
- E
- F

I do not dwell any longer on this subject, as it is well known to every one who has been in America and acquired a knowledge of what the Indians are, and that the Royal Laws for the good government of the Indies enjoin that the greatest tact and consideration be observed in the process of removing the Indians from their native places, as nothing is apt to convince them of any good reason for such an abandonment, and when removed they are subject to fits of extreme melancholy followed by death. Various instances I could mention of what I have personally seen in the part of America through which I have travelled, and even at this very place of the government in my charge. Therefore I can certify that if the Indians of Suay and those of Aripuco, Piacoa, Caroni, and Aguacagua are compelled to remove from their land, forbidding them from planting their lands on the banks of the Orinoco, the greatest number of them will take to the forests, from which they had been brought down. These inconveniences were not considered when the report was sent to His Majesty, nor the importance to the Royal service of settling Missions on the banks of the Orinoco, which in time will secure these provinces and attract the establishment of Spanish settlements, as those of San Antonio de Upata and Maturin, mentioned in Chapter IX and Nos. 101 to 112, and otherwise the establishment will be impracticable.

“That when once the works of the fortifications are finished, the Commander transfer his residence to the Angostura, closing it with a battery mounted on the part called San Phelipe; and, on the eastern slope of a hill in the rear, a stronghold is to be erected as head-quarters, and to defend the rear of the settlement and the battery, and that from thence he shall attend to the garrison of the forts and prevent the entrance of foreigners, extending due protection to the Missions, allowing them the necessary escort.”

127. I consider superfluous everything that I might say in answer to the above part of the Royal Order, as I have in the course of this Part II of my Statement placed in evidence the great inundations of the eastern and western sides of the ridge formed by the Angostura, where there is no kindling wood, timber material, pasture grounds, nor farming lands, and that this circumstance and the want of victuals makes the transfer of the inhabitants of Guayana and their subsistence impossible: that the Angostura does not prevent nor can prevent the entrance of foreigners and their commerce with the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, Carácas, Barinas, and Santa Fé, nor prevent the inhabitants of those provinces from keeping an open trade with them: that the safety of these provinces depends on the fortifications of Guayana, and if they are lost the Angostura cannot in any way be defended, even by a stronghold like the one demolished at Araya. The repairs and steps taken duly by the Governors, for the security of the fortress, stop the foreigners from continuing their illicit traffic, their landing and their incursions through the provinces through which the Orinoco runs, as they did until the year 1734 and even that of 1746.

At present they only navigate through the labyrinth of the mouths, without daring to reach as far as the fortress, which is entirely defenceless against the enemies of the Royal Crown, who may try to take and hold it. In such a case (which is very near at hand) His Majesty would lose a great portion of America,

nacion: Que lo mucho que distan de Guayana las Misiones de los Jesuitas, y Dominicos de Varinas no permite que sus Escoltas se agreguen al Presidio, ni que desde este se protejan dichas Misiones: que para la construccion de la Bateria, casa fuerte y demas obras que se previenen, solo existen quinientos pesos siendo necesario trescientos ó quatrocientos mil: Y por último dejo hecho constante lo incierto de las noticias dadas á Su Magestad, las que solo conspiran á desarmar el Presidio (único ventajoso terreno del Orinoco, y llave maestra de todas estas Provincias) el que consideraron suficientemente fortificado con la construccion del Pamplanchado y demás inútiles obras del Fortin de Limones, y estacadas de tierra á el del Cerro del Padrastro, y con dichas inútiles obras y una simple bateria en la Angostura creyeron asegurado el formidable Rio de Orinoco, y dilatadas Provincias á que facilita la internacion. Siendo este el solo favorable dictámen que ha tenido hasta aora la Angostura, y en todo contrario á el de los Gobernadores, Ingenieros, y demás personas prácticas, y á lo que en virtud de Real orden aprobó el Excelentísimo Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava, quien como dichos Gobernadores é Ingenieros tubo el Presidio de Guayana por único y ventajoso terreno que asegura todas estas Provincias, y que se debe fortificar, lo que igualmente expuse por via de Noticia en la Nota nueve del Quaderno anteriormente dirigido á Su Magestad, y en la representacion de veinte y siete de Agosto de mil setecientos sesenta y uno tratando de la demolicion del Castillo de Araya.

“En consideracion á las ocupaciones y gastos para transmigrar los Guayanos, que seran causa de que mucho tiempo esten sin Iglesia, ha venido Su Magestad en concederles quatro mil pesos para su fábrica, á cuyo efecto, con esta fecha se expide la órden conveniente al Virrey de Santa Fé.”

(Dejense de copiar los parrafos desde el 128 al 138.)

### Tercera Parte.

Instruido de todos los antecedentes, y presente estado de la Dependencia que se trata: y siguiendo el acertado dictámen de los fundadores de la ciudad de Santo Thomé de la Guayana, del Ingeniero Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo, del Gobernador de la Trinidad Don Agustin de Arredondo, del Gobernador de Cumaná Don Carlos de Sucre, del Marquis de San Phelipe, del Padre Joseph Gumilla, del Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, del Ingeniero Don Antonio Jordan, del Brigadier Don Diego Tabares, de los Ingenieros Don Gaspar de Lara, y Don Juan Bautista Mac-evan, y la aprobacion del Excelentísimo Señor, Don Sebastian de Eslava: Con el mas profundo rendimiento represento á Su Magestad mi sentir y es:

Que se fortifique el Cerro del Padrastro, y si fuese del Real Agrado, se execute con el Castillo de la Concepcion.

Que, sea con el Castillo de la Concepcion, ó con el que Su Magestad fuese servido, se fortifique sin perdida de tiempo, pues de lo contrario, esta mui expuesto á perderse en la primera Guerra.

Que se mantenga la ciudad: y por quantos medios sean posibles, se procure aumentar dos tantos mas su vecindario.

Que á la Guarnicion se aumenten las setenta y tres Plazas que propusieron los Gobernadores Don

depending upon said fortress, and to which the Orinoco facilitates an entrance. The long distance from Guayana of the Missions of the Jesuits and Dominicans in Barinas does not permit their escorts to be added to the fortress nor their protection from the same. For the construction of the battery, stronghold, and other works directed there is only the amount of 500 dollars, when there is an actual need of from 300,000 dollars to 400,000 dollars; and I have finally shown how erroneous is the report to His Majesty, as to the disarmament of the fortress (the only advantageous spot and key to all these provinces), considering that it would be sufficiently fortified with the construction of the stockade and other useless works of the small fort of Limones and with earthworks on the hill of the Padrastro, and that with said useless work and a simple battery at the Angostura they thought the important Orinoco River safe, as also the extensive provinces easily reached through it.

This is the only favourable report upholding the Angostura up to the present time, and is entirely contrary to those of the Governors, Engineers, and other competent persons, and to the one that, in virtue of a Royal Order, was approved by his Excellency Don Sebastian de Eslava, who, like the said Governors and Engineers, held the fortress of Guayana to be the only advantageous ground to secure the safety of all these provinces, and that it must be fortified, as I have shown in my Note No. 9 of the Book of Notes previously sent to His Majesty, and in my representation of the 27th August, 1761, while dealing with the subject of the demolition of the Castle of Araya.

“In consideration of the occupations and expenses of the transfer of the people of Guayana that may for a time deprive the inhabitants of a church, His Majesty has granted 4,000 dollars for the building of one, and to this end an order has been issued to the Viceroy of Santa Fé.”

\* \* \* \*

### Third Part.

Being well aware of all the antecedents and of the present condition of the dependency in question, and following the accurate judgment of the founders of the town of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, of the engineer Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo, of the Governor of Trinidad, Don Agustin de Arredondo, of the Governor of Cumaná, Don Carlos de Sucre, of the Marquis de San Phelipe, of Father Joseph Gumilla, of Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, of Engineer Don Antonio Jordan, of Brigadier Don Diego Tabares, and of Engineers Don Gaspar de Lara and Don Juan Bautista MacEvan, and the approbation of his Excellency, Don Sebastian de Eslava, with the profoundest respect, I submit to His Majesty my opinion, which is—

That the fortification of the hill of Padrastro, if it meet His Royal pleasure, be carried out with the Castle of La Concepcion.

That, either with the Castle of La Concepcion, or any other one meeting His Majesty's pleasure, it be fortified without loss of time, as otherwise it is greatly exposed to loss in the first war.

That the town be preserved, and that by all means possible the townsmen be doubled.

That the garrison be increased by seventy-three men, as proposed by the Governors Don Gregorio de Espinosa and Don Matheo Gual, and as I have

**A** Gregorio de Espinosa, y Don Matheo Gual, y tengo suplicado á Su Magestad en la representacion de veinte y siete de Agosto de sesenta y uno.

Que se abandone el Fortin de Limones, y se mantenga en el Presidio una Lancha, como lo representó á Su Magestad el Marqués de San Phelipe; y si se hubiese de fortificar la Angostura, se execute con la sola bateria que propuso el Gobernador Don Juan de la Tornera, y manifiesta la novena figura del Mapa.

**B** Que se auxilien las Misiones de los Capuchinos Cathalanes, y observantes de Piritu en los términos, que tengo suplicado á Su Magestad á cuyos seis puntos, y correspondientes Capítulos reduciré esta Tercera Parte.

(Dejense de Copiar los Capítulos 1º y 2º.)

Capítulo Tercero.—*Que se mantenga la ciudad, y por quantos medios sean posibles, se procure aumentar dos tantos mas su vecindario.*

**C** 1. Dejo tambien justificado en la Primera, y Segunda Parte, que los que descubrieron el Orinoco, fundaron la Guayana, frente de la Isla de Faxardo, y orillas del Rio Caroni como se señala en el Mapa. Que habiendola quemado los Holandeses, sus naturales, despreciando la Angostura, y como ya prácticos del Orinoco, fundaron la ciudad de Santo Thomé de la Guayana ocho leguas mas abajo de dicho Rio Caroni, y en donde segunda vez se estrecha el de Orinoco á mil quatrocientas, ó mil quinientas varas, y comienza á dividirse en el Laberinto de Bocas por donde desagua en la Mar. Que en el siglo pasado quemaron los Franceses dicha ciudad, y sus vecinos cerciorados de no haber otro terreno mas apropósito para fortificarse, y cerrar el Orinoco, la volvieron á reedificar. Que aunque en el año de mil setecientos quarenta la quemaron los Ingleses; ni los vecinos, ni el Ingeniero Don Antonio Jordan ni el Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, tubieron por acertado variar de terreno, y si el volver á establecer la nueva Guayana, poner en aquel paraje toda la fuerza, como único, y preciso que asegura el Orinoco. Que de este mismo dictámen fueron el Ingeniero Don Gaspar de Lara, y el Brigadier Don Diego Tabares, no obstante que como sus antecesores, vino con el particular encargo de fortificar la Angostura. Que el Excelentísimo Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava Virrey de Santa Fé, en virtud de Reales disposiciones aprobó el dictámen de **D** Tabares, y su antecesor Espinosa; y mandó se pussiesen en el Presidio todas las fuerzas conducentes á la seguridad del Orinoco. Que en el día se halla dicho Presidio suficientemente fortificado para resistir que los extrangeros ilícitos tratantes, y los Caribes sus aliados internen al Orinoco, hagan desembarco, y hostilizen estas Provincias, como lo executaron hasta el año de mil setecientos quarenta y siete, que Tabares recompuso la ruina que en el de quarenta executaron los Ingleses, y aumentó la Guarnicion, y vecindario; pero que se halla indefenso para resistir á los enemigos de la **E** Real Corona, que quieran situarse en él, ó volverle á destrozár, tanto por la falta de correspondientes fortificaciones como por la de suficiente Guarnicion y vecindario que puedan defender las que hay, ó las que se construyesen. Que las campañas orientales y occidentales á la Angostura se inundan, y carecen de Maderas, Yervas, Leña, y terrazgos. Que el terreno que forina la Angostura, es una estrecha cordillera de bajos, y continuos cerros, nada apropósito para establecer Poblacion y mui difícil, y costoso el fortificarlo por lo nada que por si se defiende. Que la transmigracion de

requested His Majesty in my representation of the 27th August, 1761.

That the fort of Limones be abandoned, and a launch be kept at the fortress, as represented to His Majesty by the Marquis de San Phelipe, and if the Angostura is to be fortified, that it be so with only the battery which was proposed by the Governor Don Juan de la Tornera, and shown by Fig. 9 of the map.

That the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers and of the Observant Fathers of Piritu be assisted on the terms that I have submitted to His Majesty. To these six points and the corresponding Chapters I will limit this Third Part.

\* \* \* \*

Chapter III.—*That the town be preserved, and by all possible means the townsmen be doubled.*

1. I have shown likewise, in Parts I and II, that those who discovered the Orinoco founded Guayana in front of the Island of Faxardo, near the banks of the Caroni River, as shown in the map. That, having been burnt by the Dutch, the natives, despising the Angostura, and being already acquainted with the Orinoco, founded the city of Santo Thomé de Guayana, 8 leagues below said Caroni River, where for the second time the breadth of the Orinoco is reduced to from 1,400 to 1,500 yards, and begins to be divided into a labyrinth of mouths, through which it empties into the sea. That in the last century the French set fire to the city, and the residents being certain that there was no other ground more adequate for a fortification and for closing the Orinoco, rebuilt it, and although in the year 1740 it was burnt by the English, neither the residents nor the Engineer Don Antonio Jordau, nor the Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, thought proper to change the place, and reconstruct again the new Guayana, concentrating all the strength there, as the only point fit to secure the Orinoco.

That this was also the opinion of the Engineer Don Gaspar de Lara and Brigadier Don Diego Tabares, notwithstanding that the latter had come, like his predecessors, with particular directions to fortify the Angostura. That his Excellency Don Sebastian de Eslava, Viceroy of Santa Fé, in virtue of Royal directions, approved the Report of Tabares and his predecessor, Espinosa, and ordered all the forces in charge of the safety of the Orinoco to be located at the fortress. To-day it is now sufficiently fortified to prevent the foreigners' illicit trade and the entrance of the Caribs, their allies, in the Orinoco, and their landing and hostile demonstrations against these Provinces, as they did before until the year 1747, when Tabares repaired the damage done by the English in 1740, and increased the garrison and the neighbourhood; but that it is unable to resist the enemies of the Royal Crown who may come to hold it or to destroy it again. For want of adequate fortifications and sufficient garrison and residents to defend those that they have already, or those that may be constructed. That the eastern and western lands around Angostura are inundated, and have no timber, kindling-wood, pasture, or farming grounds. That the Angostura stands on a narrow strip of land of low and continuous hills, in no way fit for the establishment of a settlement, and very difficult and costly to fortify, as it has no natural defences.

That the transfer of the residents of Guayana will

los Guayanos, los pondrá en una misérrima pobreza por el indispensable abandono de las haciendas y casas que poseen. Que no es posible, que puedan subsistir en la Angostura por la falta de viveres, á ménos de que no los mantenga el Real Erario á quien sera mui gravoso este anual crecido gasto. Que no es practicable, que á aquella Guarnicion se agreguen las Escoltas de los Jesuitas de Orinoco, y Dominicos de Varinas; ni que por destacamento marchen los cinquenta y dos hombres, y demas que residuen de la Guarnicion de Araya: y mucho ménos de pié fijo con sus familias. Que la desierta Gobernacion de Cumaná, no puede proveer de gente á la numerosa Guarnicion de la Angostura en donde para relevar los Destacamentos de los Jesuitas, Dominicos de Varinas, Capuchinos Cathalanes, Observantes de Piritu, Isla de la Trinidad, y el del Presidio, son necesarios quinientos hombres, ó se han de mantener de pié fijo en sus respectivos destinos, como aora se hallan. Que por mucho que se fortifique la Angostura, no puede evitar el desembarco, é internacion en las Provincias de Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Varinas, y Santa Fé, si se perdiese el Presidio, ni que á este bajen los naturales de dichas Provincias por el camino Real que se manifiesta en el Mapa ó por los demas que abran en aquellas desiertas Campañas. Que por mucho que se fortifique la Angostura, no puede defender el Presidio de Guayana; y que perdido este, tampoco se puede defender la misma Angostura, por mui fortificada que esté, ó mucha Guarnicion que contenga, ni evitar, que los extrangeros se hagan dueños de ella, del Orinoco, dilatada Provincia de Guayana, y disfruten las de Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Varinas, Santa Fé, Popayan, y Quito.

2. Y aora hecho cargo de las propuestas, é inegables ocurrencias; y siguiendo el experimentado dictámen de los fundadores del Presidio de Santo Thomé, el del Ingeniero Faxardo, y demás que siguieron hasta la aprobacion del Excelentísimo Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava: y en vista de lo que la misma experiencia ha demostrado: Rendidamente suplico á Su Magestad se digne mandar, que de ningun modo se transfiera la ciudad al sitio de la Angostura por ser enteramente contrario á su Soberano Real servicio, y á la seguridad de estos sus tan bastos Dominios; é igualmente suplico á Su Real Benignidad, se digne mandar, que en la ciudad, y Presidio de Guayana, por quantos medios sean posibles, se aumente su vecindario hasta en número de doscientos vecinos para que estos alistados en dos ó tres compañías de Milicianos, auxilien la Guarnicion, y manejen la Artilleria, en cuyo exercicio deberán ser instruidos, y disciplinados con mui particular cuidado, y como que en él pueden ser utiles; cuyo aumento de vecindario no será difícil, si su Real Piedad concediese algunas exempciones ó privilegios á los que allí se situasen, y mantubiesen; bien entendido, que lo que no podrá lograrse de golpe y en poco tiempo pues lo impossibilita la falta de viveres, y casas donde alojarse, será fácil en el termino de tres ó quatro años mediante una buena diligencia, y correspondientes providencias para auxiliar á los que de nuevo se avecindasen; y para que los oy existentes cultiven, y aumenten sus Haciendas y Labranzas; y en las Misiones ya bien educadas, y que gozan de fértiles terrazgos, y nueva fundacion de Españoles de San Antonio de Upata

[696—3]

reduce them to a miserable condition of poverty, on account of the necessary abandonment of the homes and plantations which they possess. That they cannot subsist in Angostura for want of supplies, unless they are supported at the expense of the Royal Treasury, which will involve a very serious annual outlay. That it is not practicable to add to that garrison the escorts of the Jesuits of the Orinoco and Dominicans of Barinas, nor to detach fifty-two men and more from the remnants of the garrison of Araya, and still less to keep them permanently there with their families. That the desert Province of Cumana cannot furnish the necessary men for the numerous garrison of the Angostura, where, in order to relieve the detachments of the Jesuits, Dominicans of Barinas, Catalan Capuchins, Observants of Piritu, the Island of Trinidad, and the fortress, 500 men are necessary, and must be kept as a standing garrison in their corresponding posts, as they are now.

That no matter how much the Angostura be fortified, it will be impossible to avoid the landing of foreigners and their entrance in the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas and Santa Fé, if the fortress of Guayana be lost, nor is it feasible that the natives of these provinces reach the said fort, by the way of the Camino Real shown in the map, or through other roads to be opened in those deserts. That no matter how much the Angostura be fortified, it cannot defend the fortress of Guayana, nor, after the loss of the said fort, defend itself, no matter how well it be fortified and how strong the garrison which it contains may be, nor prevent the foreigners from becoming masters of the place, of the Orinoco and of the extensive Province of Guayana, and drawing the revenues of Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fé, Popayan, and Quito.

2. Bearing in mind all these circumstances and undeniable facts, and following the expert opinion of the founders of the fortress of Santo Thomé, of the Engineer Faxardo, and of the rest, up to the approval of his Excellency, Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava, and in view of what has been demonstrated by experience, I crave most humbly that His Majesty may deign to order that in no event the transfer of the town to the Angostura be attempted, as entirely contrary to the interest of his Royal service and the safety of these his vast dominions; and I crave likewise that His Majesty may order that the townsmen of the town and fortress of Guayana may be increased by all possible means to the number of 200, so that they may be enlisted, in two or three militia companies, rendering assistance to the garrison and managing the artillery, in which exercise they must be trained and well disciplined, with very especial care, as they may be of great service; the increase of townsmen will not be difficult if His Majesty grants some exemptions or privileges to those going to settle and to stay there it being well understood that this object cannot be attained in a short time, on account of the want of victuals and houses in which to lodge, but it will be easy, within three or four years longer, with zeal and the corresponding measures for the help of the new settlers, and for the help of those now existing so that they may cultivate and increase their estates and farms; and if in the Missions already well trained, and enjoying good farming lands, and in the new Spanish foundation of San Antonio de Upata the same care may be had. By this increase of the neighbourhood by that of the garrison which I

O



- A haya igual cuidado; con cuyo aumento de vecindario, el de la Guarnicion que diré, y las correspondientes fortificaciones que dejo expuestas, el Orinoco le tendrá Su Magestad segurissimo; los extrangeros se mirarán mui bien para poner en práctica sus proyectos; no emprenderán fortificar la Angostura sin tomar el Presidio; el corto ilícito comercio que hacen se podrá evitar con grandísima facilidad; se excusarán los inútiles crecidos gastos, que por precisos, y sin conocimiento han noticiado á Su Magestad; y los vecinos de la Guayana no experimentarán el quebranto de perder sus Haciendas, y casas en la Ciudad, hacerlas de nuevo en la Angostura, y sufrir su dudosa intemperie (que esta es positiva aun en los terrenos mas apropósito, y principios de su abertura y desmonte) de cuya intemperie, tal vez resultará el aniquilarse aquellos pocos vecinos, ó que estrechados de las enfermedades, y necesidades desamparen aquel sitio, y la Guayana quede despoblada, y cueste tanto mas trabaja, caudales y tiempo en congregar otro igual número de vecinos al que existe, y demás que se consideran precisos; que se hagan á aquel temperamento, y establezcan nuevas Haciendas y Labranzas, sin las quales, ni allí, ni en la Angostura puede haber poblacion.

C (Dejanse de copiar les capítulos 4 y 5.)

Capítulo Sexto.—*Que se auxilien las Misiones de Capuchinos Cathalanes, y Observantes de Piritu, como lo tengo suplicado á Su Magestad de resultas de mi Visita General.*

1. Déjo evidenciado en el Capítulo Tercero de la Primera Parte, que aunque los Cuerpos de Mission que evangelizan en las Provincias de Cumaná y Barcelona han estado siempre sin correspondiente número de Misioneros, faltos de efectivas limosnas, para subsistir, de Ornamentos, Imágenes, y campanas para las nuevas reducciones, y suficiente escolta para contenerlas y adelantarlas; á ellos se debe la pacificacion de tan bastas Provincias, el establecimiento de sesenta y nueve Pueblos que contienen de veinte y seis á veinte y siete mil Yndios; la villa de Aragua, Poblaciones del Pao, Rio Caribes, y Carupano de Españoles, y demas conocidos aumentos allí expuestos; y que sin los Cuerpos de Mission hubieran sido inútiles las Providencias de los Gobernadores para el logrado fin. En el capítulo octavo dejo justificado, que á la Mission de Capuchinos Cathalanes que evangeliza en la Provincia de Guayana, se debe el establecimiento de veinte y quatro Pueblos, aunque al presente no existen mas que diez y seis; el que el Presidio se haya formalizado, y puesto en el estado que tiene al que no pudiera haber llegado, ni subsistir sin la expresada Mission, y ultimamente el establecimiento de la Poblacion de Españoles nombrada San Antonio de Hupata. De resultas de mi Visita General representé á Su Magestad el estado de estos Cuerpos de Mission, necesidades que padecen, abusos introducidos por lo incobrable de sus asignadas limosnas; ser preciso mayor número de Misioneros, Ornamentos, Imágenes, y Campanas para las nuevas reducciones; y suficientes escoltas para contener estas, y establecer otras; lo mucho que convendría á su real Servicio, á la seguridad de estos sus bastos Dominios, y beneficio espiritual de tantos dichos Cuerpos de Mision; y que estos internasen la extensísima Provincia de Guayana, coma consta de las copias de las Consultas, y demás documentos allí citados, que

will state, and the needful fortifications which I have shown, His Majesty will hold the Orinoco with the utmost security; the foreigners will stop before putting into practice their project, and will not attempt to take and fortify Angostura without taking the fortress; their small illicit commerce will be very easily stopped; the useless and excessive expenditure which, through ignorance, has been reported to His Majesty as necessary, will be avoided, and the residents of Guayana will be spared the infliction of the loss of their plantations and their homes in the town, and of building them anew in Angostura, and of suffering its probable inclemency (which is certain even in the most favourable grounds when first opened up and cleared), and from this inclemency those few settlers may possibly perish or give up the place under the affliction of sickness and necessities, and Guayana may be depopulated, costing as much again in labour, money, and time to collect a like number of townsmen as now exist, and those who are thought necessary, in order to have them accustomed to the climate, and in condition to undertake new plantations and farms, without which no population can exist there or in Angostura.

\* \* \* \*

Chapter VI.—*That the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers and of the Observants of Piritu be assisted, as I have requested before, in consequence of my general visit.*

1. I have shown in Chapter III of Part I that although the bodies of Missions spreading the Gospel through the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona have been always in want of more missionaries to make up their adequate numbers, and deprived of sufficient alms for their subsistence and ornaments, images, and bells for their church in their new settlements, without sufficient escorts to keep and improve them, the pacification of these vast provinces is due to them and the establishment of sixty-nine villages, containing from 26,000 to 27,000 Indians, among them the Villa of Aragua, the settlements of Pao, Rio Caribe, and Carupano, of the Spaniards, besides other well-known improvements therein explained, and that without these bodies of missionaries all the measures of the Governors on the subject would have been useless.

In Chapter VIII I have explained that to the Mission of the Catalonian Capuchins, spreading the Gospel in the Province of Guayana, is due the establishment of twenty-four villages, although only sixteen are now in existence. The fortress of Guayana has been formed and brought up to its present condition, which it could never have attained, nor could it even have existed, without the help of the Missions, and lately the establishment of San Antonio de Upata is due to the said Mission. In consequence of my general visit, I submitted to His Majesty the condition of these missionary bodies, their wants, and the abuses introduced through the alms assigned them being unobtainable, the necessity of more missionaries, as well as ornaments, images, and bells for the new settlements, and sufficient escorts for the protection of those established already and the future settlements. The great advantage to the Royal service, the safety of those extensive dominions, and the spiritual benefit of so many poor Indians spread through out them, from the support of these bodies



corren al fóllo doscientos quarenta y siete de los autos que acompañan la presente.

2. Y oy, con la mas sumisa veneracion, represento á Su Magestad, convendrá al Servicio de Dios, al de Su Real Soberania, seguridad de estas Provincias, y aumento de nuestra Santa Religion se faciliten á los Capuchinos Cathalanes efectivas limosnas, mayor número de Missioneros, y suficiente Escolta: Que esto mismo se execute con los de Observantes de Piritu; que la mayor parte de este Cuerpo de Mission passe el Orinoco (como esta mandado) y se establezca en la Provincia de Guayana en los términos expuestos en dichas Consultas: Que en la misma Provincia y á proporcionadas distancias, se situen otros dos ó tres Cuerpos de Mission pues todos caben, y tienen bastante que trabajar: Y que los quatro ó cinco que allí se estableciesen se internen desde las Orillas de Orinoco caminando siempre al sur como lo executan los Capuchinos Cathalanes, con lo que se logrará ocupar las campañas que hacen espaldas á las Colonias de Esquivo que poseen los Holandeses, y las de la Cayana que ocupan los Franceses. Se conocerá la extensísima Provincia de Guayana: se pacificará la infinidad de yndios que la habitan. Se sabrá si los Portugueses se internan en ella; y vienen caminando al Norte. Y así como en las Provincias de Cumaná, Barcelona y Carácas se han establecido Poblaciones de Españoles, sin el menor costo de la Real Hacienda ni violencia de los Pobladores; así tambien se formarán en la de Guayana, á que ya se ha dado principio con la de San Antonio de Hupata; y no estando pacificado los Indios, y capaces de auxiliar á los Españoles en sus labores, no es assequible el establecer Poblaciones de estos; y mucho ménos en parages tan remotos, y desiertos, como lo han demostrado repetidos exemplares en la América, y ultimamente en la misma Provincia de Guayana, con las Ciudades Real Corona, Ciudad Real, y San Fernando, en las que, sin embargo de las inmensas sumas que se han expendido para su establecimiento, solo se han logrado inquietudes y desgracias, y nunca llegaron á el estado de la Poblacion de San Antonio de Upata que no ha causado el menor costo á la Real Hacienda, como queda evidenciado desde el número noventa y tres á ciento doce del capítulo nueve de la Primera Parte.

3. En la representacion de veinte y siete de Agosto de mil setecientos sesenta y uno, propuse á Su Magestad, que con el aumento de los setenta y tres hombres en el Presidio de Guayana se podrian escoltar las Misiones de Capuchinos Cathalanes, y observantes de Piritu. Y en el anterior Capítulo, dejo hecho constante, que fortificando el Cerro del Padrastro, como suplico á Su Magestad, los setenta y tres hombres se hacen precisos en aquella Guarnicion para cubrir sus fortificaciones, y demás occurrencias de la Plaza, debiendose dar á las Misiones la correspondiente separada Escolta.

4. Y aora, con la mas reverente sumision, hago presente á Su Magestad, convendrá señalar á los Capuchinos Cathalanes veinte ó veinte y quatro Plazas: que estas estén de pié fijo en las Misiones: que sean de gente de acaballo pues la infanteria no es tan útil respecto de haber de estar ociosa, y sin accion repartida por los Pueblos; lo que no sucede á los de acaballo que diariamente se exercitan en correr la Campaña con cuyas

of Missions and their progress, going farther inland through the extensive Province of Guayana, as shown by the copies of said Consultas and other documents therein quoted at folio 247 of the proceedings accompanying the present Report.

2. And to-day I most humbly submit to His Majesty that it will conduce to the service of God and of His Majesty, to the security of these provinces and the increase of our holy religion, if the Catalanian Capuchins are granted effective alms, more missionaries, and a sufficient escort; that the same protection be extended to the Observants of Piritu, and that the greater part of this body of missionaries go over to the Orinoco (as it has been ordered) and be established in the Province of Guayana, within the terms expressed in the said Consultas; that in the same Province of Guayana, at corresponding distances, two or three other bodies of Missions be established, for they are all wanted, and have sufficient work to do; and that the four or five bodies to be established there should go farther inland from the banks of the Orinoco to the south, as should be done by the Catalanian Capuchins, thus succeeding in occupying the countries in the rear of the Colonies of Essequibo, belonging to the Dutch, and those of Cayenne, occupied by the French. The extensive Province of Guayana will be known, the infinite number of Indian inhabitants will be pacified, and it will be ascertained whether the Portuguese are penetrating into it and coming to the north. And as the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, and Carácas have been increased by additional Spanish settlements without the least cost to the Royal Treasury or violence to the settlers, in the same way those of Guayana, which have been already commenced, with that of San Antonio de Upata, may be settled. But if the Indians are not pacified, or are incapable of helping the Spaniards in their labours, it will not be possible to establish any settlements of the latter, and still less in such remote countries, as has been demonstrated by repeated instances in America, and lately in the Province of Guayana itself in the cases of the towns Real Corona, Ciudad Real, and San Fernando, in which, notwithstanding the immense amounts already expended for their establishment, the only results obtained have been troubles and misfortunes, and they never reached the condition of the settlement of San Antonio de Upata, which has cost nothing to the Royal Treasury, as shown by Nos. 93 to 112, Chapter IX, Part I.

3. In my representation of the 27th August, 1761, I suggested to His Majesty that by an increase of seventy-three men to the fortress of Guayana the Missions of the Catalanian Capuchins and the Observants of Piritu might have escorts. In the previous Chapter I have shown that by fortifying the Padrastro Hill, as I request His Majesty to do, the seventy-three men are necessary for that garrison, so as to cover the posts of the fortifications and other contingencies of the fortress, so that the separate corresponding escort may be provided for the Missions.

4. And now I most reverently suggest to His Majesty to allow the Catalanian Capuchins twenty or twenty-four men as a standing escort of the Mission; that they must be horsemen, as infantry is not so useful, and has to be idle and inactive, being distributed in the villages, which is not the case with horsemen, who may go every day around the country, and, besides becoming familiar with the different places,

- A** correrías además de descubrirla, y hacerse prácticos de ella ponen en temor á los Indios Poblados, y no Poblados, y se evitan muchas de sus inquietudes para lo que la Escolta de acaballo está mas pronta, y ocurre á todas partes lo que no puede verificarse con la Infantería. Convendrá así mismo, que los individuos de dicha Escolta sean casados, y mantengan allí sus familias, como la que custodia las Misiones de los Jesuitas, único modo de evitar los desórdenes, é inquietudes que á los Indios causan los soldados que del Presidio se destacan á los Pueblos en donde olvidan la profesion y subordinacion Militar, y son en ellos perjudiciales. Lograse tambien, que las familias de los casados se amoran á las Campañas y terrazgos donde se crían, y de aquí resultan tambien Poblaciones, con otras conveniencias que omito; sin que para conseguir las sean necesarios Ganaderos pues á los Indios todo género de gentes los contiene y sujeta.

- B** Militar, y son en ellos perjudiciales. Lograse tambien, que las familias de los casados se amoran á las Campañas y terrazgos donde se crían, y de aquí resultan tambien Poblaciones, con otras conveniencias que omito; sin que para conseguir las sean necesarios Ganaderos pues á los Indios todo género de gentes los contiene y sujeta.
- C** 5. En los mismos términos soy de sentir, se les facilite á los Observantes de Piritu doce hombres por aora é interin no se internan, y establezcan mas Pueblos de los tres que ya mantienen en dicha Provincia, y proporcionalmente á los demás Cuerpos de Mision que en ella entrasen á evangelizar con lo que dentro de veinte ó veinte y cinco años, y sin excesivo gravámen del Erario logrará Su Magestad tener un Reyno que se halla desconocido en aquella extensísima Provincia, y tantos miserables, y dóciles Indios que la habitan reducidos al gremio de nuestra Santa Religion poblados en vida civil, útiles para auxiliar á los Españoles que allí se estableciesen para traficar y guardar la misma Provincia, y para con sus tributos resarcir al Real Erario los Caudales que aora se expendiesen en poblarlos y educarlos: único mejor medio que siempre se ha tenido por conveniente para conquistar, y poblar la América especialmente en los parages en donde no llama el interés de las Misiones, ó del comercio, y el que Su Magestad previene en repetidas Leyes para el buen gobierno, pacificacion de los Indios y nuevos descubrimientos.

- D** 6. Esto es, Señor Excelentísimo, quanto, en contestacion del grave asunto que se trata, como buen vasallo, y en descargo de mi conciencia, me parece deber representar á Su Magestad, quedando responsable á Su Real Benignidad de la verdad de todo lo expuesto. Y á Vuecencia suplico se digne
- E** (si lo considerase preciso) ponerlo en su Real Noticia. E igualmente espero me dispense Vuecencia lo dilatado de esta Consulta, pues la necesidad de satisfacer con justificacion á los varios puntos que contiene la Real orden no me ha permitido ser mas conciso.

Dios guarde la vida de Vuecencia felices dilatados años, como deseo.

Excelentísimo Señor, besa la mano de V.E. su mayor y rendido servidor,

JOSEPH DIGUJA.  
(Hay una rubrica.)

*Cumaná y Diciembre 15 de 1763.*

Excelentísimo Señor Baylio Fray Don  
Julian de Arriaga

keep the Indians in fear, whether settled or not, and many of their disturbances are prevented, for the horse escort is more ready, and can hurry to all parts, which is not the case with infantry. It will be advisable that the persons of said escort be married men, and keep their families there, as is the case with the escort of the Missions of the Jesuits, as that will be the only way to avoid disorders and apprehensions caused to the Indians by soldiers from the fortress detached to the villages, where they forget the duties of their profession, the military subordination and become prejudicial therein. The families of the married men become attached to the places where they are brought up, and the result is beneficial to the settlements, without need of dragoons, as the Indians are very easily controlled.

5. I am likewise of the opinion that the Observants of Piritu ought to be allowed twelve men at present, while they do not go farther inland to establish other settlements, besides the three which they keep in the said province, and proportionally to the other missionary bodies who may go there to spread the Gospel, so that within twenty or twenty-five years, without any excessive cost to the Royal Treasury, His Majesty may have a kingdom now unknown in that extensive province, while so many miserable and docile Indians will be reduced and brought to the bosom of our holy religion, settled in social life, and useful for the help of the Spaniards, who may establish any trade there, protecting the same province and reimbursing the Royal Treasury for the outlays and moneys now expended for their settlement and education, the only proper way considered adequate for the conquest and population of America, especially those countries, where the allurements of mines and the interest of commerce do not attract visitors, and prescribed by repeated laws of His Majesty for the good government and pacification of the Indians and the newly-discovered regions.

6. This is, most excellent Sir, what I consider my duty to represent to His Majesty in answer to the serious matters involved, as a good vassal, and in the discharge of my conscience, being responsible to his Royal kindness for the truth of everything that I have stated. And I beg your Excellency (if it is necessary) to be pleased to lay it before his Royal notice, and I likewise ask to be excused for the length of this communication, my desire to fully explain the various points embraced in the Royal Order not permitting more conciseness.

May God preserve the life of your Excellency for many happy years, as I desire.

Most Excellent Sir, I kiss the hand of your Excellency, your most obedient servant.

(Signed) JOSEPH DIGUJA.  
(Rubric.)

*Cumaná, December 15, 1763.*

To the Most Excellent Señor Don Julian  
de Arriaga, Knight of Malta.

## II.

## BOOK OF NOTES.

*Book of Notes explaining the General Map of the Government of Cumaná sent to His Majesty by the Governor Don José Diguja.*

*Gobierno de Cumaná.—Nota 1ª.**Government of Cumaná.—Note 1.*

DASE una noticia general del Gobierno de Cumaná: Provincias que le componen, su Temperamento: Lugar de residencia del Gobernador: Tribunales á que esta subordinado el mismo Gobierno su Diocesano: Tribunal de Cruzada: el de la Inquisicion: Gobiernos confinantes: y se citan otras Notas que con esta manifiestan brevemente lo que es la Governazion.

El Gobierno de Cumaná es uno de los de mayor extension de quantos provee el Rey Nuestro Señor en estos sus Reales Dominios, y la mas Oriental de los Reynos de Santa Fe, y Perú.

Contiene tres Provincias que son: la de la nueva Andalucia, ó Cumaná cuya Capital es la Ciudad de Santa Ynes de Cumaná: la de nueva Barcelona, su Capital la Ciudad de este nombre: y la de Guayana su Capital el Presidio de Santo Thome de la Guayana. Esta, aunque la mayor está totalmente despoblada, y poco menos sucede á las dos primeras respecto de su extension. En estas tres Provincias hay variedad de terrenos, elevadas, y dilatadas Serranias, grandes llanos, caudalosos Rios, especialmente el grande Orinoco, que pasa por el centro de toda la Governacion, y otros demenor consideracion, sin que por esto se degen de hacer infructiferos muchos Payses que penden solo de las aguas llovederas.

La mayor altura á que se hallan situadas estas Provincias es la del Cavo de tres Puntas, en la Costa de Paria, que está á los 10 grados, 20 minutos latitud septentrional, y 313 grados 30 minutos longitud este, pero contodo se goza de un temperamento benigno, y sin los excesivos calores, que en otros Payses de igual altura, que tambien se experimentarían en este, á no estar tan expuesto á las Brisas, que son los vientos del Nordeste á el Leste, y generales desde principios de Noviembre á principios ó mediado de Junio en cuos meses no llueve sino es mui rara vez. Desde principios á mediado de Junio corren los vientos con variedad, y á Brisas, y Noruestes, ó Sures, con estos dos ultimos son frecuentes las Aguas, y se experimentan mayores calores pero no tan excesivos como los de Cartagena y su Provincia. A estos meses de frecuentes aguas, llaman en el Pays Ymbierno, y no obstante que son los de mayor calor, y menos sanos.

El Gobernador reside siempre en la Ciudad de Santa Ynes de Cumaná Capital de dichas tres Provincias. Nominase Gobernador y Capitan-General de ellas: exerce el vice-Patronato, y la Superintendencia de Real Hacienda, y ramo de Cruzada. La graduacion que los provistos, en este Gobierno regularmente han obtenido de algun tiempo á esta parte, ha sido de Coroneles, ó Brigadiers; aunque una, u otra vez, se há conferido á Tenientes Coroneles.

Por la via reserva se reciben las Reales ordenes de S.M. por mano de su Secretario del Despacho universal de Indias, como en todo el resto de la America, y por la misma dirige este Gobierno las Representaciones y Negocios, que por la expresada via corresponden.

[696—3]

A GENERAL notice is given of the Government of Cumaná, the provinces composing the same, the climate, the place of residence of the Governor, the Tribunals to which the same Government is subordinated, its Diocesan Prelate, the Tribunal of Crusades, that of the Inquisition, the neighbouring Governments, and other notes showing briefly what this Government is.

Brit. Mus. King's MSS., p. 221.

The Government of Cumaná is one of the more extensive among those within the dominions of the King our Lord in these his Royal possessions, and lies more to the eastward of the two Kingdoms of Santa Fé and Peru.

It contains three provinces, namely, that of New Andalusia, or Cumaná, the capital of which is Santa Inez de Cumaná; that of New Barcelona, the capital of which bears this name, and that of Guayana, the capital of which is the fortress of Santo Thomé de la Guayana. This, although the largest, is totally unpopulated and the same thing may almost be said of the other two, considering their extent. In these three provinces there is a variety of lands, elevated and extensive sierras, spacious plains, important rivers, especially the great Orinoco, that runs through the centre of the Government, and others of less importance, but, nevertheless, many districts are left unproductive, being entirely dependent upon rain-water.

The greatest height found within these provinces is the Cape of Three Points, on the coast of Paria, which is at 10° 20' north latitude and 313° and 30' west longitude; but withal, the climate is mild, free from the excessive heat of other countries of similar situation, which might also be experienced in this country if it were not exposed to the "Brisas," i.e., winds from N.E. to E., prevalent from the beginning of November to the beginning or middle of June, and during those months there is hardly any rain. From beginning to the middle of June the winds are variable, "Brisas" and N.W. or S. winds, the two last accompanied by frequent showers and greater heat, but not as excessive as that of Cartagena and the province of that name. The months of frequent rains are called winter in this country, in spite of being warmer and less healthy.

The Governor always resides in the city of Santa Inez de Cumaná, the capital of the said three provinces. He is named Governor and Captain-General of them, and exercises the Vice-Patronage (in ecclesiastical vacancies), the Superintendence of the Royal Treasury and of the branch of the Crusade. The rank which the men appointed for this Government have generally obtained has been for some time past that of Colonel or Brigadier, although sometimes Lieutenant-Colonels have been appointed.

By the reserved way the Royal Orders of His Majesty are received from the Secretary of the Universal Despatch of the Indies, as in all the rest of America, and through the same this Government addresses its representations and affairs that are sent by that way.

P

- A En la misma conformidad, que en lo restante de la America se reciben las Reales Cédulas de S.M. por su supremo consejo de Indias, á donde remite este Gobierno las Consultas y negocios, que corresponden á esta via : pero con la circunstancia de que siendo esta Governacion tierra firme con los Reynos de Santa Fee, y Perú, y subordinada al Virreynato del primero, se reciben dichos Reales Despachos por la Secretaria de nueva España, por la qual, y no por la del Perú, dirige á S.M. este Gobierno las expresadas Consultas: No encontrándose en estos Archivos la Real Disposicion, que así lo prevenga, ignorándose totalmente qual fué el motivo, ó principio de esta practica.

B En lo Guvernativo esta subordinado al Virrey de Santa Fee, con cuya Capital hay tan poca correspondencia que solo de año á año se reciben Pliegos de ella por mano de un oficial, que del Presidio de Guayana pasa á traer los caudales del situado consignado en aquellas Reales Cajas para la paga de su Guarnicion. Dicho ofizial conduce los Pliegos de este Gobierno el de la Ysla Trinidad, y el de la Margarita, igualmente subordinados al mismo Virrey, quien al regreso de dicho ofizial envia sus respuestas á los expresados tres Gubernadores, como unica ocasion que se presenta, la que dicha Guarnicion costea con mil pesos que abona al oficial, y se descuentan de sus propios sueldos en prorratio al tiempo de hacerse la paga annual á cada individuo de la Guarnicion.

C Por lo respectivo á las Provincias de Cumaná, y Barzelona, y lo en ellas contencioso está subordinado á la Real Audiencia y Chancilleria de Santo Domingo en la Ysla Española.

Igualmente lo está á la Real Audiencia y Chancilleria de Santa Fee en todo lo contencioso á la Provincia de Guayana.

D Al Virrey de Mexico annualmente se le dá quenta del producto del Ramo de Bulas de la Santa Cruzada, quien dispone de este Caudal revajando su importe de la mayor cantidad que se remite de aquellas Reales Cajas á estas para la paga de la Guarnicion del Castillo de Araya.

Las Cajas Reales y todo lo perteneciente á la Real Hacienda en este Gobierno, esta subordinado al Contador mayor de Caracas, quien toma las quentas á estos Oficiales Reales y demas Ministros del Distrito.

E El Diocesano de todo este Gobierno el dela Margarita y Trinidad, es el Obispo de Puertorrico, quien por Reales disposiciones y en atencion á la mucha distancia que media nombra un Vicario Superintendente de todos estos Anexos, que reside en la capital de Cumaná con este Prelado es muy remota y casual la correspondencia, por lo que para el mas pronto despacho de los negocios de los mismos Anexos, subdelega ciertas facultades en el expresado Vicario Superintendente, siendo una de ellas la de proveer los beneficios Ecclesiasticos que vacan : Hacense ante este Ministro las Oposiciones y á su nominacion presenta el Gobernador en cuyo distrito esta el Beneficio vaco, todo segun las Reales Disposiciones, y con el mismo arreglo se despacha con dicho Vicario todo lo perteneciente al Real Patronato.

F Reside en la Ciudad de Cumaná un Comisario particular subdelegado del de Puertorrico, y este del Comisario general de Cruzada en conformidad de las ultimas Reales Disposiciones para la Administracion, y recaudacion de este Ramo, á las quales arreglado exerce dicho Comisario particular, sus facultades, y dá sus correspondientes provi-

In the same way in which the rest of America receives the Royal Cédulas of His Majesty, through his Supreme Council of the Indies, to which this Government sends its Consultas and business sent by this way, but with the modifications that this Government, being on the mainland, as those of the Kingdoms of Santa Fé and Peru, and subordinated to the Vice-royalty of the former, the said Royal despatches are received by the Secretariat of New Spain, by which, and not by that of Peru, His Majesty addresses his above-mentioned Consultas to this Government, but no Royal Order to this effect is found in these archives and the cause or beginning of this practice is quite unknown.

In Government affairs it is subordinated to the Viceroy of Santa Fé; the correspondence with that capital is so very rare that only from year to year despatches are received by the hands of an officer of the fortress of Guayana who goes to fetch funds assigned at the Royal Treasury of that capital for the payment of the garrison. The officer takes the despatches of this Government, of the Island of Trinidad, and of Margarita, likewise subordinated to the Viceroy, who, on the return of said officer, sends his replies to the aforesaid three Governments, as the only occasion available; it costs the said garrison 1,000 dollars paid to the officer, and discounted from their own salaries, *pro rata* at the time of making the annual payment to each person of the garrison.

In regard to the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona, subjects of contention are subordinated to the Royal Audience and Chancery of Santo Domingo in the Island of Hispaniola.

All subjects of contention in the Province of Guayana are similarly subordinated to the Royal Audience and Chancery of Santa Fé.

To the Viceroy of Mexico an Annual Report is sent, giving an account of the Department of Bulls of the Holy Crusade. He disposes of this fund, after deducting the greater amount remitted from that Royal Treasury to meet the payments here of the garrison of the Castle of Araya.

The Royal Treasury with everything that appertains to it in this Government is subordinated to the Chief Accountant of Caracas, who receives the accounts of these Royal officers and the other Ministers of the district.

The Diocesan Prelate, in all the territory of this Government and the Islands of Margarita and Trinidad, is the Bishop of Porto Rico who, by Royal Order, and in consideration of the long distance intervening, appoints a Superintendent Vicar of all these annexed territories, who resides at the capital of Cumaná. The correspondence with this Prelate is very rare and casual, so that for the more speedy dispatch of the affairs of the same territories, certain powers are delegated by said Superintendent Vicar, one of them being to fill the ecclesiastical benefices that fall vacant. Any objections are laid before this Minister, and upon his nomination the Governor in whose district the vacant benefice is situated makes the presentation; all according to the Royal directions, and similarly everything connected with the Royal patronage is attended to by said Vicar.

There resides in the city of Cumaná a special Sub-Delegate Commissioner from the one in Porto Rico, who is the delegate of the Commissioner General of the Crusades, in conformity with the last Royal directions for the administration and collection of this branch, in conformity with which this particular Commissioner exercises his powers

dencias de acuerdo con el Gobernador como superintendente del mismo Ramo, que es en su distrito, y al fin de cada Predicacion dela Bula toma las cuentas del Tesorero principal, y con su aprobacion ó los reparos que en ellas encuentra, las remite al Gobernador, quien las pasa á los Oficiales Reales para su revision y ajuste y con lo que exponen las aprueba y manda hacer por el Tesorero la entrega delos alcanzes en las Cajas Reales.

El Tribunal del Santo Oficio de la Ciudad de Cartagena de Indias, tiene hasta ahora en esta Governacion dos Comisarios el uno que reside en la de Cumaná, y el otro en la de Barcelona, los quales segun sus facultades, e instrucciones entienden y conocen de las causas pertenecientes al Tribunal á quien dan quenta con los Autos que respectivamente forman.

Los confinantes Gobiernos son los dela: Islas dela Trinidad de Barlovento, la Margarita el de Caracás, y Provincia de Santa Fee, segun se manifiesta en el Mapa, y al sur de la Provincia de Guayana con los Dominios que el Rey Fidelisimo posee en el Brasil, pero muy incognitos todavia los terrenos, que median sin haver de ellos mas que tales quales noticias delas que no se puede formar recto juicio, de que se tratara en Nota particular de dicha Provincia, en que tambien se dará noticia delas Colonias Olandesas y Francesas que estan situadas al Leste de ella.

En el resumen general contenido en la Nota 12 y en el tratado de Comercio ilicito que comprende toda la 13, se aumentan las noticias de la presente y con ellas se hace brevemente y por mayor manifiesto, lo que es la Governacion de Cumaná, y en las demas que contiene este Quaderno se dán de ella muy individuales noticias.

*Provincia de Cumaná.—Nota 2ª.*

Contiene una general noticia dela Provincia de Cumaná: sus terrenos: fertilidad y esterilidad de sus serranias: temperamento en lo elevado de ellas: limites de la provincia: frutos de ella: total escasez de ella en carnes: abundancia de Pescados: Puertos dela Costa, y Golfo de Carriaco: salinas de ella: Rios principales, y Poblaciones que contiene la Provincia.

Haviendose dado en la Nota antecedente una sucinta general noticia del Gobierno de Cumaná para la mejor y mas pronta inteligencia del Mapa, parece conveniente seguir el mismo metodo en cada una delas Provincias que le componen con cuya anticipada diligencia se podrá despues unir en un perfecto conocimiento de quanto por menor se expresara de ellas, y sus Poblaciones.

La Provincia de Cumaná es toda ella de continuadas y elevadas Serranias: Comienzan estas desde la punta de Paria que hace voca á las llamadas de los Dragos en el Golfo triste, elevandose desde dicha Punta mas y mas por el Cereno (? Centro) de la Provincia, caminando, siempre del Este, al Oeste, y siguiendo la Costa hasta encontrar con las dela Provincia de Barcelona, que continuan por las Provincias de Caracas, Maracaybo, y Santa Marta, en donde tomando su curso al Sur internan por el nuevo Reyno de Granada, como mas bien se reconocera por un Mapo general de todas estas Provincias, que se queda travajando. Tiene asimismo llanos que median entre la Mesa de Guanipa, las vocas del Orinoco, su Rio, y el de Guara-piche, como se ve en el Mapa: pero totalmente desconocidos, é intraficables á causa de los muchos grandes Pantanos y Lagunas, que ocasionan las

and issues his decisions, in agreement with the Governor, as Superintendent of the same branch in this district, and at the end of each proclamation of the bull takes the accounts from the chief Treasurer, and with his approval or objections they are forwarded to the Governor, who forwards them to the Royal officers for revision and auditing, and after their report he approves the same, and orders the delivery by the Treasurer of the amount to the Royal coffers.

The Tribunal of the Holy Office of the city of Cartagena de Indias has at present two Commissioners here, one who resides at Cumaná and the other in Barcelona, who, according to their powers and instructions, hear and take cognizance of the causes belonging to the Tribunal, to which they render account, with the Reports they respectively draw up.

The neighbouring Governments are those of the Island of Trinidad to leeward, Margarita, Carácas, and the Province of Santa Fé, as shown in the map: and to the south, those of the Province of Guayana with the dominions possessed by the Most Faithful King in Brazil: but the intervening territory is still very little explored, nor is there more than scattered information about it, from which no just idea can be formed. This will be discussed in the Note devoted to the said province, in which an account will also be given of the Dutch and French Colonies to the east of it.

In the general summary contained in Note 12, and in the treatise on contraband trade which occupies all Note 13, the information given in the present one is supplemented, and it is shown thereby, both briefly and in detail, what the Government of Cumaná is; and the others contained in this Note Book give special details respecting it.

*Province of Cumaná.—Note 2.*

Contains a general notice of the Province of Cumaná: its lands, fertility, and barrenness of its ranges of hills; temperature in their upper regions; boundaries of the province; its products; total want of animal food therein; abundance of fish; ports of the coast and Gulf of Carriaco: its salt mines; and the principal rivers and settlements of the province.

A succinct general account of the Government of Cumaná having been given in the preceding note, it seems desirable, for the better and more ready understanding of the map, to follow the same method in each of the provinces which compose it, and this preparatory work will afterwards render it possible to attain a perfect knowledge of what will be shown in detail concerning them and their settlements.

The Province of Cumaná consists entirely of continuous and lofty ranges of hills: these begin from the Point of Paria, which forms one of the mouths called those of the Dragons, in the Golfo Triste, rising from the said point more and more through the centre of the province, running constantly from east to west, and following the coast until they meet those of the Province of Barcelona, which run on through the Provinces of Carácas, Maracaibo, and Santa Marta, where, bending to the south, they run inland through the New Kingdom of Granada, as will be more clearly seen by a general map of all these provinces, which is being drawn up. It has likewise plains which lie between the table-land of Guanipa, the mouths of the Orinoco, that river and the Guara-piche, as may be seen in the map; but they are totally unknown and impassable, owing to the



- A inundaciones de dichos Rios, y otros que salen de la Mesa de Guanipa.

Toda la espalda dela dicha Serrania que hace frente al Sur, es abundante de aguas corrientes y las llubias mas copiosas que á la parte del Norte. Los Valles de ella son fertiles y á proposito para todo genero de frutos que producen estos climas, especialmente para Cacao, pero se hallan desiertas todas estas tierras. La caída ó vertientes de las mismas serranias al sur abundan de yerbas aproposito para ganados detoda especie, sin que haya quien se aplique á su crianza, y solo tales quales reses delos Indios las disfrutan.

- B  
C Todo el frente dela Serrania que mira al Norte es sumamente esteril y escaso de aguas y á excepcion delas primeras caidas en lo mas elevado de ella no da yerba util para ningun ganado, si no es para cabras, las que aun hallan dificultad en romper por la infinidad y variedad de Espinos, que hacen intraticables estos terrenos. En las inmediaciones dela Costa la mayor parte delos terrenos son salitrosos é infructiferos, pero contodo no deja de haver algunos valles tendidos por ella, bien que faltos de aguas y mui mal sanos, que esto con la desidia y pobreza de los naturales hacen que esten poco cultibados.

En lo mas elevado y primeras caidas de la Serrania tanto al Norte como al Sur se experimenta un temperamento sano y frio, especialmente de noche, y aproposito para todo genero de legumbres Europeas, pero se carece de ellas por no haver quien las consumo, y por faltar quien las cultive, á excepcion de uno, ú otro Misionero, ó Europeo curido [curtido].

- D Los limites de la Provincia de Cumana por el Leste son: Las bocas de Orinoco: Rio Guarapiche, y punta de Paria. Cavo detres Puntas siguiendo la Costa de Araya, y Golfo de Carriaco, hasta llegar al Pueblo de Pozuelos á la Mesa de Guanipa de donde buelven á tirar al Leste, hasta tocar con el Orinoco frente de Guayana como se ven demarcados en el Mapa. Y por ser intransitables como dicho queda los llanos que median entre la Mesa de Guanipa, bocas del Orinoco, este Rio y el de Guarapiche se hace preciso para ir por tierra al Presidio de Guayana, tomar un gran rodeo saliendo á la Provincia de Barcelona de donde se toma el Camino á la Mesa de Guanipa Rio y Pueblo del Cary, Laguna del Mamo y de alli á el frente del Presidio donde esta el paso del
- E Orinoco.

- F Los frutos de esta Provincia son comunmente el Maize que sirve de Pan, supliendo la total falta de trigo. La raiz de Yuca de que se hace otro Pan que llaman Cazabe pero no tan comible como el Maiz que es mui bueno, especialmente para los criados, con el Platano y demas raizes y frutos que se dan en otros iguales temperamentos Americanos: Cacao de que hay cortas y pocas Arboledas todas situadas al Norte y Costa de esta Provincia, y ningunas al Sur en donde son mas fertiles y mayores los terrenos, pero no haviendo poblacion al Sur dela expresada Serrania, con dificultad se dedicarán y adelantarán estos Plantages siendo los Indios de las Misiones alli situadas poco á proposito para executarlas: Caña dulce de que pudiera darse mucha abundancia por ser los terrenos al Norte, y al Sur adequados para este fruto mas apenas hay la suficiente para proveer de mieles el Estanco de Aguardiente, y hacer algun Azucar de malisima calidad, que se consume en todo el Pays, y aun no lo abastece.

Al sur de la referida Serrania pudiera criarse

many great swamps and lakes caused by the floods of the said rivers and others which rise from the table-land of Guanipa.

All the back of the said range, which faces southward, abounds in running streams, and the rains are more copious than in the northern part. Its valleys are fertile, and suitable for every kind of product grown in these climes, especially for cacao; but all these lands are deserted. The slope, or water-sheds of the same ranges, on the south, abound in grass suitable for cattle of every kind, but there is no one to apply himself to rearing them, and only some few cattle belonging to the Indians are fed there.

The entire face of the range, which looks to the north, is exceedingly barren and devoid of water, and, with the exception of the first slopes in its highest parts, it does not grow grass fit for any kind of cattle, unless it be for goats, and they even find it difficult to break through the infinity and variety of thorns which render these lands impassable. Near the coast the greater part of the lands are saltings and barren, but, nevertheless, it is not without some valleys running through it; but they want water, and are very unhealthy, and this, coupled with the laziness and poverty of the natives, causes them to be but little cultivated.

In the highest part and first slopes of the range, both to north and south, a healthy and cool temperature is found, especially at night, and suitable for all kinds of European vegetables, but it grows none, because there is no one to consume them or to cultivate them, except here and there a missionary or acclimatized European.

The boundaries of the Province of Cumana on the east are: the mouths of the Orinoco, the River Guarapiche and Point of Paria, Cape Three Points, following the coast of Araya and Gulf of Cariaco up to the village of Pozuelos on the table-land of Guanipa, where they turn and bend eastwards until they touch the Orinoco opposite Guayana, as shown in the map. And since, as already stated, the plains are impassable which lie between the table-land of Guanipa, the mouths of the Orinoco, that river, and the Guarapiche, it is requisite, in order to go by land to the garrison of Guayana, to make a great circuit by going out to the Province of Barcelona, where the road runs to the table-land of Guanipa, river and village of Cary, Lake of Mamo, and from there to the front of the garrison, where the passage of the Orinoco is made.

The products of this province are, generally, maize, which is used for bread, and supplies the total want of wheat; manioc root, used for another kind of bread, which they call cassava, but it is not so palatable as that of maize, which is very good, especially for households; also plantains and other roots and products which grow in similar climates in America; cacao, of which there are a few scanty groves, all situated in the north and on the coast of this province, and none on the south, where the lands are more fertile and extensive; but as there is no settlement to the south of the said range, these plantations could be made with difficulty, as the Indians of the Missions in those parts are but little fitted to make them; sugarcane, of which great abundance might be grown, since the lands both on the north and on the south are adapted for this product, but there is scarcely enough to provide syrup for the rum distillery, and to make some sugar of very bad quality, which is consumed throughout the country; but it does not even supply enough for that.

To the south of the said range every kind of



todo genero de ganado mayor, y á la parte del Norte mucho Cabrio, pero ni en una, ni en otra le hay suficiente para el Abasto de un pequeño Pueblo; por lo que pende toda esta Provincia dela de Barcelona que provee las Carnes necesarias, no obstante los penosos caminos que maltratan y hacen difícil la conduccion de los Ganados.

Toda la Costa, que corre desde el Cavo de tres Puntas, hasta el Pueblo de Pozuelos y aun hasta el Rio Unare, es abundantísimo de variedad de pescados y Mariscos á qual mas esquisito y sano, sin que á su bondad exceda el dela Costa de Cantabria. La mayor parte dela Provincia subsiste de dicho Pescado, consumiendole en la costa diariamente fresco, y tierra adentro salado, y seco: para cuio efecto se hacen grandes pesquerias con las que despues de provista esta Provincia abastecen todos los años mas de tres mil quintales.

Aunque la costa que comprehende al gobierno de Cumaná no abunda de Puertos, lo pacifico de sus mares permiten fondear en toda ella, desde las vocas de Orinoco, y Rio Guarapiche, hasta la punta de Paria no hay Puerto, pero se puede dar fondo con toda embarcacion menor, como Galeotas: Balandras y otras que no pasen de veinte Cañones, no por que falte Agua para mayores Buques, sino por que estos no pueden entrar por entre la Isla dela Trinidad y vocas del Orinoco por haber muchos vajos, que solo dan paso á embarcaciones menores que precisamente han de nabegar por entre dicha Isla y vocas respecto á que las excesivas corrientes delas delos Dragos, solo permiten la salida y la entrada á las Embarcaciones que ban esquivadas de buenos Remos; con que á costa de mucho trabajo y tiempo, suelen vencer la corriente de la Punta de Paria, al Cavo detres Puntas tampoco hay Puerto, ni en su costa se puede dar fondo sin conocido riesgo por la mucha mar que alli leban tan las Brisas á cuios vientos esta mui expuesta.

Desde el cavo de tres Puntas á Punta de Araya, aunque no hay Puerto, toda embarcacion que no sea de cruz puede dar fondo en varias ensenadas; pero en siendo de treinta cañones ya tiene dificultad en asegurarse, mas no de navegar, por entre la tierra firme y la Isla dela Margarita. Desde Pnnta de Araya hasta el cavo de Coderá con toda seguridad y en qualquiera parte dela Costa pueden dar fondo todo genero de embarcaciones; pues á mas de haver agua suficiente esta libre de vajos, y mui resguardada de las Brisas, que por fuertes que sean no levantan mar. Hay algunos Puertos el de Mochina, Puerto Escondido, y ensenada de Santa Fee, y en qualquiera de ellos caben muchos Nabios de los de maior Porte. Como estan desiertos entran y salen en ellos todas las embarcaciones estrangeras que necesitan proveerse de Agua y Leña, y las que vienen al comercio clandestino. Unas y otras hacen varias picardias en la Costa, y tambien con las embarcaciones del Pays, que trafican de esta Provincia á la de Barcelona y Caracas, cuios excesos son irremediables, por no haver embarcaciones con que resistirlos, siendo imposible fortificar toda la Costa en donde sin necesidad delos Puertos pueden fondear y hacer Agua y Leña.

El Golfo de Cariaco es una dilatada ensenada que interna doce leguas: de una es su mayor Angostura, su fondo de ochenta á cien brazas, sus aguas tan quietas como las de una Laguna. Las

large cattle might be reared, and plenty of goats on the north; but neither in one nor the other is there sufficient to supply a small village. Consequently, this entire province depends on that of Barcelona, which provides the necessary animal food, notwithstanding the rough roads, which injure the cattle, and render it difficult to convey them.

All the coast, which runs from Cape Three Points up to the village of Pozuelos, and even up to the River Unare, greatly abounds in a variety of fish and shell-fish of the most exquisite and wholesome quality, nor is their excellence surpassed by those of the coast of Cantabria. The greater part of the province lives on the said fish, which is daily eaten, fresh on the coast, and salted and dried inland. For this purpose great fisheries are made, by which, after supplying this province, supply a great part of that of Carácas, whither more than 3,000 cwt. is taken yearly.

Although the coast which is included in the Government of Cumaná does not abound in harbours, the peaceful character of its seas allow anchorage all along it. From the mouths of the Orinoco and River Guarapiche up to the Point of Paria there is not a harbour, but it is possible to anchor with every kind of small vessel, such as galiots, bilanders, and others which do not exceed twenty guns—not that water is wanting for larger ships, but because they cannot enter between the Island of Trinidad and the mouths of the Orinoco, as there are many shoals which only allow small vessels to pass, and they have to navigate carefully between the said island and mouths, for the powerful currents from the Dragon's mouths only allow exit and entrance to vessels which go provided with good oars, with which, at the cost of much time and labour, they are wont to overcome the current. From the Point of Paria to Cape Three Points there is likewise no harbour, nor is it possible to anchor on that coast without known risk, owing to the heavy sea which is produced there by the north-east winds, to which it is very much exposed.

From Cape Three Points to the Point of Araya, although there is no harbour, every vessel below a cruiser can anchor in various creeks, but if they are of thirty guns they at once find it difficult to get shelter, but not to sail, between the mainland and the Island of Margarita. From Point Araya to Cape Coderá every kind of vessel can anchor with full security in any part of the coast, for, besides having sufficient water, it is free from shoals, and well sheltered from the north-east winds, which, however strong they may be, do not cause the sea to swell. There are some harbours—that of Mochina, Puerto Escondido, and the Creek of Santa Fé, and ships of large burden can enter any of them. As they are deserted, all the foreign vessels which want to supply themselves with water and wood come in and out, as do those which come for clandestine trade; both classes commit various depredations on the coast, and also on the vessels of the country which trade from this province to those of Barcelona and Carácas, and their excesses cannot be remedied, as there are no vessels with which to resist them, and it is impossible to fortify the entire coast, for, without need of harbours, they can anchor and take water and wood anywhere.

The Gulf of Cariaco is a long creek, which runs inland for 12 leagues, its narrowest part is 1 league wide, its depth from 80 to 100 fathoms, and its waters are as quiet as those of a lake. The

- A elevadas Serranias de que esta rodeado le resguardan de todos vientos á excepcion dela Brisa que encañonada por todo este Golfo suele levantar alguna Mar especialmente desde las diez del dia á las cinco dela tarde que cede con el viento. Las embarcaciones grandes entran voltegeando si se lo permite la Brisa, si esta es fuerte se dá fondo á una ú otra Costa hasta que calma. que por lo comun es al anochecer y se aprovechan del terral, que es el viento sueste y corre desde las ocho dela Noche, hasta las seis dela mañana. Ademas de poderse dar fondo á una ó a otra parte de la Costa, tiene mui buenas ensenadas, y Puertos como son : la Laguna del Obispo el de Junantar : el de Gurinta y otros varios, en este ultimo, es donde carenan los Navios.

- B En toda la costa de Cumaná hay varias salinas por lo que no hace ninguna falta la perdida de Araya, como se dirá quando se trate del Castillo que la resguarda, delas existentes se vale toda esta Provincia, y aun sacan mucho para la de Caracas. Todo la Costa es aproposito para ellas, y si fuero preciso beneficiarlas se aia quanta sal se quisiese pero hay la suficiente y aun sobrante para el consumo dela Provincia, con la quedan sin la menor cuido ni beneficio. La primera de dichas salinas esta en el Golfo triste entre los Pueblos de Yrapa, y solo es pequeña, y su sal negra, sirvese de ella solo los Indios. La segunda en Chaguana mas distante seis á siete leguas á Barlovento de Rio Caribes. La tercera en Caropano: quarta en el mismo Pueblo mas á sotavento: quinta en Guayacan á Barlobento del Puerto dela Esmeralda: sexta en Guaranache tres leguas á Barlovento dela Puerta dela Araya: septima en la punta de Araya dos leguas al Norte dela grande perdida: octava en la Playa de Cumaná y se puede decir que toda la Costa es una continuada salina, pues en donde quiera que se detiene el agua, llovediza ó salada resulta sal:
- D En todo la Provincia no hay mas que tres Rios de consideracion, el de Cumaná, el de Cariaco, y Guarapiche, este nace en lo mas elevado de la Serrania en el sitio llamado Cocoyan comienza a verter sus aguas al sur, y haciendo varios giros por la serrania recibe en ella los Rios Colorado Guatabar y otros de menor consideracion que no se manifiestan en el Mapa, y con suficientes aguas á no dar vado: vaja al llano por las Misiones de San Feliz y Caicara, donde comienza á costear y voltear la serrania hasta desemsalsar en el Golfo triste recibiendo antes los Rios de Guayana, Punceres, Caripe incorporado con Areo y otros de que no se hace mencion con cuyas Aguas mucho antes de salir al Mar se hace el Guarapiche formidable, navegase por este Rio con la mayora Balandra, ó Goleta hasta entrar por el Rio Areo al Caño de teresen, y ha havido exemplar de entrar hasta la misma Laguna de Areo al Caño de teresen son muy frequentes dichas embarcaciones por ser el parage mas aproposito á donde llegan los Ganados Bacunos, y Mulares, que por esta parte, y conducidos por la Espalda de esta Provincia se estraen de lis de Barcelona y Caracas sobre cuio asunto se hace el correspondiente informe á S.M. en cumplimiento de su Real orden con fecha de 24 de Junio de 1761 desde las vocas del Rio Areo pudieran navegarse el Guarapiche con las expresadas embarcaciones hasta la Mision de Caicara ó á lo menos de Guayuta, pero lo impide la espesisima Arboleda que hay de una y otra parte del Rio, y en sus mismas aguas muchos troncos y ramazones que tal vez hubieran desembarazado y desmontado los extractores de Ganados, á no ser los muchos

- E
- F

lofty ranges by which it is surrounded protect it from all winds except the north-east, which, hemmed in all along this gulf, usually makes a rather rough sea, especially from 10 o'clock in the morning until 5 in the afternoon, when it goes down with the wind. Large vessels enter by tacking if the north-east wind allows, but if it is strong they anchor on one coast or the other until it subsides, which is usually at dusk, and they take advantage of the land wind which is the south-east, and blows from 8 at night until 6 in the morning. Besides affording anchorage on either part of the coast, it has very good creeks and harbours, such as, Laguna del Obispo, Junantar, Gurinta, and various others, and the last-mentioned is where they careen the ships. On all the coast of Cumaná there are several salt mines, for which reason the loss of Araya will not be felt as will be shown when treating of the castle which protects it; the entire province draws upon those which are in existence, and a considerable quantity is even taken to the Province of Caracas. The entire coast is well fitted for them, and if it were necessary to work them there would be as much salt as might be wanted, but there is enough and even more for the consumption of the province which they yield without the least care or working. The first of the said salt mines is in the Golfo Triste, between the villages of Yrapa. but it is only a small one yielding black salt, and the Indians alone make use of it. The second is in Chaguana, 6 or 7 leagues further to windward from Rio Caribes. The third is in Caropano, the fourth in the same village more to leeward, the fifth in Guayacan to windward of the Port of Esmeralda, the sixth in Guaranache, 3 leagues to windward of the Port of Araya; the seventh at the Point of Araya, 2 leagues northwards from the great one which was destroyed; the eighth on the shore of Cumaná, and it may be said that the whole coast is one continuous salt mine, for wherever one may choose to dam up either rain-water or sea-water, salt is produced. In the whole province there are only three rivers of importance, those of Cumaná and Cariaco, and the Guarapiche; the latter rises in the highest part of the range, in the place called Cocoyan; it begins by running southward, and making several bends along the range it receives the Rivers Colorado, Guataba, and others of less importance, which are not shown in the map, but have sufficient water not to allow a ford. It runs to the plain through the Missions of San Feliz and Caicara, where it begins to wind and turn round the range until it falls into the Golfo Triste, first receiving the Rivers Guayana, Punceres, Caripe, united with the Areo and others which are left unmentioned, with the waters of which the Guarapiche becomes formidable long before it falls into the sea; this river is navigable with the largest bilander or galiot until it enters the creek of Teresen through the River Areo, and there has been an instance of entering the creek of Teresen up to the Lake of Areo. The said vessels are very general, as the place is the best suited in this part for cattle and mules to come to, which are brought through the back of this province and exported from those of Barcelona and Caracas, on which matter due report is being made to His Majesty in fulfilment of His Royal Order of the 24th June, 1761. From the mouths of the River Areo the Guarapiche might be navigated in the said vessels up to the Mission of Caicara, or at least of Guayuta, but the exceedingly dense vege-

anegalizales, que á una y otra parte del expresado rio imposibilitan el paso y embarque de ellos por lo que se ven precisados de pasarlos á nado por el mismo Guarapiche en las inmediaciones de la Mision de Caicara de donde los internan por la Serrania al Pueblo de Punceres, y de este al de Terresen, y en su caño forman corrales al mismo embarcadero que le hacen con facilidad con la misma Arboleda del Caño, todos los valles que hay á las orillas del Guarapiche, y mucha parte de estas son fertilisimos para cacaos, y al presente solo avitados de las Misiones que se demarcan en el Mapa, á cargo de los Padres Capuchinos Aragonese.

Varios Rios de poca consideracion que nacen á mas ó menos elevacion de la Serrania se juntan antes de bajar al valle que llaman de Cariaco cuio nombre toma el mismo Rio, al que despues de haver corrido alguna pequeña parte por el llano le sangran para el riego de unas cortas haciendas de Cacao, y sigue su curso á desembarcar en el Golfo de Cariaco; en tiempo de Invierno toma muchas Aguas y con algunas de sus avenidas baña la mayor parte de la Ciudad situada á su orilla, Navegase con Lanchas de pequeño porte, y en el verano queda tan seco que á penas puede Navegar una Canoa.

En la misma Serrania de Cocoyan que se forma en el Guarapiche vertiendo sus Aguas el sur, nace tambien el de Cumaná vertiendolas al Norte y siguiendo este rumbo por entre toda la Serrania hasta bajar á la Ciudad de Cumaná, de ella entra en la Mar dividiendose primero en quatro brazos. Trahe este Rio en tiempo de Inbierno algunas abenidas, pero como de la Serrania ál desemvogue en la Mar hay tan poca distancia buelve luego á su caja en la que queda agua para navegar una Lancha con cien quintales de peso, y aun pudiera ser mas si la banca que siempre tiene á la voca permitiera la entrada en tiempo de verano, seca tanto que no se puede navegar en otra embarcacion que canoas.

Esta Provincia contiene seis Poblaciones de Españoles, que son la misma Ciudad de Cumaná, la de San Baltasar de los Arias, ó Cumanacoa, la de San Felipe de Austria ó Cariaco: Pueblo de Carupano: la dicho de Rio Caribes, y dicho de Araya. Tiene asimismo siete Pueblos de Doctrina y trece de Mision á cargo de los Capuchinos Aragonese, y diez y seis Doctrinas á cargo de Clerigos seculares, como por menor se dira en las dos Notas siguientes.

tation on both sides of the river prevents it, and in its very waters, there are numbers of trunks and branches which the exporters of cattle would perhaps have cleared away and cut down had it not been for the many swamps which, on either side of the said river render their passage and embarkation impossible, wherefore they are compelled to swim them across the said Guarapiche, near the Mission of Caicara, whence they drive them inland along the ridge to the village of Punceres, and thence to that of Terresen, and in its creek they make cattle-yards at the place of embarkation, which they do easily with the trees of the creek; all the valleys on the banks of the Guarapiche, and a great portion of those banks are very fertile for cacao, and at present they are only inhabited by the Missions marked in the map, under the care of the Aragonese Capuchin Fathers.

Various rivers of small account which rise at a greater or less elevation of the range, unite before descending to the valley called Cariaco, the name of which is taken by the river itself; this river, after running for some short distance through the plain, is diverted for the irrigation of a few small cacao farms, and continues its course until it falls into the Gulf of Cariaco; in winter-time it carries quantities of water, and in some of its inundations it washes the greater part of the town situated on its bank. It is navigated in launches of small draught, and in summer it is so dry that a canoe can scarcely get along.

In the same range of Cocoyan, in which the Guarapiche is formed and bends its stream to the south, that of Cumaná also rises and flows to the north, and follows this course through all the range until it descends to the city of Cumaná, from which it falls into the sea after dividing into four branches. In winter-time this river causes some inundations, but as the distance from the range to its mouth is so short, it quickly returns to its bed, in which sufficient water remains to navigate a launch of 100 cwt. burden, and it might even be more if the bank, which always exists at its mouth, would allow entrance. In summer it is so dry that it cannot be navigated by anything but a canoe.

This province contains six settlements of Spaniards, namely, the cities of Cumaná, San Baltasar de los Arias, or Cumanacoa, San Felipe de Austria, or Cariaco, the village of Carupano, and those aforesaid of Rio Caribes and Araya. It has likewise seven villages under instruction, and thirteen Mission villages, in the care of the Aragonese Capuchins, and sixteen doctrinas in charge of secular clergy, as will be shown in detail in the two following notes—

*Ciudad de Cumaná.—Nota 3ª.*

(Extract.)

Hacese ver mui individualmente lo que son las Ciudades de Cumaná: San Baltasar de los Arias ó Cumanacoa: San Felipe Austria, ó Curiaco: Pueblos de Carupano: Rio Caribes: Castillo de Araya, y su inmediata Poblacion: Fortificaciones de la primera Guarnicion para su custodia: Sueldos que goza: todas sus Milicias: sus vecindarios con el número de familias, Almas, y casas, &c., segun son anotados al margen.

Antes de dar noticia general de las dos restantes Provincias, que componen este Gobierno, se dará en particular de las Poblaciones de la de Cumaná, siguiendo á la general de esta Provincia, cuia

*City of Cumana.—Note 3.*

Showing very specifically what are the cities of Cumaná, San Baltasar de los Arias, or Cumanacoa, San Felipe Austria, or Cariaco, the villages of Carupano, Rio Caribes, the castle of Araya and its adjoining settlement, the fortifications of the first garrison for its custody, the salaries it enjoys, all its militia, its residents, with the number of families, souls, and houses, &c., as they are noted in the margin.

Before giving a general account of the two remaining provinces which form this Government a detailed one will be given of the settlements of that of Cumaná, following the general one of

- A. sequela se observará con las de Barcelona y Guayana, para la mayor claridad y comprehension de todas, y de cada una de ellas con separacion.

Queda dicho en la Nota General de la Provincia de Cumaná, que esta contiene seis Poblaciones de Españoles: siete Pueblos de Doctrina: y trece de Mision á cargo de los Capuchinos Aragoneses; y diez y seis Pueblos de Doctrina á cargo de Clerigos seculares; si de todos ellos se tratara en esta Nota, ademas de que seria muy dilatada causaria alguna confusion, por lo que solo se executará de los Pueblos Españoles, dando de cada uno de ellos en particular una exacta noticia, y en la Nota siguiente se dirá quanto ocurre de las Doctrinas y Misiones.

Dejanse de copiar Notas 4-7.

*Provincia de Guayana.—Nota 8ª.*

Hacese relacion de las pocas y confusas noticias que se tienen de la Provincia de Guayana de sus limites, Rios principales, Minas de oro y Plata; Colonias Olandesas, y Francesas; y Poblaciones en toda ella.

- C. Todo quanto queda [dicho] de las Provincias de Cumana y Barcelona es en virtud del perfecto reconocimiento que se tiene de sus situaciones, terrenos, temperamento & pero de la estensísima de Guayana se puede decir muy poco, y lo mas de ello por relacion de Indios, y gentes rusticas quienes merecen menos asensos. Por ahora se esta á dichas relaciones como unicas noticias de esta Provincia, vajo de cuyo concepto se expresará quanto de ella se sabe, y parezca suficiente para hacerla comprehensible.

- D. Es esta dilatada Provincia en la mayor parte desconocida, sin que persona de razon haya internado en ella, á excepcion de los RR. PP. Capuchinos Catalanes, y estos en tan corto terreno como manifiesta el Mapa, y se dira quando se trate de la situacion de las Misiones establecidas por dichos Capuchinos. Por diferentes Indios Caribes unicos, que por su genio andariego, y guerrero se alejan de sus rancherias se sabe que en su centro contiene dilatados llanos elevadissimas, y fertiles serranias, y muchas de estas cubiertas de nieve, abundantes, y caudalosos Rios, incluso el grande Orinoco, y que en dichas serranias y campanas se hallan situados muchisimos Indios de varias Naciones. Que en algunas de las expresadas Serranias aun de las que estan vajo de la equinocial; es excesivo el frio por lo que dichos Caribes las trafican poco, temerosos de morir segun ellos dicen, y no sería extraño por su total desnudez y naturaleza de Payses calidos. Dán tambien algunas confusas noticias de la Laguna de Parima, asegurando haver en ella varias Islas, y las mas pobladas de Indios quienes se mantienen con el mucho pescado que dá de si dicha Laguna, que en ella entran caudalosos Rios dimanados de las Serranias cubiertas de nieve tanto al Norte, como al sur de la Laguna, las del norte donde se consideran las primeras aguas del Orinoco, son las que manifiesta el Mapa situadas en los cinco grados de latitud, y 313 de longitud Norte sur con la Angostura, y Mesa de Guanipa. Por los Españoles solo estan reconocidas las orillas del Orinoco, y ocho, ó diez leguas tierra adentro por el sitio que llaman Muitaco, y Misiones de los RR. PP. Observantes de Piritu.

that province, and this sequence will be observed in those of Barcelona and Guayana for the greater clearness and understanding of them all and of each individually.

It has been stated in the general note of the Province of Cumaná that it contains six settlements of Spaniards, seven instruction villages, and thirteen Mission villages in charge of the Aragonese Capuchins, and sixteen instruction villages in charge of secular clergy; if all these were to be treated of in this note, it would not only be very lengthy, but would lead to some confusion, wherefore it will only be done for the Spanish villages, giving an exact account of each one individually, and the following note will contain what there is to say about the instruction and Mission villages:—

*The Province of Guayana.—Note 8.*

Giving an account of the few and confused notices which we possess concerning the Province of Guayana, its boundaries, chief rivers, mines of gold and silver, Dutch and French Colonies, and the Settlements in its entire extent.

All that has been [said] about the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona is the result of the complete survey which we possess of their positions, lands, climate, &c., but of the most extensive province, Guayana, very little can be said, and most of it from reports of Indians and country folk, who are less worthy of credence. For the present we are limited to the said reports as the sole notices of this province, and from this point of view all that is known of it, and that may appear sufficient to render it intelligible, shall be expressed.

This extensive province is for the greater part unknown, and no intelligent person has gone into the interior, with the exception of the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, and they only to a very short extent, as shown in the map, and as will be stated when treating of the position of the Missions established by the said Capuchins. From various separate Carib Indians, who, in consequence of their roving and warlike nature, go long distances from their settlements, it is known that it contains in its centre extensive plains, lofty and fertile ranges of hills, many of them covered with snow, and copious and abundant rivers, including the great Orinoco; and that in the said ranges of hills and plains there are found large numbers of Indians of various nations. That in some of the said ranges, even of those which are below the equinoctial line, the cold is excessive, for which reason the said Caribs trade little therein, being afraid of getting benumbed, as they say; and it would not be extraordinary, owing to their complete nudity and to their constitution being that of a warm climate. They likewise give some confused accounts of Lake Parime, affirming that there are many islands in it, and that most of them are peopled with Indians who support themselves by the great quantity of fish which the said lake produces, that copious rivers fall into it, flowing from the snow-clad ranges, both on the north and on the south of the lake; those on the north, where the sources of the Orinoco are reckoned to be, are the ones shown in the map, lying at 5° of latitude and 313° of longitude, north and south with the Angostura and table-land of Guaripa.

Los límites de la Provincia de Guayana son por Leste toda la costa en las que se hallan situadas la[s] Colonias Olandesas de Esquivo, Bervis, Demorari, Corentin, Surinam, y mas á Barlovento la Cayana perteneciente á los Franceses. Por el Norte las orillas del Orinoco que dividiendo las Provincias de Cumaná, Barcelona, Carácas, Barinas, Santa Fee, y Popayan, forma un medio círculo bolyiando á el Leste, á buscar sus Cabezeras en la Laguna de Parima, como se verá en el Mapa General de las dichas Provincias, y Rio. Por el sur con los Dominios del Rey Fidelismo en el Brasil ignorandose los confines de estos, y dicha Provincia de Guayana como quanto ello contiene en el centro.

Su primero, y famoso Rio, es el Orinoco, quien recibe aguas de otros en la misma Provincia entrándole tambien los que descien den de las de Popayan, Santa Fee, Barina, Carácas, y Barcelona. Tratar de todos seria salir de la idea, que solo se reduce á dar noticia de la Governacion de Cumaná, por que así como expresaron los que de la Provincia de Barcelona vierten en dicho Orinoco se dirán tambien los mas conocidos, y candolosos, que le entran de su misma Provincia de Guayana, en la que nace y vierte en la Mar, y de los demas que manifiesta el Mapa, y otros á que no alcanza se puede ver á el Padre Gumilla en los quatro primeros capitulos de su Orinoco ilustrado, en donde su conocimiento y noticias individuales expone lo que es el Orinoco, y Rios caudalosos que recibe, á excepcion de sus cabezeras que las considera dicho Padre en la Provincia de Popayan, ó temana pues por el reconocimiento ultimamente al cargo del Gefe de Esquadra Don Joseph de Ytuirraga para la embarcacion de límites se cree dimanar de la Laguna de Parima, y que esta toma sus primeras aguas de la Serrania nevada que esta al Norte de dicha Laguna, y manifiesta el Mapa, y se há salido de la equivocacion en que se hallaba dicho Padre Gumilla negando la comunicacion de Orinoco con Rio Negro, cuya comunicacion ya no se dudava al tiempo que se hacia dicho reconocimiento por los comisionados por haverla descubierto antes y despues de la obra de dicho Padre Gumilla, el Padre Manuel Roman de la Compañia de Jesus, y Misionero en hacimiento de dicho Orinoco, su comunicacion por medio del casiquiari con el Rio Negro, el Guabiari que vaja de la Provincia de Santa Fee, y el que descien de de timana, y Pasto en la Provincia de Popayan, y el Padre Gumilla tubo por Orinoco, se verán en el Mapa general, que como dicho es, se queda trabajando y así mismo se tratará mui por menor del dicho Rio Orinoco, de los que le entran en toda su extension y de estos quales son nabegables, y hasta que parages, bien que hai mui poco que aumentar á lo espuesto por dicho Padre Gumilla por la falta de noticias mas veridicas.

The banks of the Orinoco, and 8 or 10 leagues inland at the place they call Muitaco, and the Missions of the Reverend Observant Fathers of Piritu, are all that has been explored by the Spaniards. A

The boundaries of the Province of Guayana are, on the east, the entire coast, on which are situated the Dutch Colonies of Essequibo, Berbice, Demarary, Corentin, Surinam, and, further windwards, Cayenne belonging to the French; on the north, the banks of the Orinoco, which separates the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, Carácas, Barinas, Santa Fée, and Popayan, forming a semicircle and turning to the east to seek its source in Lake Parime, as will be seen in the general map of the said provinces and river; on the south, by the dominions of the Most Faithful King in Brazil, the boundaries of which are unknown, as is likewise the said Province of Guayana, in respect of what it contains in its centre. B

Its chief and celebrated river is the Orinoco, which receives the waters of others in the same Province; and those likewise fall into it which come down from the Provinces of Popayan, Santa Fée, Barinas, Carácas, and Barcelona. To treat of them all would be to exceed the present purpose, which is limited to giving an account of the Government of Cumaná; wherefore just as those have been described which flow into the said Orinoco from the Province of Barcelona, so likewise the best known and most copious shall be described which fall into it from its own Province of Guayana, in which it takes its rise and falls into the sea; and concerning the rest which appear in the map, and others which it does not include, they may be seen in the first four chapters of the "Orinoco Ilustrado" of Father Gumilla, in which his personal knowledge and information exhibit the Orinoco as it is, and the copious rivers it receives, with the exception of its source, which the said Father reckons to be in the Province of Popayan or Temana; but, according to the survey recently made by the Commissioners in the expedition under the charge of Commodore Don Joseph de Iturriaga for the demarcation of boundaries, it is believed that it flows from Lake Parime, and that the latter takes its first rise from the snow-clad range which is to the north of the said lake, and is shown in the map, and the fact has been cleared from the erroneous view held by the said Father Gumilla, who denied the communication of the Orinoco with the Rio Negro, which communication was not a matter of doubt even at the time when the said survey was made by the Commissioners, seeing that, both before and after the work of the said Father Gumilla, Father Manuel Ramon, of the Society of Jesus, active missionary of the said Orinoco, discovered its communication by means of the Casiquiari with the Rio Negro; the Guabiari, which runs from the Province of Santa Fée, and the one which descends from Timana and Pasto in the Province of Popayan, and which Father Gumilla took for the Orinoco, will be seen in the general map, which as aforesaid is being drawn up, and likewise a very detailed account will be given of the said River Orinoco, of the rivers which fall into it throughout its entire extent, and of those that are navigable, and up to what points, though indeed there is very little to add to what has been stated by the said R

A

A ocho leguas rio Arriba del Presidio de Guayana entre el Orinoco el nombrado Caroni, dividiendose en dos brazos con los que forma la isla llamada de Caroni; es rio Caudaloso, y rapido, pero no nabegable á causa de su mucha corriente, y la infinidad de peñascos, y islas que tiene en medio, y por un gran salto ó despeñadero que ahí junto á la Mision Aguacagua: sus aguas son mui claras, aunque a la vista parecen negras, y turbias por el fondo de arena negra que trae el Rio: sus cabezeras se ignoran, pero segun noticias

B

de los Caribes dimanar de unas serranias inmediatas á las nevadas, ó de las mismas que dan aguas á la laguna de Parima como manifiesta el Mapa, y no de la cordillera que dice el Padre Gumilla.

C

A unas veinte leguas de Caroni vierte el nombrado Aruy, no tan caudaloso como dicho Caroni. Igualmente se ignoran sus cabezeras, pero los citados Caribes, y otros afirman que estan como unas cinquenta leguas tomando sus primeras aguas en unas serranias menos elevadas que las que producen el Caroni, y que entre estos dos rios hay gran porcion de Indios situados en terrenos llanos, y de serrania, unos y otros mui amenos.

A quarenta leguas del Aruy desagua el nombrado Caura, y el mas caudaloso, viene por entre grandes peñascos que impiden la navegacion á toda embarcacion que no sean canuas ó lanchas pequeñas.

D

Las cabezeras de este se hallan á sesenta leguas de el desembogue, tomando su[s] primeras aguas en unas elevadas serranias pobladas de muchos Indios, acosados estos por los Caribes quienes para llevar á los Olandeses aprisionan á los Niños, y Mugeres, y de los grandes exterminan quantos pueden. Estos, son los tres rios mayores, y mas conocidos que entran en las inmediaciones de Guayana en dicho Orinoco, sin hacer mencion de los pequeños por ser infinitos, y poco caudalosos.

E

En las serranias de esta provincia se dice haver varias minas de Oro y Plata, pero ninguna se trabaja, ni aun se conocen en el dia. Infierese que las hay segun una Real Cedula fecha en Aranjuez á 9 de Junio, 1740, de la que se halla tomada la razon en la contaduria de Guayana, por la que se reconoce que en tiempo de Don Carlos de Sucre siendo Gobernador de esta provincia se remitieron varias muestras á la corte, y de los ensayes que resultaron unas de plata mui fina, y otra de Oro de 21 quilates, por lo que mando S. M. al Gobernador Don Gregorio de Espinosa, sucesor del citado Don Carlos de Sucre que se reconozcan dichas minas y la posibilidad que habra en poner en practica las providencias que expuso el ensayador mayor, y que para ello se comunicase dicho Gobernador con el Virrey de Santa Fee

F

a quien se le advertia de ello: Unica noticia que hay en orden á las tales minas, sin duda por lo despoblado de esta provincia, y total falta de inteligentes para semejante reconocimiento y labores.

A el Leste, y costa de esta provincia se hallan situadas las colonias Olandesas, Esquivo, Demerari,

Father Gumilla owing to the lack of more trustworthy accounts.

At 8 leagues up stream from the fortress of Guayana the above-mentioned Caroni falls into the Orinoco, and divides into two arms, with which it forms the island called Caroni. It is a copious and rapid river, but not navigable owing to its strong current and to the multitude of rocks and islands which it contains in mid-stream, and owing to a great cataract or precipice which exists close to the Mission of Aguacagua. Its waters are very clear, although to the eye they look black and turbid, owing to the bottom of black sand which the river brings down. Its sources are unknown, but according to reports from the Caribs, they flow from certain ridges close to the snowy ranges, or from the same which supply Lake Parime, as shown in the map, and not from the cordillera as stated by Father Gumilla.

At about 20 leagues from the Caroni the above-mentioned Aruy falls into it, but it is not so copious as the said Caroni. Its sources likewise are unknown; but the said Caribs and others affirm that they are some 50 leagues distant and take their rise in certain ranges of less elevation than those which produce the Caroni, and that between these two rivers there is a large body of Indians settled in plains and uplands, both of which are of agreeable character.

At 40 leagues from the Aruy the aforesaid Caura discharges itself; it is the most copious and runs among great rocks which prevent the navigation of every kind of vessel save canoes or small launches.

Its sources are found at 60 leagues from its mouth and take their rise in certain lofty ranges, peopled with numbers of Indians, who are harassed by the Caribs, who capture the women and children to carry off to the Dutch, and exterminate as many of the adult males as they can. These are the three largest and best known rivers which fall into the said Orinoco in the neighbourhood of Guayana, without mentioning the small ones, on account of their endless number and small body of water.

It is said that in the ranges of this province there are various mines of gold and silver, but none of them are worked, nor are they even known at the present day. It is to be inferred that they exist from a Royal Cedula, dated at Aranjuez the 9th June, 1740, of which a copy exists in the Contaduria of Guayana, whereby it is seen that at the time when Don Carlos de Sucre was Governor of this province several specimens were sent to the Court, and that the assays showed some of very fine silver and another of gold of 21 carats, wherefore His Majesty orders the Governor, Don Gregorio de Espinosa, the successor of the said Don Carlos de Sucre, to have the said mines surveyed and to consider what possibility there might be of putting into practice the measures suggested by the chief assayer, and that for this purpose the said Governor was to communicate with the Viceroy of Santa Fee who had called attention to the matter. This is the only notice that there is of such mines, doubtless owing to the desolate condition of this province and the entire want of intelligent persons for such survey and for working them.

To the east, and on the coast of this province, are situated the Dutch Colonies, Essequibo,



Berbis, Corentin, ay Suriname segun las noticias adquiridas por Don Juan de Dios, y Valdes comandante del Presidio de Guayana sugeto bastante curioso y Capaz; consiste la de de Esquivo en diversas haciendas de caña que en la distancia de treinta leguas, tienen los Olandeses plantadas en las margenes del Rio Esquivo comenzando desde su boca, y tambien algunas islas que forma dicho rio, y ofrecen terreno para plantages, la mayor parte de dichas haciendas solo tienen los cañaberales, y las casas de havitacion, y molienda distando unas de otras de dos á tres leguas.

El Rio Esquivo de donde toma la dominacion esta colonia es en su salida al Mar delos caudalosos dela America, tiene sus Cabezeras al Sur. pero mientras se acercan á ellas minore sus Caxas, Navegase 6 jornadas con Lanchas rio Arriba donde se conoce grande disminucion de aguas, por dividirse en varios raudales i en ellos muchas Islas, sin que hasta lo presente Olandes alguno haia estado en sus Cabezeras, y solo tienen la noticia por los Indios Caribes que dichas Cabezeras se originan en la gran Laguna de Parima. Este rio rescibe otros muchos caudalosos y con especialidad los nombrados Mazarroni, y Cuyuni que juntas entraron en Esquivo como á ocho ó diez leguas de su boca, motibo por que sale tan opulento al Mar, en donde vierte por cinco bocas, y en todas con canal suficiente para la navegacion de Goletas, y Balandras, pero no para mayores Buques en dos de sus Islas que forman las vocas dellos: Hai un plantage en cada una de ellas con algunas casas para la habitacion delos Negros, y Indios, que cado dueño tiene las que aparentan ser poblaciones pequeñas, y lo mismo las haciendas á las margenes del Rio. En la tercera Isla que esta mas á el Leste, tienen situadas como una docena de casas que sirven de havitacion al Gobernador de aquella Colonia, Capitan dela Tropa y Cirujano la del Secretario que corre con los intereses dela Compañia: dos otras posadas, dos erencias, Almacenes Alojamiento para los Negros dela Compañia, con mas la Charca, ó Lugar de Predicacion cuyo corto numero de Casas forma la unica Poblacion que tiene esta Colonia. En el sitio mas elvado de dicha Isla inmediato á la casa del Gobernador se halla el Fuerte de Zelandra es construido sobre fuertes estacas, sobre sitio pantanoso, batido del rio dela mar, quando es de leva, por lo que continuamente tienen en que hacer faginas para repararlo, ademas de dicho fuerte hay una bateria rasa, y horizontal á las aguas del Rio, y mar con 13 piezas de Artilleria del calibre de 24 Mandase esta Bateria por dentro dela fortaleza ó fuerte celandra. La Guarnicion de estos dos fuertes y Colonia consiste en una compañía reglada de tropa compuesta de 70 Plazas, las 40 pagadas por la Compañia, y las 30 por los habitantes. De esta Tropa se destaca un sargento con 15 hombres para la Guarnicion del pequeño fuerte que tienen en la boca del Rio Demerari distante del Rio Esquivo 5 leguas siguiendo la costa á el Leste. El commandante de este Fuerte es un subalerno ó teniente de dicho Gobernador El Rio de Merari no interna tanto como el Esquivo, ni tampoco es navegable, mas que con Lanchas, sus orillas estan tan pobladas de Plantages, sus habitantes son Ingleses desertores y delinquentes de sus Dominios que tributan á los Olandeses ciertos derechos por la posesion que tienen los frutos que dan, sus haciendas son azucar cafee y Algodon: Navenganlos á Europa vajo las mismas formalidades que los delas Haciendas del Rio Esquivo.

Demerary, Berbice, Corentin, and Surinam. A According to reports obtained by Don Juan de Dios y Valdes, Commandant of the fortress of Guayana, a man of much diligence and capacity. the Colony of Essequibo consists of sundry sugar estates, which the Dutch have planted, to the distance of 30 leagues, on the banks of the River Essequibo, beginning at its mouth, and also of some islands formed by the said river, which offer land for plantations; the greater part of the said estates only contain the cane plantations, dwelling-houses. and mills, and are 2 or 3 leagues distant one from the other.

The River Essequibo, from whence this Colony B takes its dominion [? denomination], ranks, at its fall into the sea, among the large rivers of America, its sources are to the south, but as it approaches them it contracts, and after six days' journey up-stream in launches a great diminution of water is perceived, because it divides into several rapids with many islands therein; and up to the present time no Dutchman has reached its sources. and they only have the report of the Carib Indians that the said sources take their rise in the great Lake Parime. This river receives many other large ones, C especially those called the Massaruni and Cuyuni, which unite and fall into the Essequibo about 8 or 10 leagues from its mouth, and this is the reason why it is so copious at its fall into the sea, which it enters by five mouths, all of which have a sufficient channel for schooners and sloops, but not for larger vessels. Two of its islands, formed by the mouths, contain a plantation in each, with some dwelling-houses for the negroes and Indians which each owner possesses; these seem to be small settlements and similar to the estates on the banks of the river. On the third island, which is further to D the east, there are about a dozen houses, which serve as dwellings for the Governor of the Colony, the captain of the troops, and the surgeon; a house for the secretary who attends to the interests of the Company; two or three lodging houses, two farms, some warehouses, and quarters for the negroes of the Company, together with the "charca" [? church] or preaching-place. This small number of houses forms the only settlement which the Colony possesses. On the highest point of the said island, close to the Governor's house, is situated the Fort of Zelandra [sic]; it is built on strong E stakes, in a swampy site, washed by the arm of the sea at high tide; for which reason they have to be continually making fascines to repair it. Besides the said fort there is a barbette, horizontal to the waters of the river and sea, with twelve pieces of artillery of the calibre of 24-pounders. This battery is directed from within the fortress or Fort Celandra [sic]. The garrison of these two forts and colony consists of a company of regulars composed of seventy men, forty being paid by the Company and thirty by the inhabitants. From this body F a sergeant with fifteen men is detached to garrison the small fort which they hold at the mouth of the River Demerary, distant 5 leagues from the River Essequibo, along the coast, to the east. The commandant of this fort is a subaltern or lieutenant of the said Governor. The River Demerary does not run so far inland as the Essequibo, it is equally unnavigable except with launches, its banks are similarly filled with plantations, and its inhabitants are English

- A** Esta Colonia es socorrida de Europa con dos Navios que annualmente vienen cargados por cuenta dela Compañia y por la delos vecinos in[c]lusive los havitantes del Rio Demerari quienes á su rie[s]go mandan los frutos de sus haciendas pagando un tanto á la Compañia como aquien pertenecen los Navios (que annualmente vienen cargados por cuenta dela Compañia) en donde se cargan los frutos tambien pertenecientes á dicha Compañia, de los plantages que tambien tienen, y los que compra á los vecinos que no quieren arriesgarlos de su cuenta, igualmente todos los que recogen delas Colonias Bervis, Corentin, y Siranama
- B** no se tiene individuales noticias, y solo si diferencian poco delas de Esquivo, á las que no alcanza el Mapa, por lo que se omite tratar de ellas, y por las mismos razones nada se puede decir dela Cayana perteneciente á los Franceses.

**C**

Las delos Olandeses son sumamente perjudiciales á la Provincia de Guayana especialmente la de Esquivo como mas inmediata al Orinoco. Internase por este Rio, y por los de Mazaroni, y Cuyuni protegido delos Indios Caribes aunque no de esta Provincia á el pillage delos Indios á los que hacen esclavos, y en la misma conformidad que á los Negros, los que venden, y emplean en sus plantages y haciendas. Para haver á estos pobres

- D** Indios se valen de todos los medios que alcanza su codicia y tirania, procurando toda buena amistad con los Caribes, nacion guerrera y feroz que corre toda esta dilatada Provincia y parte dela de Barcelona, Caracas, y santa Fee en solicitud delos otros Indios, sobre quienes los Caribes tienen dominio á causa de ser mui pacificos y dociles, por lo que continuamente son asaltados en sus rancherias, ó terrenos; muertos los grandes, y cautibos los niños y Mugeres, que son los que hacen esclavos con cuias correrias inquietan continuamente las Misiones delos RR. PP. capuchinos catalanes aun no bien establecida tomando los Indios de ellas el
- E** monte á la menor noticia que tienen de Caribes, sin que bastan las providencias delos Misioneros a contenerlos efecto de su genio cobarde y pusilanimie, el que suele vencer si por casualidad se halla escolta de Españoles en el Pueblo á la que se acogen para ser defendidos. Los Olandeses natibos en aquellas Colonias que acompañan á los Caribes los enseñan á manejar las Armas, y son aun mas inhumanos que estos, por lo que se hace precisa una gran vigilancia para contenerlos, y defender dichas Misiones, á las que procuran destruir á fin de que no sirvan de antemural á sus Colonias como manifiesta el Mapa.

**F**

Toda esta dilatada Provincia no contiene mas Poblaciones de Españoles que el Presidio con el nombre de Ciudad de Santo Thome dela Guayana, pues aunque por el Gefé de esquadra Don Joseph

criminals and deserters, who pay certain dues to the Dutch for the possessions they hold and the fruits thereof; their crops are sugar, coffee, and cotton; they ship them to Europe upon the same conditions as those from the estates of the River Esquivo. This Colony is assisted from Europe by two ships which come yearly laden for account of the Company, and for that of the settlers, including the inhabitants of the River Demerary, who send, at their own risk, the produce of their farms, paying a percentage to the Company as owner of the ships (which come yearly, laden, for account of the Company), in which are shipped both the produce likewise belonging to the said Company from the plantations, which they also hold, and that which it purchases from the settlers who do not care to ship it at their own risk, and in like manner all the produce they collect from the Colonies of Berbice, Corentin, and Surinam, to which there is constant traffic in smaller vessels to gather together the said produce. Of the three Colonies, Berbice, Corentin, and Surinam, there are no separate accounts, and the only thing known is that they differ but little from those of Essequibo. The map does not include them, because they are not treated of, and for the same reason nothing can be said of Cayenne belonging to the French.

The Colonies of the Dutch are in the highest degree prejudicial to the Province of Guayana, especially that of Essequibo as being nearer to the Orinoco. By making incursions along this river and along the Massaruni and Cuyuni, protected by the Carib Indians, though not of this province, to plunder the Indians, of whom they make slaves just as they do of the negroes, whom they sell and employ in their plantations and farms. In order to obtain these poor Indians they adopt every method which their greed and tyranny suggest, seeking to maintain all good friendship with the Caribs, a fierce and warlike nation which overruns the whole of this extensive province and part of Barcelona, Caríacas and Santa Fée, in search of the other Indians, over whom the Caribs have the mastery because they are very peaceable and docile, for which reason they are continually being attacked in their huts or lands, and then the men are slain and the women and children made prisoners, for these are the ones of whom they make slaves; and by these incursions they are continually disturbing the Missions of the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, which are not yet firmly established, for their Indians take to the forests at the slightest report of Caribs, while the measures taken by the missionaries to restrain them are insufficient. This is due to their timid and cowardly nature, which they generally overcome, if perchance there is an escort of Spaniards, in the village, to whom they betake themselves for protection. The Dutch natives in those Colonies who accompany the Caribs teach them to manage fire-arms, and are even more inhuman than the Caribs, for which reason great vigilance is needful to restrain them and defend the said Missions, which they endeavour to destroy in order that they may not serve as a check to their Colonies, as shown in the map.

The whole of this extensive province does not contain any other settlements of Spaniards except the fortress bearing the name of the City of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, for

de Iturriaga se intentaron establecer la Cuidad de Real Corona, y la de Ciudad Real ni una ni otra han tenido efecto, como se dira, pero si hai 16 Pueblos de Mision á cargo delos RR. PP. Capuchinos Catalanes, quatro Pueblos tambien de de Mision á cargo delos RR. PP. Jesuitas, y tres á el delos RR. PP. Franciscos Misioneros (Jesuitas) de Piritu, como en las dos Notas siguientes se advierte.

although efforts were made by Commodore Don A Joseph de Iturriaga to found the city of Real Corona and that of Ciudad Real, neither one nor the other was carried into effect, as will be shown; but there are sixteen Mission villages under the care of the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, four villages, likewise missionary, under the care of the Reverend Jesuit Fathers, and three under that of the Reverend Franciscan Missionary Fathers (Jesuits) of Piritu, as shown in the two following notes:—

*Ciudad de Santo Thomé de Guayana.—Nota 9ª.*

*Town of Santo Thomé de Guayana.—Note 9.*

Expresase por menor lo que es el Presidio de Guayana: sus Fortificaciones: Tropa para su Guarnicion, sueldos que goza, y Caxas Reales donde estan asignados, Milicias, Vecindario, Familias, Almas, casas, que contiene, haciendas que poseen, Iglesia, su cura, falta de Ministro que ejerza la Jurisdiccion Ordinaria, y lo que son las Poblaciones nombradas Ciudad de Real Corona, y Ciudad Real.

Showing in detail what the fortress of Guayana is, its fortifications, troops for its garrison, the pay they enjoy, and the Royal Treasuries from which it is drawn; the militia, townsmen, families, individuals and houses which it contains; the farms they possess, the church, its parish priest, the want of a minister to exercise ordinary jurisdiction, and what are the settlements named Ciudad de Real Corona and Ciudad Real.

Dicho ya lo poco que se sabe delo general dela Provincia de Guayana, resta decir lo que son sus Poblaciones, como se ha executado con las dos Provincias de Cumaná y Barcelona.

The little that is known about the Province of Guayana in general having been stated already there remains only to say what are its settlements, as has been done in the case of the two Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona.

El Presidio, ó Ciudad de Santo Thome de Guayana se halla en la altura de 8 grados, y 17 minutos de Longitud septentrional, y en 114 grados, y 17 minutos y medio de longitud. Es capital, y unica provincia (digo Ciudad) de toda esta desconocida Provincia, su temperamento calido, y humedo, y mui mal sano, el terreno poco fertil por ser arenisco esta situada á orilla del Rio Orinoco en lo mas angosto de el, y inmediata á sus primeras vocas ó Islas que le dividen. El ancho que desde las fortificaciones del Presidio á la parte opuesta tiene dicho Rio apenas le alcanza un tiro de cañon de á 24 su fondo de setenta á ochenta Brazas. Sobre la misma orilla, y quasi horizontal á sus aguas tiene el Castillo de San Francisco de Assis, su figura irregular con el mayor frente al Rio, á la parte del Leste hace otro pequeño frente, pero tan vajo que puede ser escalado con mucha facilidad, el frente que mira á el sur le defiende una grande Laguna que esta á su espalda; en dicho frente estan unos cortos almagrenes, Quartel y cuerpo de Guardia para la tropa. El frente que mira á el Oeste es donde esta la Puerta, toda su obra de mamposteria, y cal, á poca costa se puede mejorar, y asegurar esta fortificacion pero con ella no hai que contar si el cerco del Padrastro no se fortifica como se dira. Los Cañones, y sus Calibres, valas, y Polvora que contiene este Castillo se ven en el estado á el perteneciente en el Mapa, en el que son incluso seis cañoncitos poco mas que pedreros, que se hallan colados en el Padrastro, ó Castillo de San Diego como se dira. Los demas utensilios existentes en el de San Francisco se hallan constantes en la primera pieza de autos de visita y corre la de este Presidio desde el folio 229 á 298.

The fortress or town of Santo Thomé de Guayana is situated at the height of 8° and 17' of north latitude, and at 114° and 17½' of longitude, it is the capital and only town of the whole of this neglected province, its climate is warm and moist and very unhealthy, and the land is not very fertile owing to its sandy nature. It is situated on the bank of the River Orinoco at its narrowest part, and close to its first mouth or the islands which divide it. The breadth of the said river from the fortifications of the town to the opposite side is scarcely covered by the shot from a 24-pounder, and its depth is from 70 to 80 fathoms. On the same bank and almost horizontal to the water is the Castle of San Francisco de Assis; its figure is irregular with its larger side to the river; on the east it forms another small side, but so low that it can be scaled with great ease. The side which looks to the south is defended by a large lake which lies at the back. This side contains some small magazines, with quarters and guard-room for the soldiers. The side which looks to the west is the one in which the gate is situated. Its entire construction is of rubble and lime, and this fortification can be improved and made secure at slight cost, but it cannot be relied on unless the hill of the Padrastro is fortified, as will be stated. The guns and their calibres, balls and powder, which this castle contains are shown in the table belonging to it in the map, in which are included six small cannon rather larger than swivel-guns, which are placed in the Padrastro or Castle of San Diego, as will be stated. The rest of the stores in that of San Francisco are shown in the first document of the "Autos de Visita," in which the portion relating to this fortress runs from folios 229 to 298.

Ademas de dicho Castillo de San Lorenzo (digo de San Francisco) tiene el nombrado San Diego ó el Padrastro: Hallase situado sobre un cerro de Peña que domina á la fortificacion de San Francisco y á tan corta distancia como á tiro de fusil.

Besides the said Castie of San Lorenzo (say of San Francisco) it possesses the one called San Diego or the Padrastro; it is situated on a rocky hill which commands the Fort of San Francisco, and at so short a distance as to be within gun-

- A Dicho cerro es el que verdaderamente deve ser fortificado pues solo lo esta en el nombre con el llamado Castillo de San Diego este es un terroncito de quatro frentes iguales construido de Mamposteria y Cal, y sus Parapetos de adoves y barro; tiene montados 6 Pedreros que apenas pueden jugar en el poco terreno que ocupan, y á todo lo dicho se agrega el ser tan bajo que un hombre con poco auxilio de otro puede entrarse sin la menor dificultad por lo que en nada merece el nombre de Castillo, ó Fortificacion siendo asi que en el sitio ventajoso, y unico de todo el Rio, que se pudo fortificar, con seguridad, y poco menos la angostura, y siendolo los dos parages se hace el Rio intraficable: Ala espalda del cerro sobre donde esta dicho Padraсто, hai una gran Laguna igual á la que defiende al Castillo de San Francisco y no facil el desaguarlas, cuyas dos Lagunas ayudan mucho á la intemperie que se padece en la Poblacion plantada á el sur dela Laguna de dicho Padraсто como á tiro de Pedrero de el. A la parte opuesta del Presidio, y en el caño que llaman de Limones esta situado el fuerte nombrado San Bernado su figura un torreón redondo aun todavia por concluir por las razones expuestas á S.M. con fecha de 23 de Setiembre de 1761 Su material de ladrillo y Cal. Dicha fortificacion merece la estimacion que el Padraсто con la diferencia que este deve ser mui fortificado, y aquella abandonada.
- B
- C

En este Presidio y para su custodia mantiene S.M. un Capitan y Comandante, un teniente, dos subtenientes, un Condestable, un Capellan, dos Sargentos de Fusileros, dos Cabos, doce Artilleros, un tambor, y setenta y siete soldados; entre los que hai mui pocos blancos siendo los mas Mulatos, Mestizos, y Negros, unicos que mejor resisten aquel mal sano Clima. Los sueldos que cada uno de estos anualmente gozan, se ve en el correspondiente estado del Mapa, y igualmente su total monto que asciende a 13994 pesos, los que se satisfacen con 14 mil pesos que tiene S.M. asignados en las Reales Cajas de Santa Fée á cuiu Capital pasa un oficial todos los años para su recaudacion, y conduccion hasta el Presidio costeandolo la Guarnicion con mil pesos que le abona como quedo dicho en la nota 1a. Dicho oficial hace este viaje navegando todo el Rio Orinoco hasta entrar en el Meta, el que navega una mitad mas delo que manifiesta el Mapa, y luego Camina por tierra 16, ó 18 dias por agrasimas Serranias hasta la Capital de Santa Fée: Hacese indispensable el aumento de esta Guarnicion por los motivos representados á S.M. con fecha de 27 de Agosto de 1761, tratando dela demolicion del Castillo de Araya, y por lo que igualmente se dira en la siguiente nota.

F

A demas de la Tropa reglada, y pagada esta alistado todo el vecindario que forma una Compañia de Milicias con el numero de 58 hombres de Armas inclusos sus oficiales como se vé en el correspondiente estado del Mapa: Dichos Milicianos son los que mas trabajan en toda la Guarnicion, pues con la tropa reglada son destacados á las Misiones de los R.R. P.P. Capuchinos Catalanes, á

shot. The said hill is the place that really ought to be fortified, for it is only nominally so by the so-called Castle of San Diego. This latter is a small plot with four equal sides built of rubble and lime, having parapets of sun-dried bricks and clay. It has six swivel-guns mounted, which can scarcely play in the small space, for they fill it up, and to all the aforesaid is to be added that it is so low that one man with slight help from another can get into it without the slightest difficulty, wherefore on no account does it deserve the name of castle or fortification, although it is the point of vantage, and the only one on the whole river, which it was possible to fortify securely, and the narrowness is but little less, and when the two places are fortified the river becomes impassable.

At the back of the hill upon which the said Padraсто is situated there is a great lake equal to that which protects the Castle of San Francisco, and it is not easy to drain them; and these two lakes greatly increase the malaria which is prevalent in the settlement made on the south of the lake of the said Padraсто, at about the distance of a gun-shot from it. At the side opposite to the town, and on the creek called Limones, is situated the fort called San Bernardo, having the figure of a large round tower; it is still unfinished for the reasons given to His Majesty under date of the 23rd September, 1761; it is built of brick and lime. The said fortification deserves as much consideration as the Padraсто, with the difference that the latter ought to be strongly fortified and the former abandoned.

In this fortress, and for its custody, His Majesty maintains a Captain and Commandant, a Lieutenant, two second Lieutenants, a constable, a chaplain, two sergeants of fusiliers, two corporals, twelve artillerymen, a drummer, and seventy-seven soldiers, among whom there are very few whites, most of them being mulattoes, half-breeds and negroes, who are the only ones that can well resist that malarious climate. The pay which each of them enjoys yearly is shown in the corresponding statement in the map, and likewise the total, which amounts to 13,994 pesos, which is liquidated by 14,000 pesos, which His Majesty has assigned from the Royal Treasury of Santa Fée, to which capital an official proceeds yearly to collect and bring it to the town, the garrison defraying the expenses with 1,000 pesos, which it credits to him as stated in Note 1. The said official performs this journey by water along the River Orinoco until reaching the Meta, which he navigates about half as far again beyond what is shown in the map, and then travels by land for sixteen to eighteen days, through very rough hilly country to the capital of Santa Fée. The increase of this garrison is absolutely necessary, for the reasons given to His Majesty under date of the 27th August, 1761, when treating of the demolition of the Castle of Araya, and likewise by what will be stated in the following note.

Besides the regular and paid troops, the whole population is enrolled and forms a company of militia to the number of fifty-eight men at arms including the officers, as shown in the corresponding statement of the map. The said militia are the hardest workers in the entire garrison, for with the regulars they are detached to the Missions of the Reverend Catalanian

contener á los Indios en las frecuentes inquietudes que se ofrecen.

Por las expresados autos de visita de este Presidio que como dicho es, corren desde el fol. 229 á 289. se reconoce haver 90 familias incluidas las dela tropa reglada y en todas 535 Almas en cuyo numero son tambien incluidos 113 esclavos: ocupan 66 casas mui reducidas y fabricadas en un Arenal, que esto las continuas aguas lluvias, el mucho calor, y la inmediacion á las Lagunas ocasionan un temperamento mui mal sano, y insufrible al que no es alli natibo á excepcion de los Negros, Mulatos, y Meztizos que resisten mas, y aun algunos se ponen gordos.

Los dichos vécinos poseen 20 Haciendas que se reducen a unos cortos Plantages de Caña, sementeras de Maizes, y algunos pequeños Hatos de ganado mayor los que contienen el numero de 1800 Cabezas de todas especies.

En la expresada ciudad hai una sola Parroquia, su fabrica material es de orcones, y barro, y paja, asistela el Capellan dela tropa que lo es un Capuchino dela Mision de Catalanes, quien goza el sueldo de tal Capellan, y las cortas obenciones de la Parroquia. Con las que á esta pertenecen la quarta decimal que pocos años pasa de 30 pesos, y las limosnas de los vecinos y tropa se mantiene el culto.

En esta ciudad no hay ningun oficio concejil, ni quien exerza la jurisdiccion ordinaria resistiendose á ello aquel comandante por los crecidos costos que ocasiona la residencia; asi solo entiende en las dependencias que alli se ofrece por comision que le despacha el Governador, ante quien ocurren las partes primero.

El Gefe de Esquadra Don Joseph de Iturriaga en virtud de las facultades con que se halla emprendio establecer dos Poblaciones con el nombre de Real, para lo que congrego algunos vagos dispersos á orillas del Orinoco en las Provincias de Caracas y Barcelona, y otros de la Isla Margarita, los que fueren mantenidos algun tiempo á expensas del Real Erario; pero haviendoles cesado los socorros, repasaron el Rio, y se volvieron á sus antiguas havitaciones, bien que dicho Gefe subsiste aun todavia con algunas familias y dependientes de la expedicion en la ciudad Real, la que enteramente se acalara luego que falte dicho Gefe, por las invencibles dificultades que hai para que en parages tan distantes, solos y sin el menor auxilio ni interes que llamen Gentes, puedan subsistir Pueblos aun quando los continuos asaltos de los Indios no los desagan, por lo que no se pueden contar por Poblaciones de esta Provincia.

*Misiones de los RR. PP. Capuchinos Catalanes, de RR. PP. de la Compañía, y de los RR. PP. Franciscos Observantes de Piritu.—Nota 10ª.*

Tratase de los Misioneros Capuchinos Catalanes, principio de sus Misiones: Primer Pueblo que establecieron, los 16 que existen, hombres de Armas, Familias, Almas, Casas, Iglesias, terrenos que ocupan, educacion de los Indios, numero de Religiosos, limosnas que gozan, Hato de Ganado que poseen, y lo mui importante que son estas

Capuchin Fathers to subdue the Indians in the frequent disturbances which occur. A

From the aforesaid "Autos de Visita" of this fortress, which, as already stated, run from folio 229 to 289, it is seen that there are ninety families, including those of the regular troops, and 535 souls in all, in which number 113 slaves are also included. They occupy sixty-six houses, which are very small and are built on a sandy spot, which the constant rains, the great heat and the proximity to the lakes renders very unhealthy and unendurable to any one not a native, with the exception of negroes, mulattoes, and half-breeds, who resist better, and some of whom even grow fat. B

The said settlers own twenty farms, which simply amount to some scanty plantations of sugar, fields of maize, and a few small herds of cattle, containing the number of 1,800 head of every kind.

In the said town there is only one parish church, which is built of poles with clay and straw, it is served by the chaplain of the troops, who is a Capuchin of the Catalonian Mission, and enjoys the salary of such chaplain and the small fees of the parish; with these are to be reckoned the fourteenth, which in few years exceeds 30 pesos, and the alms of the settlers and troops, with which the altar is maintained. C

In this town there is no Councillor, nor any one to exercise ordinary jurisdiction, as the Commandant opposes it on account of the increased expense caused by the residence, so that he only hears the suits which arise there by Commission, which is sent to him by the Governor, to whom the parties have recourse in the first instance.

Commodore Don Joseph de Iturriaga, in virtue of the faculties granted to him, began to establish two settlements bearing the name "Real," and for this purpose he collected some wanderers scattered along the banks of the Orinoco, in the Provinces of Carácas and Barcelona, and others from the Island of Margarita, who were maintained for some time at the expense of the Royal Treasury; but when the supplies ceased they re-crossed the river and returned to their old dwellings, even though the said Commodore still continues to live, with certain families and dependents belonging to the expedition, in Ciudad Real, which place will come altogether to an end directly the said Commodore goes, owing to the insuperable difficulties which prevent the subsistence of villages in places so remote, alone and without either the slightest assistance or objects which may attract people thither, even if the continual attacks of the Indians do not overwhelm them, and for this reason they cannot be reckoned as settlements of this province. D E

*Missions of the Rev. Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, of the Rev. Fathers of the Company of Jesus, and of the Rev. Franciscan Observant Fathers of Piritu.—Note 10.* F

Treating of the Catalonian Capuchin missionaries, the commencement of their Missions, the first village they established, the sixteen which exist, men-at-arms, families, individuals, houses, churches, the lands they occupy, the education of the Indians, the number of monks, the alms they enjoy, the herd of cattle which

- A** Misiones: Igualmente se dice lo que son las de los Jesuitas, y Observantes de Piritu en esta Provincia cuyos tres cuerpos Evangelizan en ella.

En esta Provincia de Guayana es predicado el Evangelio, por tres cuerpos de Mision de distintas Religiones, y son los R.R. P.P. Capuchinos Catalanes los R.R. PP. Jesuitas de la Provincia de Santa Fee: Y los R.R. PP. Observantes de Piritu á cuyo cargo estan todas las Doctrinas y Misiones de la Provincia de Barcelona, como queda dicho de estos tres cuerpos de Mision se tratará en esta nota separadamente y se expresará las pueblos que cada uno tiene á su cargo, y los progresos en ellos

- B**

Los Capuchinos del Reyno de Cataluña man tienen en esta Provincia una Comunidad de Misioneros quienes costeados por el Real erario se transportan desde su Provincia hasta incorporarse en esta Mision: todos los existentes en ella nombran cada tres años su Prelado de Prefecto, pero ni este ni la comunidad estan subordinados al Provincial de Cataluna, y si al de Andalucia su unico Prelado: Esta expresada comunidad exercce su Ministerio con inponderable aplicacion, buen orden, y igual acierto para lo que no reusa ningun trabajo, y mediante esto consigue los felices progresos que se reconocen en las Misiones de su cargo, las que se comenzaron á establecer en el año de 1724 sin embargo de haverlo intentado antes algunos otros Misioneros: Inferese á esto por un libro de Bautismos en el que consta que desde el año de 1664 entraron varios sacerdotes, y en distintos tiempos á la pacificacion, y reduccion de estos Indios, como fueron el Padre Joseph Sompayo Religioso del orden de Santo Domingo el Padre Manuel de la Purificacion Descalzo de San

- C**

Agustin: Los clerigos Don Francisco Roxas, Don Miguel de Angulo; Don Joseph de Figueroa, y el Racionero Don Andres Fernandez; Los Padres Jesuitas Juan de Bergara, Dionisio Mesland, Francisco de Evaciro, é Ignacio cano; Los Capuchinos Catalanes el Padre Angel de Mataró y el Padre Pablo Blanes. A estos dos Capuchinos y demas hicieron los PP. de la Compañia renuncia de dichas Misiones la que autorizó el Governador de la Trinidad Don Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga el año de 1681 como consta de dos Reales Cédulas de 7 de Febrero de 1686, y 29 de Abril de 1687 por

- D**

las que aprueba S. M. la renuncia hecha por las Justicias, y destina a los Religiosos Capuchinos Catalanes para las Misiones de la Provincia de Guayana cuyas dos Cédulas paran en el Archivo dela Comunidad. Desde dicho año de 1687 las tomaron á su cargo y comenzaron a travajar dichos Capuchinos, pero eran tantas las miserias, y muertes de los Religiosos sin ser socorridos en sus desamparos especialment con el reemplazo de los compañeros que iban fallaciendo, que dieron motibo á largas interrupciones, en las que cesaba el Ministerio Apostolico, perdiendose enteramente en ellas quanto se havia adelantado en el bien

- E**

delas Almas, y pacificacion de los naturales.

- F**

En el año de 1723 se hallaba la Mision de Guayana sin suficientes sacerdotes, sin Misiones, y sin medios para introducirse en ellas los pocos Religiosos que havia por falta de alimentos y de limosnas para adquirirlos, pero en dicho año lo-

they feed, and the extreme importance of these Missions. Likewise stating what are those of the Jesuits, and Observants of Piritu in this province; which three bodies are carrying on Mission work therein.

In this Province of Guayana the Gospel is preached by three missionary bodies of separate Orders, namely, the Reverend Catalanian Capuchin Fathers, the Reverend Jesuit Fathers of the Province of Santa Fée, and the Reverend Observant Fathers of Piritu, under whose charge all the classes and Missions of the Province of Barcelona are placed, as already said. These three missionary bodies will be treated of separately in this note, with a statement of the villages which each has under its care and the progress therein.

The Capuchins of the Kingdom of Catalonia maintain in this province a community of missionaries, who are conveyed, at the cost of the Royal Treasury, from their province until they are incorporated in this Mission. All those belonging to it appoint their prelate as Prefect every three years, but neither he nor the community are subject to the Provincial of Catalonia, but to the Provincial of Andalusia, who is their sole Prelate.

This said community exercises its ministry with incalculable application, good order and equal intelligence, and for this object shirks no labour, and thus obtains the successful results which are seen in the Missions under its care. These began to be established in 1724, though some other missionaries had made earlier attempts. This is inferred from a baptismal register, in which it is stated that in 1664 and at various other times, sundry priests came over for the pacification and reduction of these Indians, as, for example, Father Joseph Sompayo, of the Order of Saint Dominic; Father Manuel de la Purificacion, Augustinian; the Clergy, Don Francisco Roxas, Don Miguel de Angulo, Don Joseph de Figueroa, and Prebendary Don Andres Fernandez; the Jesuit Fathers Juan de Bergara, Dionisio Mesland, Francisco de Evaciro and Ignacio Cano; the Catalanian Capuchins Father Angel de Mataró and Father Pablo Blanes. It was in favour of these two Capuchins and the rest that the Fathers of the Society renounced the said Missions, by authority of the Governor of Trinidad, Don Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga, in 1681, as appears from two Royal Cédulas of the 7th February, 1686, and the 29th April, 1687, whereby His Majesty approves the renunciation made by the Jesuits, and appoints the Catalanian Capuchins to the Missions of the Province of Guayana, both of which Cédulas remain in the archives of the community. From the said year 1687 the said Capuchins took them into their charge and began their labours, but so great were the hardships and mortality of the clergy, who were left without succour in their necessities, especially as regards the replacement of the companions who succumbed, that long interruptions were caused, in which the Apostolic ministration ceased, and in which any progress made in the spiritual welfare and pacification of the natives was entirely lost.

In the year 1723 the Mission of Guayana was without sufficient priests, without Missions, and without means to bring into them the few clergy that were available, for want of food and of alms with which to obtain it. But in



graron que algunos devotos, y especialmente los Misioneros de Piritu les diesen y facilitasen el paso de cien reses Bacunas las quales aumentando en competente cantidad, ha sido hasta oy, y son el abasto delas Misiones en las quasi extremas necesidades que padecerian los Indios si les faltasen las carnes y se quisiese sugetarlos a Poblacion lo que se consigue con el atractivo de esta conveniencia que se les propone han de tener para socorrer sus hombres y necesidades, con este principio se comenzo el año de 1724 á fundar la primera Mision con el nombre de la concepcion de Suay, dos leguas tierra adentro del Presidio de Guayana, en el dia tienen plantadas 16 como se dira internandose á el sur 40 leguas desde dicho presidio, que á tantas se halla situada la Mision de Avechica como se reconoce en el Mapa.

A demas de dicha 16 Misiones han perdido 8 ya establecidas, por las varias desgracias que han acaecido de viruelas, sarampion, imbasion de los Caribes, y hostilidad de los Ingleses en el año de 1740 en cuias desgracias han muerto mas de mil Indios, a demas de las perdidas de los Pueblos y Alaxas que todo há causado atrasos considerables, á los que tambien há contribuido lo inefectilbas que han sido las limosnas que S.M. tiene asignadas á estos Misioneros en las Reales Caxas de Caracas; el poco auxilio que han tenido y tienen de Escolta suficiente para custodiar á los Pueblos de las invasiones de los Caribes, y contener á los Poblados en sus borracheras, y desordenes, pues aunque se les facilita alguna de la Guarnicion del Presidio, no es quanta necesitan en los Pueblos en donde deberia hacer repartidos 25, ó, 30 hombres, no todas las veces se pueden dar del dicho Presidio donde no hay mas que la Guarnicion precisa para su custodia: De el de Araya se hace impracticable por mediar 200 leguas, y demas razones expuestas á S.M. en representacion de 27 de Agosto de 1761, relativa á su demolicion por inutil, no siendo de menor consideracion la soledad de todas las Misiones en donde no se encuentra nada de lo que se necesita para la comodidad humana, ni quien lo facilite sino á excesivo costo por lo que los mismos Misioneros con el corto auxilio de los Indios son los Albañiles, carpinteros y demas oficios para la formacion de los Pueblos y demas obras en ellos, á excepcion de las Iglesias que no les es tan facil su fabrica. para las que tampoco tienen Campanas, Ornamentos, y demas muebles, ni de donde costearlos, por lo que solo tres de dichos Pueblos las tienen.

Las 16 Misiones establecidas en el dia son las de Capui, Altagracia, Suay, Amaruca, Coroni, Aripuco, Aguacagua, Murucuri, San Joseph de Leonisa, Guarimana, Carapo, Miamo, Guazaipate, Palmar, Avechica, y Placca [Piacoa], como se manifiesta en el Mapa, y en su correspondiente estado se reconoce los hombres de Armas familias, Almas, Casas, Iglesias de cada una, y las 16 contienen 1081 hombres de Armas 1031 familias, 4392 Almas, 408 casas y las Iglesias.

Estas Misiones estan las mas de ellas situadas en terrenos fertilisimos, frescos, sanos, y abund-

the said year they induced certain devout persons, and especially the missionaries of Piritu, to give them, and facilitate the transport of, 100 head of cattle; and these, increasing to a sufficient quantity, have been up to the present day, and are now, the stores of the Missions for those dire necessities which the Indians would suffer if their supplies of meat should fail, and if it should be desired to establish them in a settlement, this may be done by the inducement of the advantage which is set before them that they would have wherewith to relieve their hunger and necessities. With this beginning a start was made in the year 1724 by founding the first Mission under the name of La Concepcion de Suay, 2 leagues inland from the Fortress of Guayana. At the present day they have sixteen, as will be shown, extending 40 leagues to the south from the said fortress, for at such distance is situated the Mission of Avechica, as shown in the map.

Besides the said sixteen Missions they have lost eight already established, from various misfortunes which have occurred, namely, small-pox, measles, invasion of the Caribs and hostility of the English in the year 1740, in which disasters more than 1,000 Indians perished, besides villages and property. All this has caused considerable delays, to which the insufficiency of the alms which His Majesty has assigned to these missionaries from the Royal Treasury of Carácas has likewise contributed, as has also the small help they have received, and do receive, in escort, sufficient to protect the villages from the attacks of the Caribs, and to restrain the inhabitants in their drunkenness and excesses; for although some assistance is granted to them from the garrison of the fortress, it is not as much as is required in the villages, in which there should be twenty-five or thirty men distributed, for they cannot always be spared from the said fortress, where there are no more than the garrison requires for its protection; from that of Araya it is rendered impracticable because it is 200 leagues off, and for other reasons pointed out to His Majesty in the representation of the 27th August, 1761, relative to its demolition as useless; of no less consideration being the isolation of all the Missions, in which none of the necessaries for human convenience are found, neither any one to procure them save at exorbitant cost, and for this reason the missionaries themselves, with the meagre assistance of the Indians, are the masons, carpenters, and other artisans for the construction of the villages and the rest of the works therein, except the churches, the building of which they do not find so easy, also they have no bells, ornaments and other furniture for them, nor means to pay for them, and this is why only three of the said villages have them.

The sixteen Missions at present established are those of Capui, Altagracia, Suay, Amaruca, Coroni, Aripuco, Aguacagua, Murucuri, San Joseph de Leonisa, Guarimana, Carapo, Miamo, Guazaipate, Palmar, Avechica, and Piacoa, as shown in the map; and in the statement corresponding are to be found the men at arms, families, individuals, houses and churches of each; the sixteen containing 1,081 men-at-arms, 1,031 families, 4,392 souls, 408 houses, and the churches.

These Missions are for the most part situated in country that is very fertile, cool, healthy,

**A** dantes de aguas, y igualmente provistos de todos lo frutos propios á la manutencion de los Indios á excepcion de la de Suay, Aripuco, Caroni, y Piacoa, que ni son sanos saludables, ni abundantes de viveres á causa de su inmediacion al Orinoco y terrenos areniscos.

Las casas de todos los Pueblos estan fabricadas en simetria con la extension y comodidad suficiente para los Indios. Las tres Iglesias aunque pobres mui aseditas, y bastantemente capaces, y lo mismo la casa del Padre inmediata á la Iglesia, junto á la

**B** del Padre hay un torreón hecho de maderas y barro, y cubierto de paja en donde tienen puesto dos ó tres Pedreros: A dicho torreón casa, y Iglesia defiende una cerca de estacas, suficiente muro para defensa de los Caribes, sino vienen acompañados de Olandeses, para quienes sirven los pedreros, si hai en el Pueblo quien los maneje, y el ruido de estos tambien, pone temor á los Caribes, sin atreberse á llegar al Pueblo, y mucho menos á la estacada que defiende el torreón donde se guarecen las Mugeres, y Ninos, y aun los Indios, si las fuerzas de los enemigos son superiores, ó no dan lugar para ponerse en defensa con sus flechas.

**C**

La educacion de los Indios no en todos los Pueblos es igual, pues en unos aun no son Bautizados por ser extrahidos del Monte, incapaces de educacion christiana, y solo en caso de necesidad son socorridos por el Santo Bautismo, pero este se subministra á todos sus hijos que nacen en el Pueblo, ó bienen chiquitos del monte. Otros son ya Christianos pero haverseles podido quitar la muchedumbre de vicios de ellos comunes, y unos,

**D** y otros dichos desnudos, asi por su rusticidad, como por la imposibilidad que hai en contraherles las precisas ropas, no haciendo poco dichos Padres en proveerlos de erramientas para los labores de sus conucos. Quatro á cinco Pueblos de los mas antiguas se hallan vestidos mediante el buen gobierno de los Misioneros, quienes recogen con gran quenta y razon los Cazabes sobrantes en ellos, los que remiten á el Reyno de Guayana en donde se consumen, y con su importe provehen de ropas el Pueblo de donde sacan dicho cazabes, cuijo arbitrio no hai con los mas distantes de dicho Presidio por la ninguno utilidad que queda

**E** con el mayor costo de la conduccion. Los Indios de estos cinco Pueblos estan mui bien instruidos en la doctrina Christiana, y bastantemente inteligentes en el Idioma Castellano: Muchos de ellos impuestos en la Musica á la que con arreglo tocan varios instrumentos con abilidad mas que de Indios. Estos son destinados al servicio de la Iglesia en donde solemnizan las funciones con edificacion; y en fin estan todas estas Misiones proporcionalmente establecidas, y gobernadas con una mui particular armonia, economica y educacion, por lo que en la visita de ellas no hubo nada que notar que no fuese mui notable por que en el

**F** Nombre del Rey Nuestro Señor dio el Governador las gracias á la comunidad persuadiendola á la continuacion en tan Santo Ministerio, como consta de la 3a. pieza de autos de visita de dichas Misiones.

and abounding in streams, and equally well provided with all the products suitable for the maintenance of the Indians, with the exception of those of Suay, Aripuco, Caroni and Piacoa, which are neither healthy nor wholesome, nor well supplied with provisions, on account of their proximity to the Orinoco and the sandy regions.

The houses in all the villages are built conformably to the extent and convenience sufficient for the Indians. The three churches, although poor, are very neat and quite large enough, and the same may be said of the Padre's house adjoining the church. Close to the Padre's house there is a large tower, built of beams and clay, and roofed with thatch, in which they have placed two or three swivel-guns. The said tower, house, and church are defended by a hedge of stakes, a sufficient wall to keep off the Caribs, unless they come accompanied by the Dutch, against whom the swivel-guns are useful, if there is any one in the village who can manage them, and their noise, too, frightens the Caribs, so that they do not venture to come near the village or still less near the stockade which protects the tower where the women and children are kept, and also the Indians if the enemy are in superior force, or give them no opportunity of standing on their defence with their arrows.

The education of the Indians is not alike in all the villages, for in some they are not yet baptized, because they have been brought in from the forests, are incapable of receiving Christian education, and are only succoured by Holy Baptism in cases of necessity, but it is administered to all their children who are born in the village, or come from the forests while quite small. Others are Christians, indeed, but it has [not] been possible to take away the multitude of their customary vices, and both sorts go naked, partly on account of their simplicity and partly owing to the impossibility of obtaining the necessary clothing for them, for the said Fathers have no slight task in providing them with implements for the labours of their farms. Four or five of the oldest villages are clothed, owing to the excellent administration of the missionaries, who collect with much calculation and reckoning the surplus cassava therein and send it to the Kingdom of Guayana, where it is consumed, and with the money they supply clothing to the village from which they obtain the said cassava; but this plan cannot be pursued with those villages which are furthest from the said fortress because no profit remains, owing to the greater cost of conveyance. The Indians of these five villages are very well instructed in the Christian doctrine, and sufficiently conversant, with the Castilian tongue. Many of them are instructed in music and play several instruments, with ability beyond that of Indians generally. These are appointed to the service of the church, in which they celebrate the functions to edification; and lastly all these Missions are established in a similar manner and governed with particular harmony, economy, and training, so that when they were inspected there was nothing to take note of that was not very excellent, and therefore, in the name of the King our Lord, the Governor, thanked the community and encouraged it to continue its holy ministry, as appears from the 3rd section of the "Autos de Visita" of the said Missions.

Los Religiosos existentes al tiempo dela visita son 15 incluso un Ermano Lego que sirve de enfermero; cortisimo numero de sujetos para lo mucho que tienen que trabajar asi en el cuidado de los Pueblos, como en la conquista, y nuebos establecimientos.

A cada Religioso Misionero tiene S. M. asignado por via de limosna 150 pesos al año, librados en las Reales caxas de Caríacas, las que deven á la comunidad 32,000 pesos segun la certificacion dada por el prefecto de ella que se halla en dicha tercera pieza de Autos, por cuio atraso de limosnas han padecido y padecen los Religiosos extremas necesidades.

Por la citada certificacion consta tener el Hato de la comunidad de 14 á 16 mil pesos de Ganado Bacuno con el que mantiene los Pueblos y Misioneros en ellos. Dicho Hato de ganado le han ido situando á proporcion del terreno que han ido ganando, y en el dia se halla en la Mision de Guarimna, cuías campañas y serranias son abundantisimas de Yerbas y aguas, y de temperamento fresco motibos por que se multiplica el ganado increíblemente.

Si S. M. se dignase asignar la limosna de los Misioneros en otras caxas donde sea mas efectiba, y suficiente á mantener 25, ó, 30 Religiosos proveer esta Mision de las Campanas, y ornamentos que previene la Ley, y una escolta de 25, ó, 30 hombres, en mui pocos años se reconoceran grandes aumentos, y mucho mas si, como lo pretende la comunidad librase S. M. igual limosna que a los Misioneros á 6, u 8 hermanos Legos que fuesen Carpinteros, Albañiles, Herrero, y texedor para que en estas Artes impusiesen á los Indios especialmente en el de texedores, como que se aprovecharian y vestirian del mucho algodón que alli se coge, y veneficacen poco en la fabrica de Hamacas que saben hacer dichos Indios, aunque á costa de mucho trabajo y tiempo por falta de instrumentos.

Estas Misiones son importantisimas al servicio de Dios, y del Rel, pues ademas del bien espiritual que consiguen los Naturales, sirve de resguardo al Presidio de Guayana quien tambien proveen Viveres, y de antemural á las Olandeses, que por quantos medios pueden procuran situarse en lo interior de esta Provincia, y bocas de Orinoco Clave de estos bastos Dominios sobre cuio assumpto se hacen los correspondientes informes á S. M.

A el cargo de los R. R. P. P. Jesuitas del Reyno de Santa Fee se hallan los Misioneros establecidos en los Rios Meta, y casanare que manifiesta el Mapa, cuías Misiones pertenecen á la Governacion de Santa Fee, á excepcion de las quatro establecidas á el sur del Orinoco que son: Encaramanada: Urana: Carichana: y Raudal, y pertenecen á la Provincia de Guayana aunque establecidas y cuidas por dichos P. P. Jesuitas. Los expresados quatro Pueblos se hallan mui mal situados por razon de terrenos areniscos, y poco fertiles á las orillas de dicho Orinoco, por cuia inmediacion son tambien poco sanos, pero la necesidad de contemporizar con los Indios que se pueblan no permite por á hora otra cosa.

The clergy existing at the time of the A visitation were fifteen, including one lay brother who serves as nurse; a very scanty number of persons for the amount of work they have to do, both in the care of the villages, in acquisitions, and in new establishments.

To each missionary friar His Majesty has assigned by way of alms 150 pesos a-year, payable from the Royal Treasury of Caríacas, which owes to the community 32,000 pesos, according to the certificate given by the chief officer thereof, which is to be found in the said 3rd section of the Autos; and through these arrears of alms the clergy have suffered and B do suffer extreme necessities.

From the said certificate it appears that the cattle farm of the community contains 14,000 to 16,000 pesos worth of cattle, with which it keeps up the villages and the missionaries in them. The said cattle farm has been shifted as they continued to gain ground, and at present it is in the Mission of Guarimna, the hills and plains of which abound in grass and streams, and the temperature is cool, so that the cattle multiply to an incredible degree.

If His Majesty should be pleased to make the C alms of the missionaries payable from some other Treasury where they might be more effective, and sufficiently large to maintain twenty-five or thirty clergy, to provide this Mission with the bells and ornaments which are ordered by law, and with an escort of twenty-five or thirty men, a great increase would be seen in very few years, and a still greater one if, as the community maintains, His Majesty were to grant alms, equal to those given to the missionaries, to six or eight lay brothers, who should be carpenters, masons, smith, and weaver, so that the Indians might be instructed in those D arts, especially in that of weaving, and take advantage of, and clothe themselves with, the abundance of cotton which is gathered there, and which is turned to but slight account in the manufacture of hammocks, which the said Indians know how to make, though at the cost of much time and labour for want of implements.

These Missions are of the highest importance to the service of God and of the King, for besides the spiritual benefit gained by the natives, they serve as suburbs to the fortress of Guayana, which they likewise supply with provisions, and as a bulwark against the Dutch, who endeavour by every means in their power to settle E in the interior of this province and at the mouths of the Orinoco, the key of these vast dominions, on which matter due reports are being made to His Majesty.

Under the care of the Reverend Jesuit Fathers of the Kingdom of Santa Fée are the missionaries established on the Rivers Meta and Casanare, as shown in the map; and their Missions belong to the Government of Santa Fée, with the exception of the four established on the south of the Orinoco, which are Encaramanada, Urana, Carichana, and Raudal; these F belong to the Province of Guayana, although established and cared for by the said Jesuit Fathers. The said four villages are very badly situated, for the lands on the banks of the said Orinoco are sandy and not very fertile, also owing to their proximity to the river they are rather unhealthy, but the necessity of meeting the views of the Indians who dwell there does not, for the present, admit of any other course.

A Lo distantes que estan estos Pueblos de la comunicacion y trato de los Españoles, los tiene totalmente ignorantes del Idioma Castellano, pero en todo lo demas instruidos con la prolixidad propia de los Misioneros, y quanto permite lo moderno de estas quatro Misiones.

Por los Padrones que presentó al tiempo de la visita el Padre Manuel Roman Superior de ellas, y demas diligencias de visita que se hallan en la 3<sup>a</sup> Pieza de Autos y corren las de estas Misiones desde el folio 71 á 76 consta haver en las quatro citadas, 160 hombres de armas, 1,423 almas, 61 casas, 4 Iglesias y las Alajas en ellas, consta asimismo el buen orden de los Pueblos, el tiempo que tienen de fundados, y el methodo de instruir á sus Indios.

B En cada uno de dichos Pueblos hay un Religioso Misionero, á quienes se les dá la correspondiente limosna en las caxas de Santa Fee, como á los demas empleados en los Rios Meta, y Casanare, y la Escolta que resguarda estas Misiones custodia tambien los quatro Pueblos en la Provincia de Guayana, Dicha Escolta consta de 48 Plazas y un Capitan Gazando este 995 pesos de sueldo, y cada soldado 132 pesos que son pagadas en las Reales Caxas de Santa Fee: Los progresos de los Jesuitas en la Provincia de Guayana iran mui lentos respecto de los muchos Indios que tiene que conquistar, y pacificar en los expresados Rios Meta, y casanare, y sus inmediatos territorios, por lo que con dificultad se podran alejar á la Provincia de Guayana, y internarse en ella donde se halla la mayor copia de Indios, y no á las orillas del Orinoco que por mui enfermas son inhabitables y sus terrenos poco á proposito para poblaciones, bien que no se puede internar si á dichas Orillas no se forman primero algunos Pueblos; los que C oy hay una y otra banda dicho Rio mas sirben de biga para resguardar las Misiones de Meta de los caribes que navegan el Orinoco, que para el fin de internarse en dicha Provincia de Guayana.

Todas las Doctrinas y Misiones de la Provincia de Barcelona estan al cuidado de los RR PP. observantes del Piritu como dicho queda en la 7a Nota; pero no teniendo ya Indios que conquistar y pacificar en dicha Provincia por estar todos poblados en los terminos que asi mismo quedo espuesto en la expresada nota, pasaron los Misioneros al Orinoco y en el sitio nombrado Muitaco perteneciente á la Provincia de Guayana formaron una casa para primer aloxamiento despues han establecido los Pueblos nombrados Platanal Atapirire, y Guazaiparo. Dichos tres Pueblos son comprendidos en los 17 de Mision de la expresada Provincia de Barcelona, asi en los autos de visita como en el estado del Mapa donde mas brevemente se reconoce el numero de Almas que F contiene cada uno de ellos. Hallandose quasi abandonados por los Misioneros á causa de no tener sujetos que destinar á la Provincia de Guayana, sin que hagan notable falta en la de Barcelona para la que aun no hay operarios suficientes, y aun quando los huviera no seria facil emplearlos en la otra banda del Orinoco por no tener con que subsistir, efecto de lo incobrables que en las Reales caxas de Carícas son las limosnas asignadas á estos Misioneros, quienes en el dia al-

The distance of these villages from communication and traffic with the Spaniards, keeps them entirely ignorant of the Castilian tongue, but in everything else they are instructed with the liberality characteristic of the missionaries, and as far as the recent date of these four Missions allows.

The censuses which Father Manuel Ramon, their Superior, presented at the time of their visitation, and the further investigations which are found in the 3rd Section of the Autos, fol. 71 to 76, show that there were in these four said Missions 160 men at arms, 1,423 souls, 61 houses, and 4 churches, with their ornaments, and show, likewise, the good order of the villages, the time they have been established, and the method of instructing the Indians.

In each of the said villages there is a missionary friar, to whom a similar amount of alms from the Treasury of Santa Fée is given, as to the others employed on the Rivers Meta and Casanare, and the escort appropriated to these Missions likewise protects the four villages in the Province of Guayana. The said escort consists of forty-eight men and a captain, the latter receiving 995 pesos for his pay, and each soldier 132 pesos, which are paid from the Royal Treasury of Santa Fée. The progress of the Jesuits in the Province of Guayana will be very slow, owing to the number of Indians they must overcome and pacify on the said Rivers Meta and Casanare and in the surrounding territory, and consequently they will find it difficult to get far away from the Province [? fortress] of Guayana and penetrate into the interior, where the greater abundance of Indians is found, and not on the banks of the Orinoco, which are so unhealthy as to be uninhabitable, and where the land is ill-suited for settlements. But it is impossible to penetrate into the interior unless some villages are first of all formed on the said banks; for those which at present exist on either bank of the said river serve more as a barrier to protect the Missions of the Meta from the attacks of the Caribs who navigate the Orinoco, than for the purpose of penetrating into the interior of the said Province of Guayana.

All the Doctrinas and Missions of the Province of Barcelona are under the charge of the Reverend Observant Fathers of Piritu, as already stated in Note 7; but as they have no more Indians to subdue and pacify in the said province, seeing that they are all settled in villages, as likewise stated in the said note, the missionaries proceeded to the Orinoco, and having built a house for their first settlement at the place called Muitaco, belonging to the Province of Guayana, they afterwards established the villages called Platanal, Atapirire and Guazaiparo. The said three villages are included in the seventeen missionary villages of the said Province of Barcelona, both in the "Autos de Visita," and in the statement belonging to the map, in which is shown more briefly the number of souls which each of them contains. They are almost abandoned by the missionaries, because they have none whom they can appoint to the Province of Guayana, without causing a serious deficiency in that of Barcelona, for which there are not even now sufficient workers; and even if they were forthcoming it would not be easy to employ them on the other side of the Orinoco, for want of the means of maintaining them;

canzan 81,605 pesos. Si dichas limosnas se le facilitasen, y una Escolta como se ha expuesto á S. M. con fecha de 27 de Agosto de 1761 tratando de la inutilidad del Castillo de Araya, no hai duda que este cuerpo de Mision podria trabajar con mas utilidad que la que se reconoce en el dia, como se informa á S. M. en representacion separada.

Interim S. M. toma providencia en orden á dicha Escolta se provee con 12 hombres de la Guarnicion de Cumaná á fin de que no se acaben de perder los citados tres Pueblos, pero la distancia de 60 á 70 leguas que median no permiten la continuacion de este Destacamento sin que resulten las graves dificultades expresadas en la citada representacion de 27 de Agosto.

Si esta comunidad con igual conducta, caridad y eficacia á la de los R.R. P.P. Capuchinos Catalanes, trabajase en esta Provincia ademas del bien espiritual que conseguirian muchisimos Indios que la havitan se tomaria de ella mas conocimiento que el que actualmente se tiene, y se evitaria el que los Portugueses tal vez se vengan internando para el Norte por no haber quien se lo impida, ni aun quien de noticia de los establecimientos que bendrán formando, y ademas de lo dicho se aseguraria el Rio Orinoco el que hace nabegables los demas hasta el centro de estas Provincias.

Estos tres dichos cuerpos de Mision tienen hecho entresi compromiso del terreno que cada uno de ellos debe ocupar cuyo compromiso autorizaron los Gobernadores Don Carlos de Sucre Don Martin Arredondo en el año de 1734 el que aprobó S. M. como expone el Padre Gumilla en su Orinoco ilustrado cap. 8o. fol. I y consta de la Real cedula que se halla en el Archivo de este Gobierno, y son : Desde las bocas de Orinoco á la Angostura de este de los Padres Capuchinos Catalanes : desde dicha Angostura á el Rio Caura ó el Cuchiborro de los Misioneros Observantes ; todo de Jesuitas, debiendo unos y otros caminar siempre al sur unico medio de poblar y conocer esta extensísima Provincia pues el establecer poblaciones como la ha intentado Don Joseph de Iturriaga se hace insuperable por las distancias que median de dilatados desiertos llanos entre las nuevas fundaciones, y las ya establecidas de Españoles á el Norte y costa en las Provincias de Carácas, y Barcelona, y mucho mas de la de Santa Fee, siendo el unico, y mas pronto recurso el Presidio de Guayana que con tantos años de fundado no se ha logrado en el ningunos adelantamientos pero con todo por esta via aunque á sumo costo pudieran socorrerse las tales poblaciones por la mas facilidad y conveniencia que traen las conducciones por agua y á desde Barcelona y Carácas no es tan facil ni barato ; y mucho menos quando el terreno nunca será Plata por no tener de que hacerla aquellas poblaciones, y si efectos quando los consigan utiles, que en el dia solo se podrán dedicar á la crianza de Ganados de que abundan todos los llanos, y en Guayana ni tienen consumo ni estimacion, con que con estas tan cortas ventajas que ofrecen los terrenos, pocos acaudalados que pueden fomentarlos se situarán en ellos y por consecuencia siempre vendrán á desazerse como dicho queda en la nota antecedente.

this is the result of the impossibility of obtaining the alms assigned to the missionaries from the Royal Treasury of Carácas, which alms now amount to 31,605 pesos. If the said alms could be obtained for them, and an escort as represented to His Majesty under date of the 27th August, 1761, when treating of the uselessness of the Castle of Araya, there is no doubt that this missionary body would be able to work to greater advantage than is seen at the present day, as pointed out to His Majesty in a separate Report.

In the meantime His Majesty orders that the said escort be furnished with twelve men from the garrison of Cumaná, so that the said three villages may not perish ; but the distance of 60 to 70 leagues which intervenes does not allow the continuance of this detachment without causing the great difficulties pointed out in the said Report of the 27th August.

If this community were to labour in this province with management, charity and efficiency equal to those of the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, besides the spiritual benefit which would accrue to the numerous Indians who inhabit it, we should have much more knowledge of it than we actually possess, and should prevent the Portuguese from occasionally pressing in on the north where there is no one to prevent them, nor even any one to give notice of the settlements they will continue to make ; and in addition to all this the River Orinoco would be secured, which renders the rest navigable up to the centre of these provinces.

These three said missionary bodies have made a partition among themselves of the territory which each of them is to occupy, and this partition has been sanctioned by the Governors. Don Carlos de Sucre and Don Martin Arredondo, in the year 1734, and approved by His Majesty, as Father Gumilla shows in his "Orinoco Ilustrado," cap. 8, fol. 12, and as appears from the Royal Cedula which exists in the archives of this Government. They are:—

From the mouths of the Orinoco to its "Angostura" belongs to the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers ; from the said "Angostura" to the River Caura or the Cuchivero, to the Observant missionaries ; all the remainder to the Jesuits ; each body pressing constantly southwards, which is the only method of settling, and becoming acquainted with, this most extensive province. For to establish settlements, as Don Joseph de Iturriaga tried to do, is rendered impossible owing to the long stretches of desert plain which lie between the new foundations and the Spanish settlements already established in the north and on the coast, in the provinces of Carácas and Barcelona, and the still greater distance from that of Santa Fee ; their sole and readiest resource being the fortress of Guayana, which, though founded so many years ago, has not made the slightest progress. Yet, nevertheless, by this way, although at very great cost, those settlements might be assisted, owing to the greater facility and convenience of water carriage, for from Barcelona and Carácas it is neither so easy nor so cheap, and it is still more impossible to establish them, seeing that the country will never be a La Plata, because those settlements have no means of making it so, though they have riches which might be obtained, but which, when the time comes, can only be employed in cattle-rearing,

A

and all the plains are full of cattle, which, in Guayana, are neither consumed nor in demand. So that with the very scanty advantages offered by these territories few rich men who could afford improvements, will settle in them, and consequently they will always continue to deteriorate, as already stated in the preceding note.

*Valor de las Rentas Reales y Gastos de la Real Hacienda.—Nota 11<sup>a</sup>.*

*Value of the Royal Revenue and Treasury Expenditure.—Note 11.*  
[Not translated.]

B

*Resumen General.—Nota 12<sup>a</sup>.*

*General Summary (Statistical).—Note 12.*  
[Not translated.]

*Comercio ilícito en la Gobernación de Cumaná.—Nota 13<sup>a</sup>.*

*Illicit Trade in the Government of Cumaná.—Note 13.*

Dase una sucinta noticia de lo que anual y clandestinamente se extrahe de la Gobernación y enlo que consiste su ilícito comercio.

Giving a summary account of what is yearly exported clandestinely from the Government and in what its illicit trade consists.

C Para hacer manifiesto el comercio ilícito y enlo que consiste segun el actual estado de la Gobernación, se hara en esta nota memoria de lo que por menor queda dicho en las antecedentes en orden á los frutos que se producen en estas provincias y permiten extracción por no consumibles en ellas.

In order to show the illicit trade, and where-in it consists, according to the actual condition of the Government, a summary will be made in this note of what has been stated in detail in the foregoing ones, with respect to the commodities which are produced in these provinces, and admit of being exported through not being consumable therein.

D En la Nota 5<sup>a</sup> tratando de la Provincia de Barcelona queda dicho por menor los frutos que en ella se cosechan y son ademas de los consumibles en la Provincia los ganados que se crían, sus llanos, queda asimismo dicho que anualmente, se matan en las inmediaciones dela Ciudad ocho, ó nueve mil pesos con solo el fin de tasajear sus carnes, y aprovecharse del cuero y sebo, cuílos dos efectos se acopian en dicha ciudad y igualmente los que se conducen de los llanos de su Provincia procedidos de las matanzas que en ellos se hacen.

In Note 5, treating of the Province of Barcelona, the products obtained therein have been stated in detail, and it has been shown that the cattle reared in its plains are more than sufficient for consumption in the province. It has been likewise stated that 8,000 or 9,000 pesos worth are slaughtered annually in the neighbourhood of the city, with the sole object of salting the flesh, and utilizing the hide and tallow, for these two products are bought up in the said city, as are also the same products when brought from the plains of the province, being the produce of the slaughtering done in them.

E De suerte que anualmente se pueden sacar de la expresada Ciudad de Barcelona 11 ó 12 mil cueros, y 14 ó 15 mil arrobas de sebo de uno y otro efecto, y con lexitimos despachos se extraen para las islas de Santo Domingo, Puertorrico, Margarita, y ciudad de Cumaná como 4 mil cueros, y de 5 mil á 6 mil arrobas de sebo quedando sobrantes en la de Barcelona de 7 á 8 mil cueros, y igual numero de arrobas de sebo cuías dos partidas se extraen clandestinamente como se dirá.

In this way there may be taken yearly from the said city of Barcelona 11,000 or 12,000 hides, and 14,000 or 15,000 arrobas of tallow. Both products are exported to the Islands of Santo Domingo, Puerto Rico, Margarita, and to the city of Cumaná by legitimate conveyance, to the extent of about 4,000 hides, and from 5,000 to 6,000 arrobas of tallow, leaving in the city of Barcelona from 7,000 to 8,000 hides, and an equal number of arrobas of tallow, which two quantities are exported clandestinely, as will be shown.

F En la Nota 3<sup>a</sup> tratando de las Haciendas de Cacao de la Provincia de Cumaná, y en el resumen general de la Nota 12 queda manifiesto las fanegas que anualmente se cosechan en esta provincia que son 681, segun las relaciones de los hacendados, pero mediante prudente calado se considera de 800 á 1,000 fanegas la total cosecha. No se hara aqui la quenta con las mil del citado calado, ni los 681 de las certificaciones y si con las de un medio proporcional que será el 800.

In Note 3, treating of the cacao estates of the Province of Cumaná, and in the general summary of Note 12, are shown the number of fanegas gathered yearly in that province, namely, 681, according to the reports of the planters, but upon careful calculation the total harvest is reckoned at from 800 to 1,000 fanegas. Neither the 1,000 of the said calculation, nor the 681 of the returns will be taken into account here, but the mean proportional which will be the 800.

Ciento y cinquenta de estas se consumen en la Provincia y la Isla de la Margarita, igual cantidad se extrae con lexitimos despachos para las Islas de Santo Domingo y Puerto Rico, y quedan sobrantes en la Provincia 500 poco mas ó menos, que como

150 of these are consumed in the province and in the Island of Margarita, an equal quantity is exported legitimately to the Islands of Santo Domingo and Puerto Rico, and there remain in the province 500, more or less, which,



los cueros y sevo de la de Barcelona se extrahen furtivamente.

En la Nota 11, y en el resumen general de la 12 constan los caudales del Real erario que se distribuyen entre individuos de esta Governacion y son 15,229 pesos, en que estan pensionadas las Caxas de ella; vienen de las de Mexico para la Guarnicion de Araya, 41,360; y de las de Santa Fée para las del Presidio de Guayana, 14,000 pesos; cuias tres partidas montan 70,589. Sin incluir las demas situaciones asignadas en Carácas y Mexico que son incobrables por las razones expuestas en las dos citadas notas, ni tampoco las limosnas asignadas en las de Carácas á los tres cuerpos de Mision de esta Governacion quienes, ó no las cobran, ó es en efectos lo poco que perciben.

De los 70,589 pesos unica cantidad que se distribue, se buelben á recaudar en caxas como queda dicho en la Nota 11 35,508 pesos y quedan sobrantes en el Pays 35,081 pesos de los que pasan á la Provincia de Carácas de 5 á 6 mil para proveerse estos naturales de los comestibles y ropas que no traen los Olandeses, que rebajados de los 35,081 pesos sobrantes en la Governacion quedan 29,081 pesos sobrantes, que estos y los demas que producen los frutos que se navegan á Santo Domingo y Puerto Rico se extrahen clandestinamente de esta Governacion, á menos de que no haya registro de España en ella como al presente sucede, quien recoge todos los cacaos, los cueros que necesita y algunos pesos, con cuió cargo devera salir por el mes de Agosto proximo venidero de 62 para el Puerto de Cadiz.

De lo dicho resulta que lo que anualmente se extrae de la Governacion de Cumaná 8 mil cueros, 8 mil arrobas de sevo, 500 fanagas de cacao, y de 29 á 32 mil pesos en plata, y mas algunos ganados bacunos, y mulares, y los viveres en carnes de tasajo cazabes, y frutos que necesitan las embarcaciones que trafican en la costa.

Las que la frecuentan y extrahen los efectos y plata arriba dichos son comunmente á los Olandeses, y Indios de la Isla de Curazao. Las tripulaciones y capitanes que las manejan regularmente son Españoles ó naturales de todas estas provincias en que se incluyen los Negros, Mulatos, y Mestizos, y muchos de los delas tres clases esclavos fugitivos.

Los efectos que traen para cambio dela plata y expresados generos son erramientas del campo, machetes, cuchillos, lienzos de algodón, y lino, algunas bagatelas de poco precio, y todo sumamente ordenario, y la peor calidad.

En los tratos y contratos no tienen ninguna regularidad, y si mil infamias que solo unas gentes de tan mal vivir pudieran cometerlas, bien que los de estos Paises no dejan de corresponderles con otras tantas siempre que pueden.

Los primeros que en la Governacion se exercitan en extraer de ella la Plata y efectos dichos, y en introducir los generos que en cambio les dan los Olandeses, son los Ricos llamanse ricos segun el Pais; pero ninguno de ellos puede entrar en la dependencia mas ventajosa si de su propio caudal hubiese de dar 6 mil pesos efectivos aunque tenga

like the hides and tallow of the Province of A Barcelona, are exported clandestinely.

In Note 11 and in the general summary of Note 12, are shown the sums which are distributed from the Royal Treasury among individuals in this Government, amounting to 15,229 pesos, and for this amount its Exchequer is liable; received from the Treasury of Mexico for the garrison of Araya 41,360 pesos, and from that of Santa Fée for the garrisons of the fortress of Guayana 14,000 pesos; the three sections amounting to 70,589 pesos. Without including the other appointments assigned on Carácas and Mexico, which are irrecoverable, B according to the reasons given in the two aforesaid notes, nor the alms assigned on the Treasury of Carácas to the missionary bodies of this Government, which they either do not collect at all, or receive in kind the little that is obtainable.

From the 70,589 pesos, the only amount that is distributed, 35,508 pesos are returned to be kept in the Treasury as already stated in Note 11, and there remain over, in the country, 35,081 pesos, of which from 5,000 to 6,000 go to the Province of Carácas, to supply the natives with the food and clothing that is not brought by the Dutch; these being deducted from the 35,081 pesos remaining in the Government, C there are left 29,081 pesos, and these, together with what are yielded by the produce shipped to Santo Domingo and Puerto Rico, are exported clandestinely from this Government, unless there is a Register from Spain here, as is the case at present, to collect all the cacaos, as many hides as may be required, and a certain number of pesos, with which cargo it ought to set sail in the month of August next 1762, bound for the port of Cadiz.

From the foregoing it results that the annual export from the Government of Cumaná is 8,000 hides, 8,000 arrobas of tallow, 500 fanegas of cacao, and from 29,000 to 32,000 pesos in silver, and in addition some cattle and mules, and the provisions, dried beef, cassava, and fruits required by the vessels trading on the coast.

Those which visit it and take away the goods and silver above mentioned usually belong to the Dutch, and the Indians of the Island of Curazao. The crews and captains who manage them are generally Spaniards or natives of all E these provinces, among whom are included the negroes, mulattoes, and half-breeds, and many in these three classes are fugitive slaves.

The goods they bring to exchange for the silver and the said produce are agricultural implements, cutlasses, knives, cotton and linen clothes, and some trifles of small value, all being very ordinary and of the worst quality.

They are by no means regular in their dealings and contracts, but very much so in the thousand infamies which only people of such evil life as theirs could commit; while the people of these countries do not fail to retaliate with others equally bad whenever they have the opportunity. F

The chief persons in this Government who devote themselves to exporting from it the silver and produce aforesaid, and to importing the goods which the Dutch give them in exchange, are the rich. They are called rich, according to the country, but none of them could enter into the most profitable business if

- A** mayor cantidad en haciendas. Estos tales á cambio de los frutos que cosechan de otros y adquieren, y de Ganados Mulares, y Bacunos y en Compañia de tres ó quatro igualmente interesados compran por junto los expresados efectos de los Olandeses y en cantidad de 6 á 8 mil pesos á que suele llegar el mayor importe ó principal de lo que conduce una Balandra, mas este genero de comercio no se hace sin tener la condescendencia quando no interes del que manda, y no habiendo esto es mui facil su remedio como lo há conseguido el actual Gobernador respecto de ser mui conocidos en el Pais los que así lo practican. Hecho el comercio por estos tales y con las circunstancias dichas es sumamente perjudicial, por que rebenden á los Pobres de quienes son unos Fiscales para que no hagan otro tanto con lo que aseguran la mejor salida de sus efectos.

- C** Los segundos que hacen este comercio son toda la Pobreteria y lo practican en esta forma, viene una Balandra ó mas, y dan fondo en las muchas ensenadas, y Puertos á la dilatada costa, de su arribo breve se dibulga la noticia en el Pais y salen con sus Lanchillas en las que conducen por cuenta de muchisimos interesados algunos cueros, sebo, tasajo, pescado, y algun dinerillo cueros efectos les toman los Olandeses, quienes tienen tienda abierta en el combes de su embarcacion, y en cambio les dan lo que necesitan para si y comisiones que llevan, con lo que se bnelben á sus casas, desembarcando en donde se consideran mas seguros permitiendolos el desembarco lo dilatado y pacifico de las costas, y abierto de los Lugares, á mas que no hai quien cele su ilicita entrada por ser comun á todos, y lo mismo se practica en la Provincia de Guayana por las embarcaciones que entran por las bocas del Orinoco, sus principales interesados los Olandeses de Esquibo y demas Colonias de la Costa; este genero de comercio es mui dificil el evitarlo, y aun se hace indispensable alguna tolerancia, pues de lo contrario en el corto termino de 8 meses se verian desnudos los Pueblos de España como lo estan las de los Indios, porque el traje comun de toda la gente pobre es un camison y calzon largo á la marinera de coleta mui ordinaria considerandose bien equipado el que tiene dos mudas las que siendo de genero tan ruin, breve se rompe, y los campos dejarian de coltibrarse por falta de erramientas en que se consumen bastantes por su malisima calidad.

- F** El Rey ni el Pais nada interesarían, en que perdiesen los cueros y sebos sobrantes ni los de mala calidad que á mas ó menos precio tambien toman dichos Olandeses.

Por las expresadas razones y otras muchas que se omiten por no hacer demasiado larga esta nota, no se há dejado de disimular en este Gobierno el que los Pobres se remedien del preciso vestuario del que no tienen donde proveerse en el Pais sin que sea por este medio.

Los expresados Olandeses extraen igualmente porciones de Cacao, cueros y sebo con el nombre

he had to lay down 6,000 pesos in cash, of his own money, though he might have a larger amount in farms. These persons join together in partnerships of three or four, holding equal shares, and in exchange for the produce they harvest and that which they purchase, and for mules and cattle, they buy the aforesaid goods wholesale from the Dutch, and in quantities of 6,000 or 8,000 pesos, which is usually the utmost value of the cargo of a bilander. But this kind of trade is not carried on without the favour, not to say the interest, of the person in command, and if this be absent the remedy is very easy, as the present Governor has found, seeing that those who practise it are very well known in the country. Trade, conducted by such persons and under the conditions aforesaid, is extremely prejudicial, for they sell again to the poor, to whom they are a kind of trustees, so that the poor may not do the same, and they thus secure the best market for their goods.

The second class which pursues this trade consists of the entire body of the poor, and they carry it on in this manner; one or more bilanders come and cast anchor in the numerous creeks and harbours on this extended coast, and notice of the arrival is quickly spread in the country; whereupon they go out in small boats in which they convey, for account of a large number of participators, some hides, tallow, dried meat, fish, and a small quantity of corn. These articles are taken by the Dutch, who keep open shop on the upper deck of their vessel, and give them in exchange what they require for themselves and for the commissions they bring; with this they return to their houses, landing where they consider themselves most secure, and the landing is rendered easy by the extent and calmness of the coasts, and the openness of the villages, unless, indeed, there is someone to conceal their illicit entry, for it is a general practice, and the same thing is done in the Province of Guayana by the vessels which enter through the mouths of the Orinoco, the chief parties interested being the Dutch of Essequibo and the other Colonies of the coast. This kind of trade is most difficult to avoid, and it is even necessary to tolerate it somewhat, for, unless that be done, in the short space of eight months the Spanish villages would become as devoid of clothing as are the Indian villages, seeing that the common dress of all the poor people is a smock and wide breeches, like those of sailors, of very common holland. Anyone who has two changes considers himself well supplied, and they are of such wretched material that they soon split. Likewise the fields would cease to be cultivated for want of implements, of which a considerable number are worn out, owing to their extremely bad quality.

Neither the King nor the country are affected by the loss of the surplus hides and tallow, or of those of bad quality which the said Dutch purchase for more or less, as the case may be.

For the aforesaid reasons and many others, which are omitted in order not to make this note too long, it has been the practice of this Government to tolerate the fact of the poor people obtaining the clothing they need, and which they have no other means of getting in this country.

The aforesaid Dutch likewise take parcels of cacao, hides, and tallow, nominally from the

de la Governacion de Cumaná, no siendolo sino de la de Caracas, y es en esta forma: en las inmediaciones de la de Cumaná, y al desemboque del Rio de Unare se hallan las Islas que llaman del Piritu en donde fondean las embarcaciones Olandesas, á las que ocurren las de la Guarnicion (digo Governacion) de Caracas, y igualmente los de la Provincia de Barcelona de esta solo conducen cueros, y sebo, y no Cacao que no es cosecha como queda dicho aqui, y en las citadas notas, y de la de Caracas aumentan el renglon del cacao cosechado en los valles de cupira, y el que trasportan de tierra adentro. Si á los extractores los persiguen en la Provincia de Caracas pasan el Rio Unare y en las playas del Pueblo de Piritu perteneciente á la Provincia de Barcelona hacen su embarque y á la contra quando son perseguidos en la de Barcelona estando todas aquellas desiertas Playas solo al cuidado de un corregidor de Indios (siendo dificil el encontrar uno que dege de interesarse en la condescendencia contentandose con el corto sueldo del corregidor) por lo que con dificultad se ebitara la extraccion si la Compañia de Caracas no mantiene sus embarcaciones de corso, cruzando desde el cabo de Codera hasta el Morro de Barcelona unico medio por ahora de atajar el que en la ensenada de higueroate, y las inmediaciones de Barcelona entren á hacer dicho comercio los Olandeses.

*Cumaná, Diciembre 22 de 1761.*

Government of Cumaná, but in reality from that of Carácas; and in this manner: In the neighbourhood of the Province of Cumaná, and at the outfall of the River Unare, are the islands called the Isles of Piritu, where the Dutch vessels anchor; thither come the vessels of the garrison (I should say Government) of Carácas, and likewise those of the Province of Barcelona. From the latter they only bring hides and tallow and not cacao, which is not grown there, as already stated here and in the notes quoted; and from the Province of Carácas they swell the cargo of cacao produced in the valleys of Cupira, and that which they bring from up the country. If the smugglers are attacked in the Province of Carácas they cross the River Unare and make their shipment on the shores of the village of Piritu belonging to the Province of Barcelona; and *vice versa*, when they are attacked in the Province of Barcelona. For they are all desert shores, merely under the care of a "Corregidor de Indios" (and it is difficult to find one who will abstain from selling his patronage and will content himself with the scanty pay of a corregidor). Thus it will be difficult to avoid this exportation, unless the Company of Carácas keeps up its cruisers, running from the Cape of Codera to the cliff of Barcelona, which is the only method now of preventing the Dutch from entering the Bay of Higueroate, and the neighbourhood of Barcelona to carry on the said trade.

*Cumaná, December 22, 1761.*

### III.

#### Annex to Report.

##### EVIDENCE.

"Autos instruidos por el Colonel Dn. Joseph Diguja Villagomez y justificativos de el Mapa, y Consulta que los acompaña, en la que representa á S. M. los irreparables perjuicios que resultarán á Nuestra Santa Religion; al servicio de ambas Magestades; al Real Erario; y al bien comun de los vasallos habitantes en estos sus Real Dominios, si se pone en practica la translacion de la Ciudad de Guayana, y demas varios Puntos, que contiene la Real Orden de 27 de Mayo de 1762, para que enterada su Real consideracion de quanto expone en la expresada Consulta, se digne resolver lo que sea mas de su Soberano Real Beneplacito.

Al margen se encuentra la Real Orden siguiente:—

(Nota marginal.) Real Orden para que la Ciudad de Guayana se situe treinta y quatro leguas arriba del Castillo en la Angostura donde Orinoco se estrecha ochocientas varas, y demas resoluciones para su execucion.

Al margen lo siguiente: "Auto mandando compulsar testimonio de la citada Real Orden para su acumulacion á los Autos que se han de formalizar para dar cuenta á Su Magestad sobre los reparos Patentes que impiden el cumplimiento y execucion de dicha Real Orden."

Al margen lo siguiente: "Auto mandando compulsar varias Reales Ordenes, Cédulas, Autos, Juntas Calculo, y otras diligencias practicadas para la construccion de el Nuevo Puerte San Fernando en la Orilla de el Rio de Orinoco."

[696—3]

Acts drawn up by Colonel Don Joseph Diguja Villagomez in justification of the map and "Consulta" accompanying, in which he represents to His Majesty the irreparable injury which will result to our holy religion, the service of God and the King, the Royal Exchequer, and the common welfare of his subjects in these dominions if the proposed removal of the city of Guayana is carried out, as well as the other points contained in the Royal Order of the 27th May, 1762, that his Royal consideration being informed of what is set forth in the said "Consulta," he may resolve thereon according to his Sovereign good pleasure.

Royal Order that the city of Guayana be situated 34 leagues higher up from the fort at Angostura, where the Orinoco narrows to 800 yards, and further resolutions for carrying it out.

Decree commanding evidence to be taken on the Royal Order, to be filed with the papers which are to be completed, in order to inform His Majesty of the patent difficulties which impede the accomplishment of the said Royal Order.

Decree commanding copies of various Royal Orders, "Cédulas," "Autos," decisions, calculations, and other measures taken for the construction of the new Fort San Fernando on the bank of the Orinoco.

X

A Al margen lo siguiente: "Real Cedula aprobando al Governador Don Joseph Carroño lo que executo para castigar los Indios Caribes y Asaimas."

Royal "Cedula" approving what the Governor, Don Joseph Carroño, did for the chastisement of the Carib and Asaimas Indians.

B Al margin lo siguiente: "El Governador y Capitan-General de la Provincia de Cumaná, Don Juan de la Tórnera, representa á vuestra Magestad lo mucho que conviene la construccion de un presidio en la Angostura del gran Rio Orinoco por donde suben los Olandeses, y demas extrangeros con muchas embarcaciones, penetrando mas de cien Leguas de Rio adentro de tierra firme á comerciar con los Caribes, y demas naciones, y sacar Indios esclavos para sus colonias Sectarias; Pues cerrando este paso se asegura el Reyno de Santa Fé de las hostilidades y otros graves inconvenientes que por el dicho Rio Orinoco se pueden ofrecer y servirá dicha Fundacion de Escolta á los Misioneros observantes y capuchinos de estas Provincias de Cumaná, y tambien á los Misioneros de la de Caracas como mas individualmente se presente á vuestra Magestad por esta Consulta."

The Governor and Captain-General of the Province of Cumaná, Don Juan de la Tórnera, represents to your Majesty the advisability of building a fortress at Angostura, on the great River Orinoco, by which the Dutch and other foreigners make their way inland with many ships. They penetrate 100 leagues up the river into the mainland, and carry on commerce with the Caribs and other nations, and procure Indian slaves for their heretical Colonies. But if this passage were closed, the Kingdom of Santa Fé would be secured from hostility and other grave dangers which now threaten it from the Orinoco. This settlement would also serve as a protection for the Franciscan and Capuchin missionaries of these provinces of Cumaná, and also for those of Caracas, as is more clearly represented to your Majesty by this "Consulta."

C

Señor.

Desde que llegué á este Gobierno procuré fomentar las conversiones de Piritu de Religiosos observantes dandoles escoltas para hacer entradas á los Indios ynfeles al Rio Cari y Orinoco á predicarles la ley evangelica de que há resultado haver fundado perfectamente la Mission de San Buenaventura y tener ynchodas dos Santa Rosa y San Joaquin abanzandose al dicho Orinoco, y han sacado muchas almas de los Montes, y las noticias que me daban siempre eran de haver extrangeros Olandeses de Surinama y Bervis comerciando en embarcaciones con que subian por dicho Orinoco, penetrando mas de cien legas de Rio, y de la Angostura arriba mas de treinta, y lamentandose del trato que tienen con los Caribes y ventas de herramientas ropas vinos, Aguardientes, fusiles y otras armas, y la gran saca de Indios esclavos con que cambian dichas mercancias, por lo qual deliveré explorar las orillas y Rios en Caroni y Orinoco y todo la tierra, como lo hicieron en dos salidas para cuya seguridad los protegui con bastante numero de gente para lograrlo, y hechas sus predicaciones y reconocimiento del terreno en dos ocasiones de que me remitieron descripcion y Diarios que remiti á vuestra Magestad por Fr. Victoriano de Castejon, Religioso Capuchino de la Mission de esta Provincia, que pasó á esa Corte á echarse á los pies de Vuestra Magestad por el mes de Noviembre del año pasado de mil setecientos y veinte y tres, para que conste á vuestra Magestad de ella, y conosca el gran perjuicio que ocasiona la tolerancia de este comercio, y que se pueda reparar é impedir con poblar los Religiosos Misionarios la dicha Angostura del Orinoco, que tiene su situacion en esta Provincia en los terminos de sus conversiones, y con solo cinco dietas de sus Pueblos que tienen convertidos de tierra llana y sin Rios Caudalosos que impidan el paso en ningun tiempo, y es lo mas propinquo porque del Castillo de la Guayana dista la dicha Angostura seis dietas de Navegacion Rio arriba por el Orinoco, no pudiendose hacer por tierra porque lo impide el Rio Caroni que entra en dicho Orinoco, que es de igual magnitud á el, y de la Isla Trinidad son quince dietas de navegacion con que la mayor parte es de este Gobierno, y pueblos de

D

E

F

*Copy annexed.*

Sire,

As soon as I arrived in this Government I endeavoured to encourage the Missions at Piritu of the Franciscan Fathers, giving them an escort with which they might penetrate among the infidel Indians to the Rivers Cari and Orinoco, to preach to them the law of the Gospel, with the result that the Mission of St. Bonaventure is firmly established, and two, those of St. Joachim and Santa Rosa begun: advancing to the said Orinoco and drawing many Indians from the forest. News was frequently sent me that many foreigners—the Dutch from Surinam and Berbice—came to these places trading, in vessels, and penetrating more than 100 leagues up the Orinoco, and more than 30 above Angostura, the Fathers lamenting the trade carried on with the Caribs, the sale of tools, stuffs, wine, spirits, guns, and other arms, which they exchanged for a large number of Indian slaves, on account of which it was resolved that they should explore the rivers and banks of the Caroni and Orinoco and the whole country, which they did in two expeditions, for which I gave them a sufficient force for their protection and the accomplishment of their design. They sent me a description and journals of their preaching and explorations on these two occasions, which I forwarded to your Majesty by Father Victoriano de Castejon, a Capuchin of the Missions in this province, who went to Court to throw himself at the feet of your Majesty in November of last year (1723), that your Majesty might be made aware of these things, and of the great evils which spring from the toleration of the aforesaid commerce, which might be remedied and prevented by the missionaries making a settlement at the aforesaid Angostura of the Orinoco, which is situated at the limit of their conversions, five days' journey distant from their converted villages, through prairie lauds, with no large rivers to prevent passage at any time, and is the nearest to them, for from the Fort of Guayana it is a six days' journey to the said Angostura, up stream by the Orinoco, as it is impossible to accomplish it by land on

dichos Misioneros y respecto que vuestra Magestad por Cedula de veinte y uno de Agosto de mil seiscientos ochenta y tres assignó treinta soldados sobre siete que estaban concedidos para el Fuerte de Clarines, y ordenó á Don Franciso de Viveros Galinda que Governaba estas Provincias que con un Cabo los pusiese en el lugar y parte mas conveniente para seguridad y abrigo de los Misionarios de Piritu, dirigiendose solo para escolta de dichos Religiosos, y por no hacerlo executado ordenó vuestra Magestad á Don Gaspar de Acorta que subscedió en el Gobierno lo mismo por Cedula de once de Noviembre de mil seiscientos ochenta y siete, y ultimamente por cedula de veinte y cinco de Noviembre de mil setecientos y noventa ordenó vuestra Magestad á dicho Dr. Gaspar de Acorta la formacion de este Presidio de escolta para los Missionarios, y assignó en las cajas de Panamá las situaciones de las pagas para que vinieran con el de la Fortaleza de Araya que no ha tenido efecto, y de que ha resultado el estar estas conversiones de Piritu arrassadas, aunque las escoltas de Milicianos, é Indios que les he dado han formado tres pueblos, y penetrado toda la tierra y descubierto la Angostura del Orinoco, y si vuestra Magestad se sirve de ordenar que los treinta y siete con quatro ó seis soldados mas con su Capitan, Theniente, Alferez, Sargento, y Cabo con ocho Artilleros para el Manejo de los Cañones se funde en dicha Angostura, y que los Missionarios de Piritu funden una Mission de Indios en ella, pues las tierras son muy fertiles y muchas assignando la situacion de esta ynfanteria en las cajas de Mexico por estar alli la del Presidio de Araya, ó en las de Santa Fee pues les defiende la entrada del Orinoco, ó de las de Caracas como mas cercanas consiguiera vuestra Magestad con este Presidio impedir á los extrangeros el trafico y comercio de los Caribes; á esta nacion la asegura porque no tiene passo; se asegura el Reyno de Santa Fé que se le puede hostilizar por el Orinoco; sirve de escolta á los Missionarios de Piritu, y á los Missionarios Capuchinos de esta Provincia, y á los de la de Caracas, por quedar los observantes en medio al oriente, y al mismo oriente á la Izquierda los Capuchinos de Caracas, con que con un Presidio quedan escoltadas todas tres Misiones en la parte que mira al Orinoco, y se logra la sujecion de los Caribes, sin extrepito de Armas, ni hostilidades de Muertes, y los Indios que sacan los extrangeros para sus colonias sectarias, se quedan en estas Provincias vasallos de vuestra Magestad y con la luz de la Fé Catholica, en vida Christiana y politica; esto Señor me ha parecido ser de mi obligacion y conciencia dar cuenta á vuestra Magestad para que sobre ello acuerde, determine, y mande lo que fuere de su mayor agrado para la Dilatacion de estos Dominios.

Dios guarde la Catholica Real Persona de vuestra Magestad como la Christiandad ha menester.

*Cumand y Enero 8 de 1724.*

account of the River Caroni, which flows into the Orinoco, and is of equal magnitude, and from the Island of Trinidad it is fifteen days' navigation, of which the greatest part lies through this Government and the villages of the said missionaries. With respect to your Majesty having granted, by an Order of the 21st August, 1683, thirty soldiers above the seven allowed from Fort Clarines, and having ordered Don Francisco de Viveros Galinda, who was then Governor in these provinces, that he should establish them with a corporal in the most convenient place for the security and protection of the said missionaries of Piritu, having no other duty than that of their guard; when he failed to carry out this order, your Majesty ordered Don Gaspar de Acorta, who succeeded him in the government, to carry out the aforesaid instructions by a "Cedula" of the 11th November, 1687. And lastly, by an Order of the 25th November, 1790 [1690], your Majesty ordered Don Gaspar de Acorta to construct this fortress as a protection for the missionaries and assigned the payment of its allowance to the Treasury of Panamá, to be paid at the same time as that of the Fort of Araya; which order was never carried out; with the result that these Missions of Piritu are often harassed, notwithstanding that the militia guard, and Indians granted them, have formed three villages and spread overall the land, and discovered the Angostura of the Orinoco. If your Majesty is pleased to order that the thirty-seven soldiers, with four or six more, with a Captain, Lieutenant, ensign, sergeant, and corporal, with eight gunners for the management of the cannon, be established at the said Angostura, and that the missionaries of Piritu found an Indian Mission there, as the territory is vast and very fertile, the allowance of the infantry to be charged on the Treasury of Mexico, as is that of the fortress of Araya, or on that of Santa Fé, as it defends the entrance to the Orinoco, or that of Carácas as being nearer, by means of this fortress, your Majesty will prevent the trade and commerce of foreigners with the Caribs, making sure of this nation, whose passage is stopped, and securing the Kingdom of Santa Fé from attack by way of the Orinoco. It will also serve as a protection to the missionaries of Piritu, and to the missionary Capuchins of this province, as also to those of Carácas, the Franciscans being in the middle of the territory to the east, the Capuchins of Carácas to the left in the same direction, so that a fort will protect the three Missions on the side towards the Orinoco, and the subjection of the Caribs will be brought about without arms or bloodshed, and the Indians whom the foreigners remove to their heretical Colonies will remain in these provinces subjects of your Majesty, and enjoying the light of the Catholic faith in a well-ordered and Christian life. Sire, it seemed to me that I was obliged in conscience to render this account to your Majesty, that you might consider, determine, and command thereon according to your good pleasure for the extension of these dominions.

God preserve the Catholic Person of your Royal Majesty for the needs of Christendom.

*Cumand, January 8, 1724.*

A (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Real Orden comunicada al Gobernador Don Juan de la Tórnera en que se resuelve se construya un fuerte en la Angostura del Rio Orinoco por lo conveniente que es al Real servicio.

Royal Order sent to the Governor, Don Juan de la Tórnera, in which it is resolved to build a fort at Angostura on the Orinoco for the advantage it will be to the Royal service.

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Real Orden comunicada á dicho Gobernador haverse visto con gusto las noticias que participa, y en especial la felicidad conseguida en el combate de los Indios Barbaros y de que se espera estará á la mira para embarazar los Progresos dichos Indios, y de las naciones extranjeras que los fomentan continuando los avisos de todo lo que ocurriere.

Royal Order to the said Governor, acquainting him that his information has been received with pleasure, especially as to his success in fighting against the Indian savages, and expressing a hope that he will be watchful to prevent the encroachments of the said Indians and of the foreign nations who encourage them, and will continue to give information of all that may occur.

*Copy annexed.*

C En carta de catorce de Noviembre del año de mill setecientos veinte y siete da vuestra Merced cuenta del numero de Indios que se han reducido, y poblado con las asistencias que ha facilitado á este intento en el tiempo de su gobierno y de haver los Indios gentiles Caribes y otras barbaras naciones movido la guerra con el fin de poner en consternacion los Pueblos reducidos; quitar las vidas á los Religiosos Doctrineros, y á los Españoles, y hacer esclavos á los Indios que no fuesen de su nacion sobre que expresa vuestra Merced ha hecho la defensa conveniente en los reencuentros que se han ofrecido en las Margenes del Rio Ilitere, en donde murieron algunos de los Indios Barbaros, aprisionando un Capitan de fama nombrado Taberoa y otros Prisioneros que hizo poner en el presidio de Guayana, haviendo hallado en las cercanias del sitio de este combate once casas formadas á modo de Almacenes con diferentes D quarteles, y en ellos muchas Armas como son flechas, escopetas, alfanges, lanzas, macanas, y otras ofensivas, segun difussamente contienen los testimonios que vuestra Merced remite constando tambien estar dichos Indios auxiliados de oficiales, y soldados Ingleses con el fin de establecerse en sus antiguas Poblaciones, y haviendo hecho presente al Rey la referida Carta de vuestra Merced, y testimonios que incluye me manda su Magestad decir á vuestra Merced ha visto con gusto las noticias que participa, y en especial la felicidad conseguida en el combate con los Indios, y espera del celo y vigilancia de vuestra merced estará á la mira para embarazar los progressos de los mencionados Indios y de las naciones extranjeras que los fomentan de que irá vuestra Merced continuando los avisos para ponerlos en su Real noticia.

In a letter of the 14th November of the year 1727, your Excellency gives an account of the number of Indians converted and settled, with the assistance you have furnished for that end, during your term of government, and of the pagan Caribs and other savage nations having made war in order to terrify the villages of converts, to kill the missionaries and Spaniards, and to make slaves of the Indians not of their own nation, when your Excellency says you took proper measures of defence in the combats, which took place on the banks of the River Ilitere [*sic*], several of the Indian savages being killed, and a celebrated Chief called Taberoa and others taken prisoner, and placed in the fort at Guayana. There were eleven houses in the vicinity of the place of combat, arranged as arsenals, with different quarters, and a supply of arms, such as arrows, guns, cutlasses, lances, "macanas,"\* and other arms, as is related at length in the declarations which your Excellency forwarded, stating that the Indians were assisted by English officers and soldiers, with intent to establish themselves in their old villages. Having made the King acquainted with the contents of your Excellency's letter and the declarations inclosed, His Majesty commands me to inform your Excellency that he has received the news with pleasure, especially that of the happy issue of the fight with the Indians, and that he hopes from your zeal and vigilance that your Excellency will be on the alert to prevent the encroachments of the aforesaid Indians and of the foreigners who encourage them, and that you will continue to send news, so that everything that occurs may be brought to his Royal notice.

Dios guarde á vuestra Merced muchos años como deseo.

God keep your Excellency many years according to my desire.

DON JOSEPH PATINO.

(Signed) DON JOSEPH PATINO.

*Madrid, 7 de Septiembre de 1728.*

Señor Don Juan de la Tórnera Sota.

Señor Don Juan de la Tórnera Sota.

*Madrid, September 7, 1728.*

F

(Al margen la siguiente.) Real Cedula conferida al Coronel Don Carlos de Sucre sobre la poblacion de la Guayana, Descubrimiento del Orinoco, construccion del fuerte y reductos para extinguir el ilicito trato.

Royal "Cedula" granted to Colonel Don Carlos Sucre respecting the charge of making settlements in Guayana, exploring the Orinoco, and constructing the fort and redoubts for the suppression of illicit commerce.

\* Macána is a wooden weapon in the form of a scimitar in use among the Indians.



(Al margen la siguiente nota.) Real Cedula para que el Gobernador de Cumana ynforme sobre la poblacion que intentan los Sueceos en un caño del Orinoco.

EL REY.

Gobernador y Capitan-General de la Provincia de Cumaná.

Los Alcaldes ordinarios de la Ciudad de San Josseph de Oruña Isla de la Trinidad de la Guayana á cuyo cargo está el Gobierno de aquella Provincia por muerte de su Gobernador Don Bartolomé de Aldunate expressaron en carta de veinte y dos de Diciembre del año de mill setecientos treinta y dos, que su Lugar Theniente de la Provincia de la Guayana les participó estaban poblando la Isla del Tabaco por unos Sueccos teniendo ya cassas formadas con Labranzas, y establecidos veinte y cinco familias con porcion de negros, con cuyo motivo resolvieron dichos Alcaldes ordinarios ymbiar (como lo executaron) á Pedro Felix Cresel vecino de dicha Ciudad de San Josseph de Oruña para que averiguase de los Indios que viven en la costa del Norte de dicha Isla de la Trinidad lo que queda expressado; y haviendolo executado declaró haver ido costeando la dicha Isla hasta la punta de la Galera por la vanda del Sur, y que halló unos Indios que estaban pescando, y entre ellos uno llamado Antonio que le dijo que unos Franceses que pasaron por dicha costa en una Balandra le havian dicho querian poblar la Isla de Tabaco donde ya estaban avecindados por la vanda del Norte con sus plantages, sin tener ningun esclavo, y que estaba ya nombrado Gobernador el qual se llamaba Monsieur Cornete vecino de la Martinica, y que estaban esperando resulta de la Corte de Francia para introducir gente y poblarla, pero no estando satisfechos dichos Alcaldes Ordinarios resolvieron fuese otro llamado Juan Miguel Hernandez á dicha Provincia de la Guayana á fin de aclarar estas novedades, y dar las providencias convenientes y haviendo vuelto de su viage declaró que habiendo salido al Mar por el Rio Principal del Orinoco, entró por el caño que llaman Barima donde estubo dicha Nacion Sueca segun le digeron los Indios Caribes que havitan en dicho caño, y que havian visto mucha gente Blanca, dos navios, y una Balandra, los quales andubieron buscando parage para poblar, y gratificando á dichos Caribes con Abalorios, Cuchillos, Machetes, Hachas, y Aguardiente, quedaron muy gustosos esperandolos el verano siguiente, segun dieron á entender dichos Caribes, los quales declararon assi mismo que haviendo llegado á dicho caño dos Lanchas de Franceses y Negros que iban fugitivos para passar á la Ciudad de la Guayana, los mataron dichos Indios, y les quitaron las embarcaciones, y lo demas que llevaban. Y que en dicho caño se halla un Capitan Caribe hijo del Capitan Zaguaria quien tenia mas de doscientos Indios, con muchas flechas, escopetas y chafarotes, cuya prevencion declaró dicho Indio tenia para los blancos de la Guayana por haverle embarazado el que sacase Indios de las Naciones del Orinoco para vender á los Olandeses. Y que estos digeron á dichos Indios no enseñasen parage bueno á los Sueccos que ellos les darian lo que huviesen menester. Y haviendose visto en mi Consejo de las Indias con lo que dijo mi Fiscal de el, y consultadome en ello y tenido presente que estas Noticias participadas por los expressados Alcaldes Ordinarios no vinieron instruidas como devian, para que yo

[696—3]

Royal "Cedula" that the Governor of Cumaná report on the settlement which the Swedes are attempting to found in a creek of the Orinoco.

THE KING.

To the Governor and Captain-General of the Province of Cumaná:

The Alcaldes of the town of San Joseph de Oruña, of the Island of Trinidad, and of Guayana, charged with the government of the province by the death of the Governor, Don Bartolomé de Aldunate, made known by a letter of the 22nd December, 1732, that the Lieutenant of the Province of Guayana informed them that the Island of Tabaco, was being settled by some Swedes, who had already built houses, ploughed fields, and established twenty-five families and a certain number of negroes. For this reason the aforesaid Alcaldes resolved to send (which was done) Pedro Felix Cresel, an inhabitant of the said town of San Joseph de Oruña, to find out the truth of this report from the Indians who inhabit the northern coast of the said Island of Trinidad. He reported that he coasted along the southern side of the island as far as Point Galera, and found some Indians engaged in fishing, and one among them, called Antonio, told him that some Frenchmen who passed that coast in a bilander, told him that they wished to make a settlement in the Island of Tabaco, where they had already established themselves on the northern side, with their plantations, without possessing any slaves; that M. Cornete, an inhabitant of Martinique, was already named Governor, and they were awaiting the result of an application to the Court of France to introduce settlers. Not being satisfied with this report, the said Alcaldes resolved to send Juan Miguel Hernandez to the said Province of Guayana to verify the statement, and give the necessary orders. On his return he reported that he had put to sea by the principal river of the Orinoco, and entered the creek called Barima, where, according to the Caribs who dwell on that creek, the Swedes were established. They said they had seen a number of white men seeking a place for their settlement, and they had presented the Caribs with beads, knives, cutlasses, hatchets, and spirits, and left them much pleased, and expecting their return the summer following, according to the account of the said Caribs, who also declared that two long boats came to the creek full of Frenchmen and negroes, fugitives on their way to the city of Guayana, who were all slain by the said Indians, who took their boats and all they had with them. That in the creek there was a Carib Chief, son of the Chief Zaguaria, who had more than 200 Indians, with numbers of arrows, guns, and broad swords, which force he kept, said the Indian, for the whites of Guayana, because they hindered him taking the Indians of the nations of the Orinoco and selling them to the Dutch. That these latter told the aforesaid Indians not to show the Swedes a good place for their settlement, and they themselves would give them all they required. Having considered this matter in my Council of the Indies, and taken the advice of my Fiscal, and deliberated there-

Y

A hubiese tomado Providencia en Materia de esta entidad, y considerado assi mismo no ser despreciables: He resuelto mandaros (como lo hago) que luego que recivais este despacho procureis averiguar la realidad de estos hechos, y en el caso que sean necesarias algunas Providencias, aplicareis todas que considerareis convenientes, dandome cuenta de todo lo que en este asunto executareis con la mayor brevedad, en ynteligencia de que por Despachos de este dia he mandado lo mismo á los Governadores de Carácas, y Sa. Margarita.

YO, EL REY.

B

*Del Pardo, á 13 de Marzo de 1734.*

Por mandado del Rey, nuestro Señor:  
DON MIGUEL DE VILLANUEVA.

Y al pie de la Real Cedula hay tres rubricas.

upon, seeing that the information sent by the aforesaid Alcaldes, though not to be despised, is not full enough to warrant my making any order in the matter, I have resolved to command, and hereby do command, that so soon as you receive these despatches you do forthwith verify the facts of the matter, and, in case any orders should be necessary, you do forthwith make such orders as you think advisable, giving me an account of your proceedings in this matter with all dispatch, remembering that I have sent the same instructions to the Governors of Carácas and Margarita by despatches sent this day.

I, THE KING.

By command of our Lord the King:  
(Signed) DON MIGUEL DE VILLANUEVA.  
(Three Rubrics.)

*From the Pardo, March 13, 1734.*

C (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Real Cedula comunicada al Gobernador Don Carlos de Sucre para que dé las providencias convenientes á fin de que la nacion Suecca no haya poblacion en el Rio de Barima.

EL REY.

Don Carlos Sucre, Gobernador y Capitan-General de la Provincia de Cumana.

D

En carta de diez y ocho de Jullio del año proximo pasado ha participado Don Rafael de Eslaba Presidente de mi Real Audiencia de la Ciudad de Santa Fé en el Nuevo Reyno de Granada la representacion que le havia hecho el Padre Joseph Gumilla, Prefecto de las Misiones del Orinoco en orden á la Poblacion quea yntentado formar la Nacion Suecca en el Rio de Barima, para cuya propugnacion, La Audiencia de aquel Reyno antecedentemente havia librado los despachos correspondientes y que luego que este Presidente tomó posesion de su empleo previno al referido Padre Joseph Gumilla le repitiese los avisos necesarios para dar las Providencias convenientes; pero que reconociendo ser este asunto de gravedad considerable da cuenta de el para su mejor acierto. Visto en mi consejo de las Indias con lo que dijo mi Fiscal de el, he venido en participaros lo expressado para que (como os lo mando) con la gente que tuviereis, y con las Misiones de Capuchinos, deis todas las Providencias convenientes para evitar se establezca la Poblacion que yntenta dicha Nacion Suecca; y de lo que en esto adelantareis me dareis cuenta en las primeras ocasiones que se ofrescan.

YO, EL REY.

*De Buen Retiro, á 16 de Diciembre de 1734.*

F

Por mandado del Rey, nuestro Señor:  
DON MIGUEL DE VILLANUEVA.

(Y al pie de dicha Real Cedula se hallan tres rubricas señales de firma al parecer de los Señores del Real y Supremo Consejo de Indias.)

Royal "Cedula" sent to the Governor Don Carlos Sucre, to take measures to prevent the Swedes from settling at the River Barima.

THE KING.

To Don Carlos Sucre, Governor and Captain-General of the Province of Cumaná:

In a letter of the 18th July of the year before last, Don Rafael de Eslaba, President of my Royal Court of the city of Santa Fé in the new Kingdom of Granada, having communicated the representation made by Father Joseph Gumilla, Superior of the Missions of the Orinoco, with respect to the settlement which the Swedes were attempting to make in River Barima, for whose ejection the Court of that kingdom had previously taken measures; and as soon as the said President entered on his office, he requested the said Father Joseph Gumilla to repeat his former information, that he might take the necessary steps; but thinking this a matter of considerable gravity he sends an account of it for his reassurance. Having considered the matter in my Council of the Indies, and taken the advice of my Fiscal thereupon, I hereby command that with what people you have and with the Capuchin Missions, you take all proper measures to prevent the settlement attempted by the Swedish nation from being established, and that you give me an account of your proceedings herein at the first opportunity.

I, THE KING.

By command of our Lord the King:  
(Signed) DON MIGUEL DE VILLANUEVA.

(Three Rubrics at the foot of the Royal Order, seemingly those of the Members of the preme Royal Council of the Indies.)

*From Buen Retiro, December 16, 1734.*

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Real Cedula comunicada al Marques de San Felipe Gobernador Interino, avisandole el recibo de una carta en que participó las providencias dadas para resguardo de las Misiones de aquellas provincias y ordenandole de cuenta de las resultas que acaescieren en las diligencias de haver passado á la Angostura del Rio Orinoco con animo de desalojar los Caribes de aquel parage el Coronel Don Carlos de Sucre.

Royal "Cedula" sent to the Marques de San Felipe, Acting Governor, acknowledging the receipt of a letter in which he makes known the orders given for the protection of the Missions of those provinces, and ordering him to report upon the expedition of Colonel Don Carlos Sucre to Angostura on the Orinoco with intent to drive the Caribs from that part. **A**

*Copy annexed.*

EL REY.

THE KING.

Marques de San Phelipe y Santiago, mi Gobernador Interino de la Provincia de Cumaná,

To the Marques de San Phelipe and Santiago, my acting Governor of Cumaná:

En carta de veinte y tres de Diciembre de Mill setecientos treinta y cinco disteis cuenta del recibo de la cedula de veinte y dos de Mayo del mismo en que os mandé dieseis cuenta individual de los Progressos de las Misiones en todos los navios que para estos Reynos se ofreciesen. Y que aun que lo teniais executado en carta de dos Noviembre del referido año, lo haciais de nuevo con la noticia que constaba de las dos copias y carta original que acompañabais de las Justicias de la Nueva Barcelona, expressando hallarse amenazadas de los Caribes las Misiones de Panapota y Anaco en vista de las quales haviais despachado el corto socorro de infanteria que la escasez en que os hallabais havia permitido por la que habia salido á varios destacamentos y especialmente el que acompañaba á Don Carlos Sucre en la expedicion contra los Caribes añadiendo hallaros con la noticia de haver marchado este á la Angostura del Rio Orinoco con el animo de desalojar los Caribes de aquel parage, y hacer de Faginas alguna fortificacion y mantenerla hasta que yo mandase otra cosa, por ser el mejor modo de cortarles la comunicacion, de cuyas resultas ofreceis dar cuenta y haviendose visto en mi consejo de las Indias con lo que dijo mi Fiscal, ha parecido avisaros el recibo de la citada carta, y ordenaros, y mandaros (como lo hago) deis cuenta de todo lo que sobre este asunto huviere resultado que assi es mi voluntad.

Fecha en Aranjuez á 28 de Abril de 1737.

YO, EL REY.

Por mandado del Rey nuestro Señor:  
DON MIGUEL DE VILLANUEVA.

In a letter of the 23rd December, 1735, you acknowledged receipt of the "Cedula" of the 22nd May, of the same year in which you were commanded to give a particular account of the progress of the Missions by all ships bound for this kingdom; and although you had already done so in a letter of the 2nd November of the said year, you repeated your information, which was further borne out by the two copies and original letter of the Magistrates of New Barcelona, making known that the Missions of Panapota and Anaco were threatened by the Caribs, whereupon the small number of infantry was dispatched to their assistance, allowed by the scarcity of soldiers, caused by several detachments having gone out, especially one which accompanied Don Carlos Sucre in the expedition against the Caribs, adding that you had news that he had marched to Angostura on the Orinoco with the intention of driving the Caribs from that part, and building and maintaining a fortification of logs, until further orders were received from me, this being the best means to cut off their communications, of the result of which you proposed to send an account. Having considered the matter in my Council of the Indies, and heard the advice of my Fiscal, I have resolved to acknowledge receipt of your said letter, and order and command you (as I do hereby) to give an account of all that has resulted therefrom, for such is my pleasure. **C**

I, THE KING.

By order of our Lord the King:  
(Signed) DON MIGUEL DE VILLANUEVA. **D**

(Y al pie de dicha Real Cedula se hallan tres rubricas señales de firmas al Parecer de los Señores del Real Supremo Consejo de Indias.)

(Three Rubrics at the foot of the Royal "Cedula," seemingly those of the Members of the Royal Supreme Council of the Indies.) **E**

*Given at Aranjuez, April 28, 1737.*

(Al margen.) Copia de el informe de el Padre Joseph Gumilla. Copia del informe que hizo á Su Magestad en su Real y Supremo Consejo de las Indias el Padre Joseph Gumilla, de la Compañia de Jessus Missionero de las Misiones de Cassanare Meta y Orinoco, Superior de dichas Misiones, y Procurador General de la provincia del Nuevo Reyno en esta Corte, sobre impedir

Copy of the Report made to His Majesty in his Royal Supreme Council of the Indies, by Father Joseph Gumilla, of the Company of Jesus, missionary of the Missions of Casanare, Meta, and Orinoco, Superior of the said Missions, Procurator-General of the Province of the New Kingdom at this Court, on the means of preventing the hostilities suffered **F**

**A** á los Indios Caribes, y á los Olandeses las Ostilidades que experimentan las Colonias del Gran Rio Orinoco, y los medios mas oportunos para este fin.

by the Colonies of the great River Orinoco from the Caribs and the Dutch, and the best means of attaining this end.

*Copy annexed.*

**1. Introduction.**

Señor,

**B** 1. El deplorable estado de las misiones que la Provincia de la Compañia de Jessus del Nuevo Reyno empezó á restaurar en el Orinoco por el mes de Diciembre de mill setecientos treinta y uno, ha obligado á dicha mi provincia á embiarme á este corte (con la mira á la experiencia que puedo haver adquirido en veinte y dos años de misionero), para que puesto á los pies de vuestra Magestad como testigo de vista, represente aquellos gravissimos daños, y pida á vuestra Real Benignidad el remedio para mayor gloria de Dios, servicio de vuestra Magestad y aumento de vuestra real Corona, que es lo que en dicho Orinoco procuran no solo los Misioneros Jessuitas sino tambien muchos varones Apostolicos de la Seraphica Observancia y Padres Capuchinos.

**2. Causes of the union of the Dutch and Caribs.**

**C** 2. La mies, Señor, es grande, bien dispuesto el terreno de muchas naciones Gentiles para recibir el Santo Evangelio y los operarios (aunque pocos) hicieran mucho fruto si el enemigo de las almas no se valiera de la codicia de los Olandeses, y del genio carnicero é ynhumano de los Indios Caribes para destruir en un dia los afanes Apostolicos de todo un año subiendo unos y otros desde la Mar á robar, y quemar los pueblos de las Misiones, y á llevar quantos cautivos pueden para vender en Esquivo, Bervis, y Surinama, colonias de aquella Republica, fundadas (no en Orinoco) sino al Leste de sus vocas en buena distancia. Fuera del interes de los esclavos mueve á los Olandeses para su estrecha sociedad con los Indios Caribes el interes grande del Aceyte de Maria (Balsamo **D** Admirable) y el Achote que sacan del Orinoco, á cuyo fin se entrometen algunos Olandeses en las armadas de los Indios Caribes, pintados al uso de aquellos Barbaros con lo qual ó los animan, ó les añaden osadia para los destrozos lamentables que executan. Añádese á lo dicho que muchos Indios Caribes reciben del Olandes gran copia de armas municiones, abalorios, y otras bagatelas con la obligacion de pagar dentro de cierto plazo, con Indios que han de cautivar en el Orinoco, y llegado el plazo los Olandeses acrehedores fomentan, y aun obligan á los Indios Caribes para que executen sus inhumanas y sangrientas irrupciones contra los **E** indefensos Indios del Orinoco.

**3. Destruction of the former Missions.**

**F** 3. De esta raiz nacieron la primera y segunda Ruyna de las Misiones que la Compañia de Jessus con tantos sudores y afanes estableció en Orinoco por los años de mill seiscientos ochenta y quatro, y mill seiscientos noventa y tres en que derramaron gloriosamente su sangre en defensa de sus ovejas los venerables Padres Ignacio Fiñol, Ignacio Teobas, Gaspar Bek, Vicente Loverso, y el capitan de la escolta Tiburcio de Medina, dejando una y otra vez aquellas colonias saqueadas y quemadas.

**4. Evils recently experienced**

4. Pero viniendo á nuestra Era de tiempo de la misma raiz Olandessa nació el orgullo del Cacique Taricura, y de sus subcesores Indios Caribes para los incessantes daños que desde el año mill setecientos treinta y tres, hasta el de treinta y ocho (y tengo por cierto que hasta ahora) han causado y causan en las Colonias del Rio Orinoco, con muerte de muchos Indios Cathecumenos, y cautiverio de muchos mas.

Sire,

1. The deplorable state of the Missions which the Province of the Society of Jesus of the New Kingdom began to restore on the Orinoco in the month of December 1731 has obliged my province to send me to this Court (having regard to my twenty-two years' experience in missionary life) to throw myself at the feet of your Majesty, and as an eye-witness to represent these grave evils, and beg their remedy from your Royal Benevolence, to the greater glory of God, the service of your Majesty, and increase of your Royal dominions, which not only the Jesuit missionaries, but many apostolic men, Franciscans and Capuchins, will endeavour to promote on the said Orinoco.

2. Sire, the harvest is great, the soil of many pagan nations well-disposed and fertile for the reception of the Holy Gospel, and the labourers (though few) would produce much fruit if the enemy of souls did not avail himself of the avarice of the Dutch, and the bloodthirsty and inhuman character of the Caribs, to destroy in a day the apostolic labour of a whole year. Both nations come up from the sea to rob and burn the villages of the Missions and carry off as many captives as they can, and sell them at Essequibo, Berbice, and Surinam, colonies of the aforesaid Republic established (not on the Orinoco), but a good distance to the east of its mouths. Besides the profit from slaves the Dutch are moved to keep up their close alliance with the Caribs, by the value of the balsam of Tolu (Aceite de Maria), and of the annato found on the Orinoco. To procure these some Dutch introduce themselves among the fleets of these Indians, painted according to the custom of the said savages, by which they encourage them, and add boldness to the lamentable destruction which they work. Added to which, many Caribs receive a great supply of arms, ammunition, glass beads, and other trifles, with the understanding that they are to be paid for within a certain time with Indians, which they must take prisoners on the Orinoco. And when the time has elapsed, the Dutch creditors encourage and even oblige the Caribs to their bloody raids against the defenceless Indians of the Orinoco.

3. From this root sprang the first and second ruin of the Missions which the Jesuits established with great labour and trouble in the years 1684 and 1693, when the Reverend Fathers Ignacio Fiñol, Ignacio Teobas, Gaspar Bek, and Vicente Loverso gloriously shed their blood in defence of their sheep, as did also Tiburcio de Medina, the Captain of the guard, leaving the settlements each time sacked and burnt.

4. But coming to our own times, from the same Dutch root springs the pride of the Chief Taricura and of the Caribs, his successors, and the incessant evil which it has wrought us from the year 1733 to the year 1738 (and, as I hold for certain, even to the present day) in the colonies on the Orinoco, with the death of many Indian catecumens, and the captivity of many more. On the 31st March, 1733, they burnt our

Dia treinta y uno de Marzo de mill setecientos treinta y tres quemaron nuestra Colonia de Nuestra Señora de los Angeles, y el dia siguiente amanecieron veinte y siete Piraguas de guerra sobre la de San Joseph de Otomacos, y á no haverse defendido con valor los soldados de la escolta, y los Indios Amigos hubieran saqueado y quemado el lugar, y nos hubieran llevado á cautivos ó muertos para sus banquetes á mis compañeros, y á mi que este fué el fin principal de este y de los siguientes ataques que apuntaré con brevedad.

5. Año de mill setecientos treinta y cinco, quemaron dichos Indios Caribes la Colonia de Sn. Miguel de Bichado, cautivaron gran numero de Indios, dejando á otros muchos muertos. Dia veinte y nueve de Septiembre, de mill setecientos treinta y cinco, assaltaron la Colonia de Maino, que estaba á cargo de los Padres observantes: dieron muerte á quassi todos los Indios, á dos soldados, y ultimamente despues de haver recibido el Venerable P. Fr. Andres Lopez un balazo en el cuerpo, y un Golpe de macana en la voca, le ahorcaron medio vivo, y se volvieron con gran numero de cautivos á recargar de improviso la Colonia de San Antonio de Caroni que pertenece á los Padres Capuchinos: mas quiso Dios que fuesen sentidos los agressores, por lo qual se huvieron de retirar contentos con haver muerto á un Indio Principal de aquella Mission. Poco despues quemaron la Colonia de la Concepcion de Oyapi (desde donde se huvieron de retirar á sus Misiones de Piritu los Padres Observantes por no perder sin fruto sus vidas). Dentro de pocos dias quemaron la Colonia de San Joseph de Otomacos, y nos vimos obligados á retirarnos con algunos Indios á parages mas distantes y seguros, sujetos á la hambre y á una total falta de lo necesario. Tribulaciones han sido estas tan amargas que (ahunque compendiados aqui á breves clausulas) causaron y causan á los Padres Misioneros abundantes lagrimas, pero luego que calmó algun tanto tan deshecha tormenta buscamos sitios de mas seguridad, donde se han recogido segunda vez los Indios dispersos, y se han formado nuevas Colonias, mas con el gravissimo contrapesso de muchos sangrientos, y repentinos assaltos de los Indios Caribes sobre las deviles fuerzas de la corta escolta que nos asiste pero con el amparo manifesto de Dios, y con la firme esperanza de que el piadoso celo de Vuestra Magestad cerrará la puerta á tantos daños se mantienen los Misioneros Jessuitas en Orinoco, y los Padres Observantes y Capuchinos con la persuassion de que cada dia crecerà mas la ossadia de los Indios Caribes por el continuo fomento que de los Olandeses reciben lo que está tan lexos de entibiar el Fervor de aquellos Misioneros que á vista de sus gloriosas tareas desean hacerles compañía otros muchos.

6. Supuesto lo dicho devo poner á la alta comprehension de V. Magestad á este gran Rio Orinoco como una puerta abierta que ofrece passo-franco á lo mas interno de las Provincias de Cumaná, Carácas, Maracaybo, y á todo el Nuevo Reyno de Granada, todas aquellas provincias tienen (explicome assi) el pecho guarnecido con fortalezas reductos, &c., pero las espaldas de todas aquellas provincias descubiertas con el passo-franco que da el Orinoco, punto digno de toda reflexion, y de Notables consecuencias.

7. De aqui es que el remedio no solo ha de mirar á que se pacifique el Orinoco, y se adelanten sus Misiones, sino tambien á que este gran Rio tenga puerta cuya llave esté en manos de V. Magestad

[696—3]

Colony of Our Lady of the Angels, and on the following day they came down on that of San Joseph de Otomacos with twenty-seven war pirogues, and if the soldiers of the guard and the friendly Indians had not defended themselves valiantly, they would have burnt and sacked the place and taken my companions and myself prisoners, or killed us for their banquets, for this was the principal end of this and the following attacks, which I will briefly touch upon.

5. In the year 1735 the said Caribs burnt the settlement of San Miguel de Bichado, and took a great number of Indians prisoners, leaving many others dead. On the 29th September, 1735, they stormed the Colony of Mamo, which was under the care of the Franciscan Fathers. They killed nearly all the Indians and two soldiers, and after having shot the Venerable Father Andres Lopez through the body, and struck him on the mouth with one of their wooden weapons, they hung him when half dead, and returned with many captives to take the settlement of San Antonio de Caroni, which belongs to the Capuchin Fathers, unawares; but God willed that the aggressors should be discovered, and they were obliged to retire, and content themselves with having killed one of the principal Indians of that Mission. Shortly afterwards they burnt the Colony of Concepcion, of Uyapi, from whence the Franciscan Fathers had to recall their missionaries of Piritu, that their lives might not be uselessly sacrificed. A few days afterwards they burnt the Colony of San Joseph de Otomacos, and we were obliged to fly with a few Indians to a more secure and distant spot, where we were exposed to hunger and the total want of all necessaries. Though here set forth in a few words, these are bitter afflictions, which have caused, and still cause, the missionary Fathers many tears; but their grief is no sooner grown more calm than we seek places of more security, gather together the dispersed Indians, and form new colonies, with the grievous obstacle of fierce and repeated assaults by the Caribs on the small guard which assists us; but with the evident protection of God, and the firm hope that your Majesty's pious zeal will put an end to these evils, the Jesuits, Franciscans, and Capuchins still stand firm in Orinoco; and, though they know the boldness of the Caribs will be daily increased by the encouragement they receive from the Dutch, the knowledge is so far from inspiring them with terror that many others, at the sight of their glorious labours, desire to bear them company.

5. Other evils more recent and considerable.

C

D

E

6. Besides the aforesaid, I would also bring to the high understanding of your Majesty that this great River Orinoco is like an open door, giving free access to the heart of the provinces of Cumaná, Carácas, Maracaybo, and to all the new Kingdom of Granada. All these provinces have their fronts (so to speak) protected by fortresses, redoubts, &c., but their backs are unprotected, on account of the free access given by the Orinoco, a point worthy of all consideration, and of notable consequence.

7. Whence it follows that we must look not only to the pacification of the Orinoco, and the forwarding of its Misions, but also that this great river shall have a door, whose key is

6. Not only the good of the Misions is considered, but that of all the provinces of the interior.

7. [Blank in MS.]

Y\*

- A para que los tres partidos de Misiones cultiven pacíficamente aquellas incultas naciones, y para que las provincias adjacentes que forman tan notable parte de la América meridional tengan seguras y guardadas las espaldas.

8. Exact endeavours of the Jesuits to find the most suitable spot for fortifying the Orinoco.

8. A estos dos fines miró la Provincia del Nuevo Reyno quando el año de mill setecientos diez y nueve embió á los Padres Juan Capuel y Juan Romeo á explorar aquellas trescientas leguas del Orinoco que corren desde el Rio Meta hasta la Guayana como lo executaron con toda exaccion, llevando consigo personas practicas de todo aquel terreno. Y por lo que mira al punto principal del sitio mas oportuno para fortificar y cerrar el Orinoco se valieron los Padres del dictamen del Theniente y demas Cabos Militares de la Guayana, en cuya compañía registraron muy de espacio (estando el rio crecido) la Isla de Faxardo sita en frente de la boca del Rio Caroni, y fueron uniformes los votos de todos ser aquella isla el parage mas apropiada para el fin pretendido.

9. Four Royal Orders from His Majesty for the fortification of Faxardo Island.

9. De estos informes enviados por manos del provincial de la Compañía de Jesús del Nuevo Reyno á vuestra Magestad resultó el Real Beneplacito y cedula de treinta y uno de Octubre de mill setecientos veinte y seis, y segunda cedula expedida en Sevilla á veinte y dos de Diciembre de mill setecientos veinte y nueve, en otras dos cedulas de la misma fecha en orden al modo de la construcción de la Real fuerza en dicha Isla de Faxardo, y dos reductos á uno y otro lado del Rio las quales Reales Cedulas fueron cometidas al Coronel Dn. Carlos de Sucre quien se hizo cargo de la construcción de dichas fabricas, y en atención á ellos recibió la merced de gobernador de Cumaná y la Guayana con otros muchos Privilegios que constan en dichas Cedulas é indican el Católico y piadoso celo con que V. M. desea la seguridad del gran Rio Orinoco:—

- E Pero después que el Gobernador de Sucre tomó la posesión de dicho gobierno y informó á vuestra Magestad (diciendo que era para descargo de su conciencia) que la Isla de Faxardo se anega en las mayores crecientes del invierno, y así que el mejor sitio para la deseada fortificación es la Angostura á donde pasó personalmente para ver y tantear el terreno, y roboró su informe con el parecer del Rmo. Padre Castillo Religioso Observante de las Misiones de Piritu, venero el misterio con que el Gobernador Dn. Carlos de Sucre tubo por conveniente ocultar á los Misioneros Jesuitos de Orinoco un dictamen tan nuevo y paso á responder con toda brevedad á sus dos proposiciones.

10. Answer to the first part of the Report.

- F 10. Para lo qual devo decir á vuestra Magestad que mi Provincial el Padre Francisco Antonio Gonzalez ansioso de la restauración de las Antiguas Misiones de Orinoco, luego que tubo noticia de dichas Reales Cedulas de vuestra Magestad tuvo por conveniente sacarme de las Misiones de Casanare, y Meta y mandarme bajar á el Rio Orinoco (como lo hice) para prevenir la llegada de dicho Gobernador de Sucre en cuya Compañía y la de su antecesor el theniente de guardias Marinas Arredondo pasé á la revista y registro solemne de dicha Isla de Faxardo, á que asistieron tambien los Principales Jefes de la Real Infantería de la Guayana, todos dimos un semicírculo á la parte inferior de la Isla para facilitar de algun modo la subida á su cumbre formada de peñascos y cardonales con altura mas que suficiente para

in the possession of your Majesty, that thus the three bodies of missionaries may continue to instruct these uncivilized nations in peace, and that the back of the adjacent provinces, which form such a considerable part of South America, may be guarded and secured.

8. This was the aim of our Province of the New Kingdom when, in the year 1719, they sent Fathers Juan Capuel and Juan Romeo to explore the 300 leagues of the Orinoco which flow from the River Meta to Guayana, which they did with all exactitude, taking with them persons well acquainted with the territory; and on the chief point, i.e., the choice of the most suitable spot to fortify and close the access to the Orinoco, the Fathers deferred to the judgment of the Lieutenant and other military chiefs of Guayana, in whose company they carefully surveyed (the river being swollen) the Island of Faxardo fronting the mouth of the River Caroni, and it was declared by unanimous vote to be the most appropriate spot for the desired end.

9. The result of this information sent by the hands of the Provincial of the Society of Jesus in the New Kingdom to your Majesty was a Royal "Cedula" of the 31st October, 1726, and a second sent from Seville the 22nd December, 1729, with two more of the same date, commanding the construction of a Royal fort on the said Island of Faxardo, and two redoubts on either side of the river. These Royal "Cedulas" were intrusted to Don Carlos Sucre, who took upon himself the charge of building the aforesaid fortifications, and thereupon received the dignity of Governor of Cumaná and Guayana, with many other privileges, as shown by the said Royal "Cedulas," and proving the pious Catholic zeal of your Majesty for the security of the great River Orinoco.

But when the Governor de Sucre took possession of the said government, he reported to your Majesty (saying that it was for the freeing of his conscience) that the said Island of Faxardo was submerged during the heavy winter swells, and that, therefore, the best place for the desired fortification was Angostura, where he had personally examined the ground, corroborating his report with the opinion of the Rev. Father Castillo, a Franciscan of the Missions of Piritu. Passing over the mystery with which the Governor Don Carlos Sucre thought fit to conceal this very novel opinion from the Jesuit missionaries of the Orinoco, I pass on to answer his two proposals with all possible brevity.

10. I must first inform your Majesty that my Provincial, Father Francisco Antonio Gonzalez, anxious to restore the old Missions on the Orinoco, so soon as he had news of the said Royal "Cedulas" from your Majesty, thought fit to withdraw me from the Missions of Casanare and Meta, and send me down the Orinoco to await the coming of the said Governor de Sucre, in whose company, and that of his predecessor, the Lieutenant of the marine guard, Arredondo, a thorough inspection and examination of the said Island of Faxardo was made, at which the principal officers of the Royal Infantry of Guayana also assisted. We formed a semicircle round the lowest part to facilitate the ascent to the summit of the island, which is formed of rocks and crags more than high



registrar desde ella uno y otro Lado del Rio Orinoco. Esta parte inferior de la Isla en la mayor creciente de ynvierno deja sobrado campo para una gran fortaleza, almagacenes y quarteles. La parte superior de esta Isla dividida de la Inferior con un estrecho caño del mismo Orinoco en las mayores crecientes se anega en la mayor parte como lo muestra el plan adjunto. Y assi queda verificado el ynforme del Gobernador de Sucre de que se anega la Isla de Faxardo (entendiendose la parte superior que mira hacia la corriente del Rio Orinoco) y queda firme tambien y cierto el Informe antiguo de los dichos Padres exploradores que dió motivo á las Reales Cédulas de vuestra Magestad de que la Isla de Faxardo es el mejor sitio para fortificar, y cerrar el Rio Orinoco, esto es la parte inferior que mira Rio abajo; De modo que esta Isla consta de dos muy juntas una por la mayor parte anegadiza, y otra por la mayor parte alta.

11. Una dificultad sola ocurrió á vista de aquel terreno y es, que un caño llamado Mucura se desprende del Orinoco arriba de la Isla de Faxardo, y vuelve á entrar en el avajo de dicha Isla (como lo muestra el plan adjunto) via por donde parece que el enemigo pudiera evadir el daño en tiempo de las crecientes: Pero este ynconveniente quedará vencido con gran facilidad (á voto de todos los practivos) picando y cortando arboles de un lado y otro de la voca de dicho Caño de Mucura quando corre por él poca ó ninguna agua en verano para que con aquellos palos, y la maleza y arena que trahen las primeras crecientes del ynvierno se ciege enteramente dicho caño medio muy practicado en aquellas Provincias. Querer decir que la artilleria puesta en Faxardo (ahunque el calibre solo sea de á seis) no alcanzará á las barrancas opuestas, es lo mismo que negarle la luz á el dia, quando saben todos por la experiencia hecha que alcanza una bala de mosquete ahunque no á punto fixo, sí por elevacion.

12. La segunda proposicion de dicho Gobernador de Sucre que la Angostura del Orinoco es el mejor sitio para fortificar dicho Rio ya la impugna con mucha solidez, y fuerza de razones el theniente Coronel y Sargento Mayor del presidio de Cumaná el Marques de Sn. Phelipe y Santiago en su ynformacion nuevamente presentada á vuestra Magestad en el Real y Supremo Consejo de Indias en los numeros 5, 6, y 7 porque realmente puesta la fuerza en dicha Angostura quedaban descubiertas ciento y veinte leguas de Rio á el arbitrio de los Olandeses y otros extrangeros; quedaban indefensos las Misiones Apostolicas de los Padres Capuchinos; quedaba camino abierto para destruir las colonias de los Padres observantes de Piritu; quedaba largo campo para formar los extrangeros sus colonias con gravissimo perjuicio de lo interior de toda aquella parte tan notable de la America Meridional; y quedará lo interior de aquellas provincias en continuo sobresalto, y temor de invasiones. Fuera de esta la dicha Angostura (que tengo andada, y examinada palmo á palmo por uno y otro lado muchas veces) se forma de tierras tan aridas, pedregosas, y esteriles y llena de tantas plagas de mosquitos, y otros muchos insectos que es realmente inhabitable, especialmente por no haver en todos sus contornos terreno apto para sembrar ni ahun un poco de

enough to command a view of both sides of the Orinoco. This lower part of the island, even in the highest swell of winter, affords sufficient ground for a large fortress, arsenals, and soldiers' quarters. The higher part of the island is divided from the lower by a small creek of the Orinoco. In the winter swells the greater part of the island is submerged, as will be seen by the inclosed plan. This verifies the report of the Governor de Sucre that the Island of Faxardo is occasionally submerged (that is the highest\* part which looks up the current of the Orinoco), but the former report of the exploring Fathers which called forth your Majesty's Royal "Cédulas" is also confirmed, that the Island of Faxardo is the best place for the fortification, and for preventing access by the Orinoco, that is the lowest part of the island which looks down the river, so that this island consists of two parts, close together, one part mostly submerged and the other part more elevated.

11. This ground presents only one difficulty, which is, that a small creek called Mucura detaches itself from the Orinoco above the Island of Faxardo and flows back to the river below it, as is shown by the inclosed plan, by which means it would seem the enemy might take refuge in the season of the swells. But this inconvenience is easily overcome (according to the opinion of the experienced) by fixing and cutting trees in the creek on either side of the mouth of the creek in the summer when there is little or no water, so that by means of these palisades and the sand and débris brought by the first winter swells the creek will be completely blocked, a method much practised in these provinces. It is said that if the artillery is fixed at Faxardo (though the calibre be even six) it will not reach the opposite ravines. One might as well deny the light of day, for everyone knows by experience that a musket ball reaches not point blank, but by elevation.

12. The second proposition of the said Governor de Sucre, that Angostura is the best place to fortify the Orinoco, has been already attacked with many solid and forcible reasons by the Lieutenant-Colonel Sergeant-Major of the fortress of Cumaná, the Marques de San Phelipe y Santiago, in his report recently presented to your Majesty in your Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies Nos. 5, 6, and 7. For if the fort be really placed at Angostura, 120 leagues of river would be left exposed to the will of the Dutch and other foreigners; the Missions of the Capuchin Fathers would be left an open road for the destruction of the settlements of the Franciscans of Piritu; a large field left to strangers for the establishment of their Colonies to the greatest prejudice of all that considerable part of South America, which would be in continual fear and dread of invasions. Besides all this, the said Angostura (which I have travelled over and examined step by step on both sides many times) is formed of ground so arid, stony, and sterile, and is so full of plagues of mosquitos and many other insects, that it is really uninhabitable, especially because in the whole extent there is no soil in which to sow even a little maize, for which reason not even heathen Indians live in the vicinity. How, then, could poor

A  
The island is composed of two parts, very close together.

The most of the highest part of the island is submerged.

B  
Most of the lowest part is not submerged.

11. Another difficulty is touched upon, but easily disposed of.

C  
Easy answer to another difficulty.

12. The Marques de San Phelipe y Santiago has a good answer to the second part.

E

F

\* I.e., highest up stream.

A maiz, y ahun por eso, ni aun Indios Barbaros viven en todo aquel contorno; como pues podran vivir alli unos pobres forasteros? Luego dicha Angostura no es muy á proposito para la Fortaleza que se pretende.

13. New means of pacifying the Orinoco, two war-boats.

13. Resta solo investigar el medio mas eficaz para atajar los daños mencionados, y para la seguridad que tanto se dessea, assi para las Misiones como para las Provincias de tierra adentro. El mencionado Theniente coronel Marques de San Phelipe y Santiago en su ya citado informe numero 4 dice; que para impedir el trafico y comercio de todo el Orinoco no tan solo á los Olandeses y Franceses, sino tambien á los Indios Caribes (que es el punto mas esencial que se necesita) considera por suficiente y bastante dos Piraguas de mediano porte tripuladas con veinte y cinco ó treinta hombres cada una, y armadas con un par de pedreros, ó falconetes, fusiles, &c., que corran el Orinoco. Para proceder con toda claridad digo que con gran consuelo de todos los partidos de misioneros del Orinoco, quiso poner en planta este medio el Gobernador de Arredondo el año de mill setecientos treinta y tres, y el año siguiente de treinta y quatro á instancia de los mismos misioneros intentó poner en planta las dos Piraguas el Gobernador de Sucre, mas una y otra ocasion fué sin efecto solido (digolo porque pasó á mi vista) y es assi que los primeros arranques fueron muy arduos por falta de bastimentos por falta de soldados, y por falta de remeros (las quales tres faltas siempre las habrá en el Orinoco sino se muda del sistema), dichas expediciones pararon en acabarse luego por falta de bastimentos, por haver desertado muchos soldados hambrientos, y por haverse huydo gran parte de remeros. La campaña que mas duró fué de sessenta dias por haver ido personalmente el Gobernador de Arredondo y como se apagó tan presto la llamarada, se reconoció por los efectos que solo sirvió de encender y avivar el genio cruel y altivo de los Indios Caribes. Las otras repetidas expediciones del Gobernador de Sucre empezadas con tanto afan de la Provincia y costos del Real Herario, tambien han sido transeuntes y se han acavado en breve sin efecto alguno substancial (sino el de comboyar escoltado el situado que de Santa Fé vaxa á la guarnicion de la Guayana contra el qual todos los años ponen assechanzas los Indios Caribes) luego este corsso perpetuo de dichas Piraguas ha enseñado ya la experiencia que es impracticable, y esto aunque huviera abundancia de bastimentos y soldados (la qual no hay) es precisso que no subsista por falta de remeros, porque estos (á causa de estar muy distantes de la Guayana las Misiones de los Padres observantes, y quatro veces mas distantes las Misiones de los Jessuitas) han de ser precisamente Indios de las Misiones de los Padres Capuchinos quienes si á excessivas diligencias de sus misioneros dan el sí para remar por su paga llegado el casso, unos se esconden y otros á pocos dias se vuelven á sus colonias, simulando enfermedad y otros pretextos y esto es irremediable.

14. Two armed vessels would be useful, but not sufficient.

14. Dichas dos piraguas armadas (ojalá se pudieran conseguir) fueran muy del casso una vez ya pacificado el Orinoco y fortificada la Isla de Faxardo, pero para pacificarlo ahora y defenderlo despues no bastan, como no bastaron las nueve piraguas de buen porte, bien armadas y pertrechadas que con noventa soldados (fuera de los remeros) puso en Orinoco el Gobernador de Arredondo. Ni han bastado los repetidos armamentos que como dije ha hecho el Gobernador de Sucre, no solo por las

strangers live there? Therefore Angostura is not the proper place for the proposed fortress.

13. It only remains to investigate the best means of remedying the evils before mentioned, and insuring the security so much desired, both for the missionaries and the provinces of the interior. The aforesaid Lieutenant - Colonel Marquis de San Phelipe y Santiago, in his Report No. 4, already quoted, says, that to close the navigation and commerce of the whole Orinoco, not only to the Dutch and French, but also to the Caribs, which is the essential point, he considers that it would be sufficient to have two pirogues of medium tonnage, manned by 25 or 30 men apiece, and armed with a couple of swivel-guns or falconets, muskets, &c., to cruise in the Orinoco. To explain more clearly, I will say that to the great consolation of all the missionaries of the Orinoco, the Governor de Arredondo attempted to establish these two war-vessels in the year 1733, and in the following year, 1734, at the instance of the said missionaries, it was again attempted by the Governor de Sucre, but on both occasions without lasting effect (I speak as an eye-witness), and the first two attempts were very arduous from want of provisions, soldiers—and rowers, three things which will always be wanting until a different system is adopted on the Orinoco. The plan was put an end to by the desertion of the starving soldiers, the want of provisions, and flight of many of the rowers. The longest expedition lasted 60 days, because the Governor Arredondo accompanied it in person; but it was found that this short attempt, so quickly relinquished, only proved the means of aggravating the haughty and cruel character of the Caribs. The repeated expeditions of the Governor de Sucre, undertaken with so much anxiety to the province and cost to the Royal Exchequer, were also of short duration and of little effect, except as an escort for the money sent every year from Santa Fé to Guiana for the payment of the garrison, for which the Carib Indians invariably lie in ambush. This short trial of the said pirogues has proved by experiment that the plan is not practicable and would continue so, even if there were sufficient provisions and soldiers (which there is not), from want of rowers, for the Missions of the Franciscans are very distant from Guayana, and those of the Jesuits four times further, so that the rowers must be Indians from the Capuchin Missions, who, when they have yielded to the entreaties of the missionaries and agreed to row the ships for their pay, when it comes to the point either conceal themselves or return to their villages in a few days, feigning illness, and other pretexts, and this is irremediable.

14. The two aforesaid armed vessels (would to God that they could be established!) would be very useful if peace were established on the Orinoco and the Island of Faxardo fortified, but they are not sufficient to pacify it now and defend it afterwards, any more than were the nine vessels of considerable tonnage, well armed and provisioned, and manned by 90 soldiers (rowers not included), placed in the Orinoco by the Governor Arredondo. Nor were those

Impossible in the present state of things on the Orinoco.

tres faltas que llevo explicadas sino tambien por la gran fuerza de los Indios Caribes fomentada por los Olandeses, tanto que se han visto penetrar Rio arriba no solo treinta sino sesenta, y á veces ochenta Piraguas de Guerra hasta subir quinientas leguas de Rio sin que les estorben los raudales, contra los quales armamentos se requiere notable resistencia y fuerza á que no llegan dos Piraguas de mediano porte.

15. De modo que assi como el Marques de San Phelipe y Santiago ademas de las fortificaciones y guarniciones que hay en las costas de Cumaná halla por conveniente (y á la verdad con mucha razon) el que en dichas costas cruce siempre en corso una fragata, y una Balandra con las circunstancias que describe en todo el numero 8 de su informe para evitar las osadías y comercios de los extrangeros; assi mismo digo yo que despues de fabricar la Real fuerza de Faxardo, y reductos colaterales que Vuestra Magestad se dignó mandar construir entonces serán muy al propositito las dos piraguas de corso para evitar las osadías y comercios de los extrangeros; y añado que si desde luego se hallare arbitrio para entablar con pie firme en Orinoco dicho curso fuera de grande alivio y resguardo á los artifices y trabajadores de la Isla de Faxardo, y empezaran á respirar los Ministros evangelicos y leales vassallos de Vuestra Magestad que en aquel llano rincon del nuevo mundo se mantienen entre desdichas, y en continuos riesgos de sus vidas por servir á la Divina Magestad, y á la Vuestra.

16. No obstante lo dicho acerca de las dos Piraguas de corso devo añadir (como que he sufrido en mis Misiones muchos ataques de armadas de Indios Caribes) que dichas dos Piraguas ahunque estén bien armadas havran de sufrir abances muy recios, y repentinos hasta que se pacifiquen por fuerza los Indios Caribes. La qual fuerza como dije no puede dimanar de dichas dos Piraguas. Este mi dictamen lo confirma el theniente Coronel Marques de San Phelipe y Santiago en el numero 6 de su informe donde roborando mas el que no conviene construir la fortificacion en la Angostura de Orinoco, añade que en tal caso fuera preciso subir los bastimentos Rio arriba (desde la Guayana) cincuenta ó sessenta leguas de distancia, para lo qual (dice) sin una crecida escolta es muy fatible que los enemigos se los quiten y por consecuencia, &c. De modo que supuesta la fabrica en la Angostura solo para llevarle bastimentos se requiere una crecida escolta, luego en caso de no fabricarse ni aquella ni la Real fuerza de Faxardo solo para el tragin ordinario seria necesario una crecida escolta; luego para el tragin ordinario no bastan dos Piraguas de mediano porte, sin que se vean muchas veces en manifesto peligro, y por consiguiente mucho menos bastarán ni serán suficientes para pacificar y defender el gran Orinoco, sugeto á vuestra Real Corona como sedesea con ansia.

17. En fin, Señor, el que se ponga en planta la fortificacion y dos reductos en la Isla de Faxardo segun lo acordado y mandado ya por vuestra Magestad es lo que conviene para gran dilatacion del evangelio, extension de vuestra Real Corona, y seguridad de las Provincias internadas que siempre viven con el recelo de no tener guardadas las espaldas; este es el mayor deseo de vuestros leales vassallos. Esto huviera executado como lo ofreció el governador de Sucre si su abanzada edad no se lo hubiera impedido. Y esto mismo es

repeatedly placed there by the Governor de Sucre, not only on account of the three wants aforesaid, but also on account of the great strength of the Caribs, assisted by the Dutch, which is such that not only 30, but 60, and sometimes 80, armed war-pirogues have been seen in the Orinoco proceeding 500 leagues up the river in spite of the rapids, against which ships a large force and strong resistance is required, for which two small vessels of medium tonnage cannot suffice.

15. I therefore agree with the Marques de San Phelipe y Santiago that, besides the fortifications and garrisons which are on the coasts of Cumaná, that a frigate and a bilander should continually cruise (for which there is good reason) in the manner described in No. 8 of his Report, to put down the bold advance and commerce of foreigners. I would also say that after the construction of the Royal fort at Faxardo and the side redoubts, as your Majesty has deigned to command, the two vessels would be very useful in suppressing the bold attempts and commerce of foreigners, and still more, if it were possible to establish them on a firm footing at once, their presence in the Orinoco would be a great relief and security to the artisans and labourers in the Island of Faxardo; and the evangelical ministers and loyal subjects of your Majesty who dwell in this humble corner of the New World in continual misfortune and risks, for the service of the Divine Majesty, and yours, will breathe again.

15. He confirms his words by a strong corroboration.

16. Notwithstanding what has been said respecting the two armed vessels (as I have suffered many attacks from the Caribs' vessels during my missionary experiences), I must add that these vessels, even if well armed, will have to suffer many violent and sudden attacks, until the Caribs are forced to keep the peace, for which purpose the two vessels, as I have said, cannot suffice. My opinion is confirmed by the Lieutenant-Colonel Marques de San Phelipe y Santiago in No. 6 of his Report, in which he further proves that Angostura, of the Orinoco, is not the proper place for the fortification, adding that "in that case the vessels, with provisions, would be obliged to travel 50 or 60 leagues up river from Guayana, so that unless a powerful convoy were provided it would be easy for the Indians to intercept them; therefore," &c. So that supposing the fort to be at Angostura, a larger force is needed solely for carrying provisions; or in case the fort is not built there, nor at Faxardo, a large convoy is necessary for ordinary transport, and two vessels of medium tonnage will not suffice, without being often in manifest danger; much less can they suffice to pacify and defend the great Orinoco, and keep it subject to your Royal Crown, as is so anxiously desired.

16. The facts are further proved.

17. In short, Sire, the said fortification and two redoubts on the Island of Faxardo, as was granted and commanded by your Majesty, is what is needed for the greater spreading of the Gospel, extension of your Royal kingdom, and security of the provinces of the interior, which always live in dread of attack through their rear not being guarded. This is the greatest desire of your loyal subjects, and would have been carried out by the Governor de Sucre if he had not been prevented by his great age,

17. The importance of fortifying Faxardo Island.

The age of the Governor de Sucre prevented him from building the fort.

The Royal Court of Santa Fé advises your Majesty of the importance of this fort.  
Field for conversions in Orinoco.

lo que la Real Audiencia de Santa Fé representa á vuestra Magestad en la consulta adjunta, que por las del Real y supremo consejo de Yndias, pongo en las manos de vuestra Magestad siempre abiertas á favor de las conversiones á Nuestra Santa Fé, de los gentilismos de las dos Americas, en las quales el campo que oy parece mas dilatado, y mas arriesgado, es el del famoso Rio Orinoco que Dios ha puesto á la sombra de vuestra Real clemencia.

18. Reflection of the informant.

B

18. No es de mi profession representar medios á vuestra Magestad que faciliten la construccion de la Real fuerza de Faxardo, y lo concerniente á su estabilidad, es assi pero el conocimiento practico que tengo de la desdicha de todo aquel Pais, y el deseo de ver en el floreciente la cristiandad y sugetas aquellas Naciones á vuestra Real Corona, me compele á insignuar á vuestra Magestad.

19. Bringing of settlers to Trinidad and Guiana.

C

19. Lo primero que la llave del Rio Orinoco (ahun despues de fortificada la Isla de Faxardo) será siempre la Isla de la Trinidad de Barlovento contigua á todas las vocas del Orinoco, por que precissamente el dueño de esta Isla dominara á su arbitrio las vocas del Orinoco. Esta Isla Señor ahunque se reputa por la mas fertil de todas las de Barlovento, se halla cassi enteramente despoblada por falta de habitantes; pera dignandose vuestra Magestad mandar pasen en todos los registros de Cumaná, y Caracas familias de Canarias para la Trinidad y la Guayana en la conformidad que pasan á la Habana y á Caracas (con algun socorro mas á causa de la summa pobreza de aquel pais) La Trinidad una vez poblada será un grande antemural para el resguardo del Orinoco y continuandose las remessas de familias á la Guayana, irá tomando fuerzas aquel vasto y despoblado terreno.

D

20. The founding of Colonies at Orinoco would be quickened by grants of privileges.

20. Lo segundo que si vuestra Magestad fuere servido dar al sugeto á quien cometiese el gobierno de Cumaná y la Guayana dos, ó mas cédulas en blanco con honores de fundadores y facultad de repartir tierras &c. á los Españoles de aquellas provincias comarcanas que se animaren á fundar Colonias de Españoles en las riberas del Rio Orinoco desde Guayana hasta Meta (que son cassi trescientas leguas) es fatible que muchos se animen á poblar con notable aumento del comercio con España por ser aquellas tierras de muy fertiles, y tener valles muy al proposito para criar cacao.

E

21. Should the sea submerge the salt mine of Araya the garrison would be left idle and at hand for the fortification of the Orinoco.

F

21. Lo tercero, y ultimo, no puedo menos que insignuar aquello mismo que no dudo habran ya ynformado á vuestra Magestad algunos ó alguno de tantos leales Vasallos como vuestra Magestad tiene en la Provincia de Cumana, de cuyos relatos lo sé yo (No soy testigo de vista como lo soy de lo demas que llevo aqui representado á V. M.), Y es que haviendo un recio Norte puesto de asiento seis ó mas brazas de agua sobre la salina de Araya, haviendo sido construida aquella Real Fuerza unicamente para guardar aquella Salina (que ya no existe) queda ociosa aquella guarnicion de doscientos once soldados, treinta y seis Cañones, arinas &c. Y muy á mano para que siendo gusto de vuestra Magestad pasen los cien soldados á defender el Rio Orinoco y el sueldo de los restantes ciento y once (durante la fabrica) se aplique á la construccion de la Real Fuerza y reductos de la Isla de Faxardo Bastimentos, Lanchas, y demas cossas conducentes á ella.

and this is what is represented to your Majesty by the Royal Court of Santa Fé in the accompanying report of Council, which is placed for consideration in the Royal Supreme Council of the Indies, in the hands of your Majesty, ever open in favour of conversion of the heathens of North and South America to our holy faith, the largest field at present, and that in greatest peril, being the famous River Orinoco, which God has placed under the shelter of your Royal clemency.

18. It is not my duty to represent to your Majesty the best means of constructing the Royal fort at Faxardo, and ensuring its stability, but the practical knowledge which I have of the unhappy state of the said country and my desire of seeing Christianity flourish among these nations, and of making them subjects of your Royal Crown, compels me to make the following representations to your Majesty:—

19. First, that the key of the Orinoco (even when the Island of Faxardo is fortified) will always be the Island of Trinidad of the Windward Islands, which adjoins all the mouths of the Orinoco; wherefore the master of that Island will dominate all the mouths of the Orinoco at pleasure. This Island, although reputed the most fertile of all the Windward Islands, is almost entirely unpopulated for want of settlers; but if your Majesty would command families from the Canaries to be placed on all the registers of Cumaná and Carácas, to settle in Trinidad and Guayana, on the same terms as they go to Havana and Carácas (with some further assistance because of the great poverty of the country), the Island of Trinidad, once populated, will be a rampart of security to the Orinoco, and by continuing to bring families to Guayana this vast unpopulated territory would increase in strength.

20. Secondly, if your Majesty were pleased to give the person to whom you commit the government of Cumaná and Guayana two or more blank Royal "Cédulas," with titles of founders of settlements and power to divide the land, &c., among the Spaniards of the neighbouring provinces, it would encourage the founding of Spanish settlements on the banks of the Orinoco from Guayana to Meta, a distance of nearly 300 leagues. It is probable that many would be encouraged to settle, to the considerable increase of commerce with Spain, the land being very fertile, with valleys well suited to the cultivation of cacao.

21. Thirdly and lastly, I must mention, though your Majesty has doubtless been already informed by one or other of your loyal subjects in Cumaná, from whose reports I have heard it (I am not an eye witness in this as in the other things related), that a violent north wind drove the sea over the salt works of Araya to the depth of 6 fathoms or more. The fort having been constructed solely for the purpose of guarding the works (which no longer exist), the garrison of 211 soldiers, 36 cannons, arms, &c., are left idle, and available, if it please your Majesty, for 100 soldiers to defend the Orinoco, and the pay of the remaining 111 (while the construction is on hand) to be applied to the building of the Royal fort and redoubts of the Island of Faxardo, provisions, boats, and other works relating to it.

22. Y aun dado, y no concedido el caso de que existiera oy la Salina de Araya es cierto que cesso ya el fin primario y total á que miraba aquella Real fuerza, este era impedir la multitud de embarcaciones de extrangeros que iban á cargar Sai á dicha Salina, pero oy hay ya tantas Salinas descubiertas (y francas por despobladas) en las Islas de Barlovento que ahunque estuviera corriente la Salina de Araya, y sin resguardo de soldados no recurrieran los extrangeros á ella por tener las otras Salinas mas cerca; y assi siempre queda en el Real Beneplacito de vuestra Magestad este arbitrio insignuado con el qual sin nuevo costo de las Reales Cajas se facilita la pacificacion del Rio Orinoco, se asegura la extension de los Reales dominios de vuestra Magestad, queda afianzada la seguridad de las Provincias de tierra adentro, y queda promovido por vuestra Real Benignidad el adelantamiento de los tres partidos de Apostolicas Misiones que en el Rio Orinoco y entre sus Gentilismos (que se discurre ocupan mas de mill leguas de terreno) trabajan incessantemente en obsequio de la Divina Magestad y la vuestra, motivos por los quales unicamente pongo con todo rendimiento este escrito en vuestras Reales Manos que humildemente Besso.

Es copia del informe que queda en esta Secretaria del Consejo y Camara de las Indias de la negociacion de las Provincias de la Nueva España de mi cargo.

DON FERNANDO TRIVINO.

*Madrid de 9 Diciembre de 1745.*

22. Supposing, but not granting, the existence of the salt works of Araya at present, it is certain that the object for which the fort was built no longer exists: this was to prevent the number of foreign vessels which came to fetch cargoes of salt from the said works; but so many places for getting salt are now discovered (free, being in unpopulated districts) in the Windward Islands, that even if the works of Araya were available and unguarded, the foreigners would not supply themselves from it, having others much nearer. The means, therefore, lie at your Royal pleasure to pacify the Orinoco, without further cost to the Royal Treasury, thus ensuring the extension of your Majesty's Royal dominions, the security of the provinces of the interior, and the promotion by your Royal benevolence of the three bodies of Apostolic missionaries on the River Orinoco and among its most heathen nations (occupying more than 1,000 leagues of country), who toil incessantly for the service of the Divine Majesty, and yours, the only motives which have moved me to place this report with all submission in your Royal hands, which I humbly kiss.

This is a copy of the Report which remains in the office of the Secretary of State, of the Council and "Camara" of the Indies, for the affairs of the provinces of New Spain under my charge.

(Signed) DON FERNANDO TRIVINO.

*Madrid, December 9, 1745.*

22. Though the salt mine were still in existence the end for which the fort was constructed is so no longer.

B

C

D

E

F

(Al margen la nota siguiente). Informe que hizo á S. M. el Marqués de San Phelipe en atencion á impedir el trafico de los Indios Caribes y extrangeros en el Orinoco.

Report which the Marques de San Phelipe made to His Majesty for stopping the traffic of Caribs and foreigners in the Orinoco.

*Copy annexed.*

Señor,

Sire,

El Marqués de San Phelipe y Santiago puesto á los Reales pies de vuestra Magestad con el mas profundo rendimiento dice; que haviendo visto un informe que hace á vuestra Magestad el R. Padre Joseph Gumilla de la compañía de Jesus, Procurador de la Provincia del Nuevo Reyno de Santa Feé de Bogotá en atencion á impedir el trafico de los Indios Caribes y extrangeros en el Orinoco y fortificarle; y haviendo hecho el exponente de orden de vuestra Magestad informe sobre lo referido y otros puntos le ha parecido conveniente assi al Real servicio como al desinterés y pureza con que el exponente informó y á el arreglado proceder de Dn. Carlos Sucre se halle vuestra Magestad enterado de los reparos que se le ofrecen hacer á el exponente en algunos de los capitulos de dicho informe, que ahunque será sucentamente y sin la formalidad que requeria por hallarse precisado á ponerse en camino para alcanzar el embarcarse en la flota, será lo bastante hallandose el expreso informe en manos de vuestra Magestad para verificar los fundamentos con que informó el exponente, ahunque con el desconsuelo de que siendo uno el fin de los que informan discordando en mucho unos de otros, ha de suspender precisamente ó hacer dudar la determinacion, pero no obstante movido del amor y celo al Real servicio dirá lo que se le ofrece sobre algunos capitulos del expreso informe ynforme del P. Joseph Gumilla.

Al numero 9. Veanse las citadas Reales Cédulas, [696—3]

The Marques de San Phelipe y Santiago, placing himself at the feet of your Majesty with the most entire submission, says that, having seen a report made to your Majesty by the Rev. Father Joseph Gumilla, of the Society of Jesus, Procurator of the Province of the New Kingdom of Santa Fée de Bogota, with regard to preventing the traffic of the Caribs and foreigners in the Orinoco and for its fortification, and having made a report on these and other points according to your Majesty's commands, he has thought it due to the Royal service and to the truth and disinterestedness of the aforesaid informant, and the regular proceedings of Don Carlos Sucre, that your Majesty should be made aware of the objections he can offer to the testimony of the former, though it must necessarily be done briefly and without the due formality, as he is forced to set out in order to embark in the fleet, yet the report will be sufficient, in the hands of your Majesty, to verify the chief points of the informant's report, but with the regret that where the end is one the various informants should so disagree among themselves as to make it necessary to suspend judgment or to render it doubtful. Nevertheless, moved by love and zeal for the Royal service, he will say what offers under the different headings of Father Joseph Gumilla's report.

No. 9. On looking at the Royal "Cédulas"

2 A



A y se verá que Sucre ha cumplido por su parte. Remitió su dictamen con el del Ingeniero como vuestra Magestad lo previene hasta hoy no le ha ido resolucion en atencion á la fabrica de la fortaleza; sin esta no puede poblar ni fortificar; Pongan otro y habria hecho lo mismo que Sucre.

Al numero 11. Fuera facil la salida que se da el P. Gumilla al Caño de Macura si al Rio del Orinoco fueran sus brazos ó Caños como los de otros Rios; pero siendo tan disformes sus corrientes y fuerzas no con cortar palos de los costados se ha de atajar, antes puede suceder, haga mas caso, á que la mucha fuerza de los Caribes de Orinoco ayudará, quitando los arboles que se cortaren para secar, quedando el Caño ó brazo de Macura como lo está traficable la fortaleza de Faxardo, y los otros dos reductos son inutiles para cerrar el passo.

B  
C  
D  
E  
F  
Al numero 13. Siempre que las Piraguas se pongan en Orinoco sean prestadas de particulares, tripuladas de gente que han ido por respectos de los Gobernadores los mas sin paga, y dejando pereciendo sus hijos en sus casas con cortas provisiones, se retirarán en pocos dias; retiradas se vuelven á juntar los Caribes, y tienen las osadías que han tenido, pero el exponente no habla de esas Piraguas sino dos piraguas armadas por vuestra Magestad con sus pagas puntuales, y gente al proposito que la hay en Cumaná y Guayana, que sirven para los fusiles y los remos, y que bien proveydas de bastimentos estén continuamente en el Rio, teniendo su retirada á la Guayana al Puerto de San Francisco de Assis que es el Castillo; y se afirma el exponente que este es el unico medio para destruir los Caribes del Orinoco, y á los extrangeros interin no hagan armamentos superiores que los que han hecho hasta aqui, pues siempre que los hagan ni la Real fuerza de Araya estará segura siendo la Plaza mas fuerte que hay en Indias, y no hablando el exponente de armamentos transeuntes no pruevan efecto contrario los armamentos hasta aqui hechos.

Al No. 14. El armamento de Arredondo no tan solo hizo retirar los Caribes del Rio sino que quedandose con el P. Gumilla, y alguna gente en las piraguas los mandó perseguir la tierra adentro como lo hicieron algunas leguas; es cierto que el destacamento que internó la tierra faltandose las municiones, y los Caribes abrigados de los Montes Arredondo mandado sostener con doce hombres á cargo de Don Felix de Lei, solo con perdida de un hombre se retiraron á las Piraguas de Arredondo á las que llevó el exponente, ni á ninguna Piragua con buenos pedreros, municiones, y tripulacion, y capaz á llevar veinte y cinco ó treinta hombres desahogado para batirse y dar caza, no ha havido un exemplar en los años que ha estado en Cumaná y Guayana el exponente, ni hasta la fecha de esta noticia se hayan atrevido los Caribes á atacar, ni á abordar pues lo mas que han hecho ha sido desembarcar en tierra, y abrigados de las montañas de las riberas defenderse, y en el Rio aunque pasen muchas de sus Piraguas no han de atacar jamas en agua, no asegura el exponente el Rio Orinoco con solo las dos Piraguas de crecidas fuerzas si solo impedir el ocupar el Rio los Caribes, y comunicarse con los estrangeros y viendose perseguidos desampararán el terreno como lo desampararon havia quince ó veinte años en la Provincia de Cumaná, y quedaron las demas naciones de Indios libres para poblarse como lo han hecho."

it will be seen that Sucre has obeyed them on his side; he sent his opinion and that of the engineer, as your Majesty desired him, and till the present time no decision on the subject of the fort has been sent to him, and without this he can neither build nor make settlements. Any other person would have acted in the same way as Sucre.

No. 11. The means suggested by Father Gumilla for blocking the Creek of Macura would be easy enough if the creeks and branches of the Orinoco were like those of other rivers; but the great strength of its currents could not be stopped by palisades from side to side; and, moreover, it might also be that the power of the Caribs would help the river by removing the trees cut down in order to dry up the Creek of Macura, so that it would be navigable, as it is at present, and the fortress and two redoubts would be useless to close the passage.

No. 13. The pirogues hitherto placed in the Orinoco have been lent by private persons, and manned by persons who have gone at the request of the Governor, most of them without pay, leaving their families in want at home, so that they withdraw themselves in a few days, and the Caribs gather together again and renew their bold attempts. But the informant is not speaking of such pirogues as these, but of two armed pirogues provided by your Majesty with regular pay, and the proper men, such as can be found in Cumaná and Guayana, to serve as gunners and rowers, well provided with provisions and, always on the river, having their head-quarters in Guayana, at the port of San Francisco de Assis, which is the fortress. The informant says that this is the only means of freeing the Orinoco from Caribs and foreigners; but while a superior force to that which has been already tried is not provided, not even the Royal fort of Araya, the best stronghold in the Indies, is secure; but as he is not speaking of the aforesaid temporary vessels, they cannot be cited in the matter.

No. 14. The expedition of Arredondo not only drove the Caribs from the Orinoco, but he also remained in the ships with Father Gumilla and a small force, and sent them inland, and they explored the ground for several leagues. It is certain that this detachment, falling short of ammunition, and being attacked by Caribs under cover of the forest, found themselves hard pressed; but Arredondo having sent them a reinforcement of twelve men, commanded by Don Felix de Lei, they returned to the vessels, in which were Arredondo and the informant, with the loss of only one man. In all the years that the informant spent in Cumaná and Guayana there has not been a single instance, even to the date of this Report, of the Caribs having dared to attack or come near any vessels well armed with swivel-guns and ammunition, properly manned by from twenty-five to thirty men, and free to move quickly and give chase. The most they have ever done is to disembark and defend themselves under cover of the forests on the banks, and though many of their vessels pass in the river, they never attack on the water. The informant says that the two vessels of greater strength would prevent the Caribs from occupying the river and communicating with strangers, and finding themselves molested, they would evacuate the land as they did fifteen or twenty years ago in the Province



Al No. 16. No negara el exponente que las Piraguas tendrán encuentros pero afirma que siempre en el Rio se burlarán de los Caribes aunque sean muchos, y como haya viento que de ordinario lo hay en aquel Rio metidas á la vela sin armas de fuego pasarán por sobre las Piraguas Caribes, y las dejarán sumergidas por ser su construccion muy debil.

Al No. 17. Por fin dice que se tome el compás, y en en el mapa que presenta el P. Gumilla fielmente delineado por el que levantó Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo Ingeniero que destinó vuestra Magestad á este fin y se hallará ser el Rio mas estrecho en frente del Castillo de San Francisco de Asis de la Guayana á la Isleta del caño de Limones que no los dos brazos ó vocas que defiende la fortaleza que se pide en la Isla de Faxardo para impedir el passo, como lo prueba el mapa (sin duda por esta razon los antiguos construyeron el Castillo de San Francisco de Assis donde se halla situado, y no en la Isla de Faxardo) pues assentado esto en que no puede haver contradiccion para que es Nueva poblacion, ni fortificacion en parte menos al proposito, abandonar el Castillo existente con poblacion que tiene sus estancias, sus hatillos de ganado vacuno y Caballos, casas é Iglesias, sementeras y veinte y cinco familias que de orden de vuestra Magestad se llevaron el año pasado para aumento de aquella poblacion, ligada como esta con las Misiones de los Padres Capuchinos de Cataluña, que unas poblaciones con otras se acaloran, ó á lo menos dividir las fuerzas con nuevos y crecidos costos, y aumento de tropas que divididas ciento serán cincuenta? Y assi dice que de determinar vuestra Magestad aumentar fortificacion (que será muy conveniente y preciso) lo mas al proposito es en la Guayana, y este no es solo dictamen suyo sino del yngeniero Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo que assi lo tiene proyectado, poniendo un reducto en la Isleta del Caño de Limones, y reparando el Castillo de la Guayana que es fuerte por su natural situacion en una peña, pero para assegurar este castillo es necessario construir un reducto pequeño en un picacho de Monte que es el unico padrastro que predomina al Castillo; y para prueba de lo que lleva expressado demuestra los planos y perfiles originales que levantó el Ingeniero de los dos reductos, y un plano de la situacion de el Castillo por si acaso no huviesen llegado á manos de vuestra Magestad las copias que remitió Don Carlos Sucre, y el Ingeniero en que se conocerá teniendo presente el plano presentado por el Padre Gumilla, lo mas conveniente y menos costoso que es fortificar en la Guayana que no en la Isla de Faxardo.

La abanzada edad de Don Carlos de Sucre no ha sido causa para no averse hecho la fortificacion en Orinoco, ni ha pendido de su arbitrio, pues en la citada Real Cedula de veinte y dos de Diciembre de mil setecientos y veinte y nueve, manda vuestra Magestad á Don Carlos de Sucre, y dice: Y conviniendo asegurar el acierto assi en la planta como en la execucion de esta fortaleza, he dado Orden al expressado Don Carlos de Briones para que luego que llegue á la Isla de Faxardo, forme un plano de ella y el Rio Orinoco en aquellas cercanias con expression de la profundidad y an-

of Cumaná, and would leave the other Indian nations free to form settlements as they did before. A

No. 16. The informant does not deny that the vessels may have encounters, but he affirms that so long as they are on the river they can scoff at the Caribs, however numerous; and when there is a wind, as there usually is on this river, they can, without using fire-arms, sail over the canoes of the Caribs, and easily swamp them because of their frail construction.

No. 17. Lastly, he says, that on measuring on the map presented by Father Gumilla, which is a faithful copy of that drawn by Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo, the engineer designated by your Majesty for that purpose, it will be found that the river is narrower before the Fort of San Francisco de Asis of Guayana, at the small island of the Creek of Limones, than at the two branches or mouths which the fort in the Island of Faxardo is proposed to defend and close the passage. This is proved by the map, and doubtless this was the reason that our predecessors built the Fort of San Francisco de Asis in its present position rather than on the Island of Faxardo. Granting this, which cannot possibly be contradicted, to what purpose is a new fort in a less suitable position, or a new settlement, or to abandon the present fort and settlement with its farms, herds of cattle and horses, houses, churches, cultivated lands, and twenty-five families which were sent there last year by your Majesty's order to augment the settlement, bound up as it is with the Missions of the Capuchin Fathers of Catalonia? One settlement is fostered by another, but why divide our strength with new and increased expenses, and require an augmentation of troops, as 100 soldiers divided leaves only fifty a-piece; therefore, should your Majesty decide to increase the fortifications (as is most fitting and necessary), the best place to do so is Guayana, which is not only this informant's opinion, but also that of the engineer, Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo, who had so planned it, placing a redoubt on a small island in the Creek of Limones, and repairing the Fort of Guayana, the natural situation of which, upon a rock, enhances its strength; but to secure the fort it would be necessary to build a small redoubt on a mountain summit, which is the only point dominating the fort, and in proof hereof you are referred to these original plans and outline sketches made by the engineer of the two redoubts, and a plan of the situation of the fort in case the copies sent by Don Carlos Sucre and the engineer should not have come to the hands of your Majesty, by which it will appear, by comparison with the plan presented by Father Gumilla, that the most convenient and least costly project would be to build fortifications at Guayana, and not in the Island of Faxardo. B C D E

The advanced age of Don Carlos de Sucre has not been the cause of the fortifications not being built, nor has it depended on his will, for in the Royal "Cedula" of the 22nd December, 1729, your Majesty commanded him as follows: "It being advisable to make sure of the stability of this fortress, both in its planning and construction, I have commanded Don Carlos de Briones that so soon as he arrives at the Island of Faxardo he shall make a plan of the said island, and of the Orinoco in that place, pointing out the depth and width of the water F

- A chura que tuviere el agua en todo el circuito de la Isla, y assi mismo una planta y perfiles del fuerte que conviene construir, explicando en relacion separada los materiales y demas circunstancias con que se huviere de fabricar segun la disposicion que diere el Pais, y el costo que tendrá assi la compra y el apronto de los expressados materiales, como la maniobra de ellos, yncluyendo y demostrando tambien en la planta y en las relaciones que formare los almacenes y havitaciones que se necesitaren para las municiones de guerra y de voca, y alojamiento de la guarnicion encargandole tambien que firmando de su mano los expresados planos, y relaciones os los entregue; en cuya consecuencia os ordeno que luego que esten en vuestro poder pongais vuestra dictamen á continuacion de los mismos planos y relaciones, explicando todo lo que se os ofreciere sobre su conthenido, ó en papel separado, y que firmado tambien de vuestras manos lo remicais todo á mi Consejo de Indias en la primera ocaasion que se ofrezca."
- B

in the whole circuit of the island, with a plan and outline sketch of the fort which it would be fitting to construct, explaining separately the materials and other things needed for its construction, according to the nature of the country, and the cost of buying and preparing the materials and the necessary labour, indicating and explaining in his plan and account the store-houses and habitations necessary for provisions and ammunition, and quarters for the garrison: charging him also that having signed the said plans, and explanations, with his own hand, he deliver them to you, for which reason I command you that so soon as they are in your possession, you write your opinion at the foot of the said plans and explanations, saying whatever their contents require, or on a separate paper, which, also signed by your hands, you shall remit to my Council for the Indies on the first occasion that offers."

- Al margen la nota siguiente: "Carta escrita por el P. Joseph Gumilla al Brigadier Don Diego Tabares, luego que tomó posesion de este Gobierno participandole entre otros capitulos que el Memorial que dió al Rey, y trahia, lo ejecutó por obedecer á su Padre Provincial, quien le mandó escribiera á favor de la Isla de Faxardo pero que halló en Dios y en su conciencia que era mejor y de menos costo fortificar la Isla de Limones.
- C

Letter from Father Joseph Gumilla to the Brigadier Don Diego Tabares when he took possession of this Government, telling him, among other things, that he wrote the Memorial which he carried to the King in obedience to his Father Provincial, who bade him write in favour of the Island of Faxardo, but in God and his own conscience he thought it better and less expensive to fortify the Island of Limones.

*Copy annexed.*

- Sea vuestra Señoria muy bien venido para gloria de Dios, servicio del Rey nuestro Señor, y converssion de todos los barbaros del Orinoco que assi lo espero del celo y piedad de vuestra Señoria.
- D
- Saludar á vuestra Señoria y congratularme del feliz viage porque de Caracas á Santa Fée y de Santa Fée á acá caminé muy tarda la noticia.

My Lord Governor and Captain-General Don Diego de Tabares, my obedient salutations and congratulations for your prosperous journey come late because the news travelled slowly from Carácas to Santa Fée and from Santa Fée here.

I bid you welcome for the glory of God, the service of our Lord the King, and the conversion of all the savages of the Orinoco, which I expect from your zeal and piety.

- Señor, no por via de querella del predecesor de vuestra Señoria sino para que vuestra Señoria conceda lo que otros Señores Gobernadores practicaron siempre (por ser voluntad del Rey nuestro Señor) ruego á vuestra Señoria mucho que los siete ó ocho soldados que el Señor Espinosa mandó que desamparasen las Misiones de Orinoco, y se volviesen á su quartel de Guayana (quando!) quando ya estaba saqueada y quemada por amor de Dios mande vuestra Señoria que se destaque de dicha Guayana el mismo numero para socorro de dichas Misiones oprimidas por todos lados de barbaros, y con escolta menos competente para su defensa.
- E

Sir, not to find fault with your predecessors, but in order that you may grant, as they have been used to do (it being the will of our Lord the King), I beseech you for the seven or eight soldiers which Señor Espinosa commanded to return to their quarters in Guayana, from the Missions of Orinoco, (when!) when these were sacked and burnt; for the love of God command a detachment of the like number to be sent from Guayana to succour the said Missions imprisoned by savages on every side, and with a guard less competent for their defence.

- El Padre Ferrer me avisa los eficaces deseos de V. S. de que doy mill gracias á Dios, y me dice que V. S. trahe consigo el Memorial que presenté á S. Magestad pero con la ingenuidad que devo, y professo me veo obligado á participar á V. S. (cuyo mayor acierto desseo mucho), que por obedecer á mi P. Provincial que era entonces, y me lo mandó escribi á favor de la Isla de Faxardo pero porque hallé en Dios y en mi conciencia que es mucho mejor y mucha menos costa fortificar la Isla de Limon sita en la otra vanda de la Real fuerza de Guayana, di al Señor Fiscal del Consejo de Indias, D. Josseph Borrull, un manuscrito con mi firma
- F

Father Ferrer has made known to me your practical desires, for which I render thanks to God, and also that you bring with you the Memorial which I presented to His Majesty; but with the candour to which my profession binds me I am obliged to inform your Excellency (whose best information I greatly desire) that in obedience to my Father Provincial who then was, I wrote in favour of the Island of Faxardo, but knowing in God and my conscience that it is much better to fortify the Island of Limones situated on the opposite side of the Royal fort of Guayane, and that this

con muchas razones á favor de que se cierra mejor el Rio Orinoco por dicho sitio:—

Lo primero el menor costo, segundo que de fortificar en Faxardo quedan doce leguas descubiertas á los extrangeros para entrar á las Misiones de los Reverendos Padres Capuchinos ó para marchar por todas las Misiones de Piritu ó á Barcelona, ó á Carácas, y este solo motivo sobra, y omito los otros aunque no despreciables; la mucha comprehension de V. S. verá que es assi, y para mi es tan cierto que di cincuenta pesos de contado en que se havia tassado una estacada en dicho Caño de Limon, y no se efectuó.

Y en fin Señor, mucho puede hacer V. S. con animar á los Reverendos Padres de Piritu á que se planten en Puruey, partido que S. Magestad que Dios guarde tiene destinado para sus Apostolicos empleos porque este es (por ahora) el unico remedio para que los Caribes no perturben la Paz de las Misiones de la Compañia de Jesus que estan á mi cargo. Yo de los Christianos aceros de V. S. me prometo esta co-operacion y mucho mas, y tambien espero que esta nobilissima Comission que la eximia piedad de Nuestro invicto Monarcha ha puesto á la direccion de V. S. sera noble merito y ultimo escalon para los supremos ascensos que ya V. S. se tiene merecidos, y á que toda esta mi Provincia del Nuevo Reyno cooperará con ansia.

La Divina Magestad conceda á V. S. Salud y vida para todo assi se lo ruego. Y V. S. me mande como á su afecto estimador.

Besa las manos de V.S. su mas rendido capellan,

JOSSEPH GUMILLA *Soc. Jhñ.*

*Misiones de Casanare, Octubre 4 de 1746.*

would also be less expensive, I gave the Fiscal of the Council of the Indies, Don Joseph Borrull, a manuscript with my signature containing many reasons in favour of fortifying the Orinoco at the said place:—

Firstly, less expense; secondly, that by fortifying Faxardo, 12 leagues are left exposed to foreigners to enter the Missions of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, or set out for all the Missions of Piritu, Barcelona, or Carácas, and this reason is sufficient to warrant my omitting the others, though they are not to be despised. Your Excellency's judgment will perceive the truth of this, and I am so certain of it that I gave 50 pesos ready money, which was the estimate for making a palisade in the said Creek of Limones, but it was never effected.

Lastly, Sir, you might do much by encouraging the Reverend Fathers of Piritu to establish themselves at Puruey, the place destined by His Majesty (whom God keep) for their apostolic labours, because this is at present the only means of preventing the Caribs from disturbing the peace of the Missions of the Society of Jesus under my charge. I promise myself this co-operation and much more from the Christian zeal of your Excellency, and I also hope that the most noble commission, which the exalted piety of our unconquered Monarch has confided to your care, may be an occasion of noble merit, and the last step on the ladder of the highest dignities which your Excellency has already deserved, to which end all this my Province for the New Kingdom will anxiously co-operate.

May the Divine Majesty grant you many years of health and life to accomplish all, for which I beseech him.

Your Excellency's to command with all affectionate esteem.

I kiss your Excellency's hands.

Your most obedient chaplain,

(Signed) JOSEPH GUMILLA, S.J.

*Missions of Casanare, October 4, 1746.*

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Real instruccion sobre fortificar el Orinoco, dada al Gobernador Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, y de lo que ultimamente se previene en su observancia al Señor Don Diego Tabares.

(Al margen la siguiente nota.) Real Cedula mandando al Señor Gobernador Don Diego Tabares se arregle á la instruccion dada a Don Gregorio de Espinosa para fortificar el Orinoco.

(Al margen la siguiente nota.) Junta sobre elegir puesto ó terreno para construir un fuerte que cierre el Orinoco, en la que se determinó el Caño de la voca de Limones frente al Castillo de San Francisco de Assis de la Guayana celebrada por Don Agustin de Arredondo Gobernador y Capitan-General que fué de la Isla Trinidad de Barlovento, y Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo.

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Auto de proceder al reconocimiento del sitio que estaba previsto; y aprobado para establecer el fuerte de San Fernando en la punta de la Isla del Caño de Limones por la parte del. Leste y á el del inmediato en la tierra-firme como mas util y ventajoso.

[696—3]

Royal instructions on the fortifications of the Orinoco given to Governor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, and orders for observing them ultimately sent to Señor Don Diego Tabares.

Royal "Cedula" commanding the Governor, Don Diego Tabares, to follow the instructions given to Don Gregorio de Espinosa for the fortification of the Orinoco.

Committee to decide on the site of the fort for closing access to the Orinoco, in which it was decided to choose the Creek of Limones, opposite the Fort of San Francisco de Assis of Guayana, well known through Don Augustin de Arredondo, late Governor and Captain-General of the Island of Trinidad of the Windward Islands, and Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo.

Decree for proceeding to reconnoitre the site chosen and approved for the building of the Fort of San Fernando on the point of the island in the Creek of Limones on the eastern part, and that nearest to the mainland, as the most useful and advantageous.

2 B

- A** (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Junta en que se acuerdo y determino la construccion de la bateria de San Fernando en la parte de la tierra-firme del Caño de Limones frente del Castillo de San Francisco de Assis por haverse el Rio Orinoco robado la parte de la isla del mismo caño donde havia de fabricarse.
- Committee in which it was determined to construct the battery of San Fernando on the part of the mainland of the Creek of Limones opposite the Fort of San Francisco de Assis, the Orinoco having encroached on that part of the island in the creek where it was to be constructed.
- B** (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Carta del Exmo. Sr. Don Phelipe Ricardos en que se expresa amenazar ruyna irreparable el comercio ilícito de los extrangeros en el Rio Orinoco, y de internarse estos hasta las provincias que baña dicho Rio.
- Letter from Don Phelipe Ricardos, in which he declares that the illicit commerce of foreigners in the Orinoco threatens irreparable ruin, and that they will penetrate to the provinces washed by that river.
- (Al margen la siguiente nota.) Carta escrita por el Ingeniero Don Juan Bautista Maceván al Excmo. Sor. Virrey del Nuevo Reyno de Granada, apoyando en todo por exacto la carta y perfil con que dio cuenta á su Excellencia el Gobernador Dn. Diego Tabares.
- Letter from the engineer, Don Juan Baptista Macevan, to his Excellency the Viceroy of the New Kingdom of Granada, certifying the map and outline which he sent for the information of his Excellency the Governor, Don Diego Tabares.
- C** (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Carta del Excelentísimo Sr. Virrey Dn. Sebastian de Eslaba aprovando el parage elegido para situar el fuerte San Fernando, y la forma de hacer su construccion.
- Letter from his Excellency the Viceroy, Don Sebastian Eslaba, approving the site chosen for the fort of San Fernando and the plan for its construction.
- (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Carta del Excmo. Sr. Virrey de Santa Fé, remitiendo al Gobernador Dn. Diego Tabares, los dies y seis mill pessos destinados para la construccion del nuevo fuerte.
- Letter from his Excellency the Viceroy of Santa Fé, remitting to the Governor, Don Diego Tabares, the 16,000 pesos for the construction of the new fort.
- D** (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Real Orden comunicado por el Excmo. Señor Bo. Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga al Gobernador Dn. Mateo Gual mandandole que en la estacion favorable, luego, y sin dilacion se emprehendan las obras respectivas á la construccion del nuevo fuerte San Fernando con ardor hasta su entera conclusion, valiendose del residuo que existe en estas cajas, y en su defecto de los mas exequibles assi para su fabrica como artilleria, de suerte que la primera noticia sea que se halla ya concluida, ó en estado de ello, poniendo libre de la prission al Ingeniero Dn. Gaspar de Lara para que dirija la obra, y se forme calculo de lo que faltare para que con noticia de todo disponga el Virrey la pronta remesa de el que se necessitare.
- Royal Order sent to the Governor, Don Mateo Gual, by the Knight of Malta, Don Julian de Arriaga, that in the favourable season the construction of the new fort of San Fernando, be undertaken without delay, and zealously continued until absolute completion, making use of the surplus in this treasury, and, in its default, of those most available, both for its construction and artillery, so that the first news received be of its completion, or near completion, setting the engineer, Don Gaspar de Lara, free from prison to direct the works and calculate what is wanted, that the Viceroy may have notice thereof, and order the prompt remittance of all that is necessary.
- E** (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Decreta dando cumplimiento á la antecedente Real Orden.
- Decree ordering the execution of the former Royal Order.
- Decreto mandando compulsar testimonio de la antecedente Real Orden para dar cuenta al Excm. Señor Virrey.
- Decree commanding evidence to be taken concerning the former Royal Order for the information of the Viceroy.
- (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Decreto mandando al Sargento Mayor Don Gaspar de Salaverria forme calculo del residuo existente de los diez y seis mill pessos destinados para la construccion del fuerte San Fernando y de lo que se necesite para la conclusion de su obra y artilleria.
- Decree commanding Sergeant-Major Don Gaspar de Salaverria to give an account of the balance over from the 16,000 pesos destined for the construction of the Fort San Fernando, and of what is wanted for finishing the work and for its armament.
- F** (Al margen la nota marginal siguiente.) Auto mandando acumular los documentos que en el se citan.
- Decree commanding the document named therein to be filed.

*Copy annexed.*

Haviendo visto el testimonio de las Reales Cédulas, Ordenes, y demas documentos mandados compulsar en auto de primero del Corriente para los efectos conducentes al cumplimiento de Reales

Having seen the testimonies concerning the Royal "Cédulas," Orders, and other documents ordered on the 1st of the current month, with respect to the carrying out of the orders of His

Ordenes de Su Magestad (que Dios guarde) portanto dijo su Señoria que conviniendo al asunto la copia de carta escrita por el Señor su antecesor Dn. Nicolas de Castro á Monsieur Gravesande que se halla en el archivo de Gobierno, expresandose no hallarse con libertad para la restitution de los dos presos Olandeses, un negro esclavo, y una grifa con sus hijos que halló la guardia despachada por el Comandante de Guayana en una Isla del Rio Cuyuni, y se mantenian en el injusto comercio de Indios poitos, hasta la determinacion de Su Magestad. Las diligencias testimoniadas que remitió á este Tribunal de Gobierno, el referido Comandante sobre la cogida de dichos Olandeses. Y el estado de las Misiones de los reverendos Padres Capuchinos de Guayana con las noticias previas de su fundacion y establecimiento, dado por el M. R. P. Prefecto de aquella comunidad Fr. Fidel de Santo, los que se acumularan en debida forma para en su vista determinar lo que mejor convenga á el Real servicio. Proveyolo el Sr. Dn. Josseph Diguja Villagomez, Coronel de los Reales Ejercitos, Governador y Capitan General de estas Provincias por el Rey Nuestro Señor que lo firmó en esta Ciudad de Cumaná en veinte y siete dias del mes de Jullio de mill setecientos sessenta y tres años de que doy fé.

DIGUJA.

Ante mí:

LUIS DE FIGUEROA VALLEJOS,  
*Escribano Real de Governacion.*

Majesty (whom God preserve), his Excellency A says that it would be suitable to the occasion to have a copy of the letter written by his predecessor, Don Nicolas de Castro, to M. Gravesande, which is in the Archives of the Government, advising him that he was not at liberty to restore the two Dutch prisoners, a negro slave, and a negress with her children who were found by the guard sent by the Commander of Guayana on an island in the Rio Cuyuni, carrying on the illegal Indian slave trade, until he receives His Majesty's decision; the depositions which the Commander remitted to this Tribunal concerning the taking of the aforesaid Dutch prisoners; the account of the state of the Missions of the Capuchins of Guayana with the previous accounts of their foundation and establishment, given by the Rev. Prefect of that community, Father Fidel de Santo, which documents are to be filed in due form, that on their perusal it may be decided what is most fitting to be done for the Royal service. They were therefore furnished by Señor Don Joseph Diguja Villagomez, Colonel of the Royal Forces and Captain-General and Governor of these provinces, for our Lord the King, who signed it in this city of Cumaná the 27th July, 1763, to which I testify. B C

(Signed) DIGUJA.

Before me:

(Signed) LUIS DE FIGUEROA VALLEJOS,  
*Royal Notary to the Government.*

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Copia de carta escrita por el Governador Don Nicolas de Castro á M. Gravesande, participandole no hallarse con libertad para la restitution de los dos presos Olandeses, un negro esclavo y una grifa con sus hijos que halló la guardia despachada por el Comandante de Guayana en una Isla del Rio Cuyuni y se mantenian en el injusto comercio de Indios Poitos, hasta la determinacion de Su Magestad.

Copy of a letter from the Governor Don Nicolas de Castro to M. Gravesande, advising him that he is not at liberty to restore the two Dutch prisoners, a negro slave, and a negress and her children, found by the guard dispatched by the Commander of Guiana on an island of the River Cuyuni, carrying on the unjust Indian slave trade, until he receives His Majesty's decision. D

(Otra nota al margen.) Carta escrita por el M. R. P. Fr. Benito de la Garriga al Alferez Don Felix Ferreras avisandole entre otras cosas que los principales motores de la sublevacion del Pueblo de Tupuquen, se hallan tierra adentro del Rio Cuyuni, y en la misma voca del Rio Corumo, viviendo con dos Olandeses de la Colonia de Esquivo, y haciendo el comercio de Indios Poitos.

Letter written by the Rev. Father Benito de la Garriga to the Ensign Don Felix Ferreras, advising him that the chief movers of the rebellion of the village of Tupuquen were found inland, by the River Cuyuni and at the mouth of the River Corumo, living with two of the Dutch from the Colony of Esse- quibo, carrying on the Indian slave trade. E

(Otra nota al margen.) Provision y orden de Don Felix Ferreras para apprehender dichos Olandeses.

Provision and order from Don Felix Ferreras for the apprehension of the said Dutch people.

(Otra nota al margen.) Instruccion que dió á Don Santiago Bonalde, y á Don Luis Santos á quienes comisionó para dicha diligencia.

Instructions which he gave to Don Santiago Bonalde and Don Luis Santos, whom he commissioned to go on the said expedition.

Auto nombrando testigos para actuar en la apprehension de los dos Olandeses.

Decree naming witnesses to support the apprehension of the two Dutch people. F

(Nota al margen.) Diligencia y aceptacion.

Instructions and acceptance.

Auto mandando á cumular los instrumentos citados, y que se proceda á la averiguacion de la nprehension de dichos Olandeses.

Decree commanding the aforesaid instruments to be filed and the Dutch to be apprehended.

Diligencia—Declaracion del primer Cabo; siguen varias Declaraciones.

Examination—Declaration of the First Officer. Various Declarations follow.

- A Auto de mandamiento—siguen Declaraciones de Olandeses—Traduccion—Articulo—Cuenta de los Olandeses—Deudas de los Caribes á los dichos Olandeses—Auto de remision y mandamiento.

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Estado de las Misiones de los RR. PP. Capuchinos de Guayana, con las noticias previas de su fundacion y establecimiento dado por el M. R. P. Prefecto de ellas Fray Fidel de Santo.

## B

*Estado actual de las Misiones de los Capuchinos de Guayana con las Noticias previas de su fundacion y Establecimiento.*

- C Si bien es verdad que desde el año de mill se-  
cientos veinte y quatro empezaron los Indios de la Provincia de Guayana á tener perseverancia en la fée Catholica que les predicaron los Misioneros Capuchinos Cathalanes, y por tanto puede decirse que desde entonces empezó su verdadera fundacion. no obstante ya no fue en dicho año que empezó á predicarse el Santo evangelio en la mencionada provincia, pues se intiére de un libro antiguo de Bautismos que desde el año mill seiscientos sesenta quatro entraron varios sacerdotes en diferentes tiempos á la pacificacion y reduccion de los naturales coma fueron: el Padre Josseph Sampayo Religioso de Santo Domingo; el Padre Manuel de la Purificacion descalzo de San Augustin; los clérigos Don Francisco de Roxas; Don Miguel Buenaventura de Angulo; Don Josseph de Figueroa y el Racionero Don Andres Fernandez; los Padres Jesuitas Juan de Vergara; Dionisio Mesland;
- D Francisco de Mauri, é Ignacio Cano; los Capuchinos Cathalanes el Padre Angel de Mataró, y el Padre Pablo de Blanes.

- A estos dos Capuchinos y demas hicieron los Padres de la Compañia solenne renuncia de las dichas Misiones con autoridad del Señor Gobernador de la Trinidad, Don Tiburcio Arpe y Zuñiga, el año de mill seiscientos ochenta y uno, y este las consignó á dichos Capuchinos Cathalanes por el encargo que tenia de la Real Audiencia de Santa Fée para proveer de Misioneros á la Provincia de Guayana, segun consta por autos que paran en el Gobierno de la Trinidad, como y tambien las
- E Reales Cédulas de siete de febrero de mill seiscientos ochenta y seis y veinte y nueve de Abril de mill seiscientos ochenta y siete, por las quales concede Su Magestad y destina á los Religiosos Capuchinos Cathalanes para las Misiones de la Provincia de Guayana, los quales sí bien desde entonces tomaron sobre si este cargo, pero eran tantas las misserias desdichas, y muertes de los Religiosos que por no ser posible el ser socorridos en tantos desamparos, especialmente con el remplazo de los Compañeros que iban feneciendo, se veian largas interrupciones con que cessaba el Ministerio apostolico, perdiendose enteramente con ellas quanto se havia adelantado en el bien las
- F almas y pacificacion de los naturales.

Notasse lo primero, que quassi todas las dichas diez y seis Misiones se estan fomentando todavia con nuevos Indios que se van sacando de los montes ó se recogen sus fugitivos. Se nota lo segundo, que es dificultosísimo juntar muchos Indios en un mismo sitio por dos razones: La primera es porque estando ellos dispersos en

Order—Declarations of the Dutch—Translation—Plea—Bill of the Dutch—Debts of the Caribs to said Dutch people—Decree of Remission and Order.

State of the Missions of the Reverend Capuchins of Guayana, with previous accounts of their foundation and establishment given by their Reverend Prefect Father Fidel de Santo.

*Copy annexed.*

*Actual state of the Capuchin Missions of Guayana with previous accounts of their Foundation and Establishment.*

It is true that ever since the year 1724 the Indians of the Province of Guayana began to show some perseverance in the Catholic faith preached to them by the Capuchin missionaries of Catalonia, and it may therefore be said that their true foundation dates from that time. Although the preaching of the gospel in that province was not begun in that year, it may be inferred from an old register of baptisms that from the year 1664 various priests at different times attempted their pacification and conversion: such were Father Joseph Sampayo, a Dominican, Father Manuel de la Purificacion, barefooted Friar of the Order of Saint Augustine, the priests Don Francisco de Roxas, Don Miguel Buenaventura de Angulo, Don Joseph de Figueroa, and the Prebendary Don Andres Fernandez; the Jesuits Juan de Vergara, Dionisio Mesland, Francisco de Mauri, and Ignacio Cano; the Capuchins of Catalonia, Father Angel de Mataró, and Father Pablo de Blanes.

The Jesuits solemnly renounced these Missions in favour of the two aforesaid Capuchins and others on the authority of the Governor of Trinidad, Don Tiburcio Arpe y Zuñiga, in the year 1681, and he intrusted them to the aforesaid Capuchins of Catalonia, being commissioned by the Royal Audiencia of Santa Fée to provide missionaries for the Province of Guayana, as appears from the Decrees which remain in the Government Office of Trinidad, as also the Royal "Cédulas" of the 7th of February, 1686, and 29th April, 1687, by which His Majesty grants the Missions of the Provinces of Guayana to the said Catalonian Capuchins, who took charge of them from henceforth; but the poverty, misfortunes, and many deaths among the missionaries, it being impossible to succour them in their abandonment, or to send missionaries to replace those who were constantly dying, were the cause of long intervals, in which the Apostolic ministry was at a standstill, and in which all the progress made in the conversions and pacification of the natives was lost.

\* \* \* \*

It should first be noted that nearly all the sixteen Missions aforesaid are still being increased by new Indians reclaimed from the forests, or who are taken in as fugitives. Secondly, that it is very difficult to gather together many Indians in the same place for two reasons; firstly, because they are dispersed in



pequeños ranchos se hace preciso traerlos de largas distancias para juntarlos en un mismo sitio y ellos no quieren dejar sus naturalezas.

La segunda razon es, porque para juntar muchos es menester sea juntando muchos Capitanes que por milagro se aunan, y esta es la causa por que ellos y sus agregados se retiran otra vez quando se enfadan unos contra otros, lo que sucede frecuentemente. A mas que es dificultosísimo por ahora sugetar muchos Indios especialmente de Nacion Cariba.

Ocho Misiones perdidas desde el año de mill setecientos veinte y quatro.

La primera Mision que se perdió fué la de Santa Maria de Yacuaro en el año de mill setecientos y veinte y ocho havindose fundado dos años antes. Se componia de ciento y veinte almas, y de nacion Pariagotos. La causa de su perdicion fueron las Virhuelas.

2. La segunda Mission perdida fué la de San Miguel de Unata compuesta de Indios Guaraunos, fundada el año de mill setecientos treinta y cinco, tubo ciento y quarenta y nueve almas, y la causa de su destruccion fué por haver quemado su pueblo los Caribes.

3. En el año de mill setecientos y quarenta se perdió la Mision de Payarayma por la invasion de los Ingleses, se componia de Indios Arhureas, Salibas y Guaraunos, en numero de doscientas noventa y ocho almas.

4. En el año de mill setecientos quarenta y dos se perdió la Mision de Tipurua por sublevarse sus Indios de Nacion Asayma y eran en numero de ciento y quince.

5. En el año de mill setecientos y cincuenta se perdió la Mission de Cunuri compuesta de Indios Caribes, quienes se levantaron y mataron á seis Españoles, y á poco al Misionero, su numero de almas eran trescientas.

6. En el mismo año y dia se perdió la Mission de Tupuquen compuesta de doscientos y treinta Caribes, y fué por la mismo razon que las dos antecedentes de sublevacion, y con muerte de algunos Españoles, y el Padre Misionario escapó de la muerte prodigiosamente, que tiempo lo tuvieron amarrado para matarle.

7. La misma desgracia, y en el mismo modo padeció la Mision del Curumo compuesta assi mismo de Caribes, en numero de ciento y ochenta almas, y fué el mismo año de mill setecientos y cincuenta.

8. En el año de mill setecientos cincuenta y ocho se perdió la Mision del Tarepi, cuyos Indios que eran Caribes en numero de quarenta y ocho, el año antecedente havian hecho fuga, y fueron otra vez pressos dando muestra de constancia; fueron colocados en el mismo sitio, pero ellos á impulsos de su inconstancia, se huyeron otra vez.

Todo lo qual certifico, y para que conste lo firmé en esta Mission de la Purisima Concepcion de Suay en veinte y seis dias del mes de Febrero año de mill setecientos sessenta y uno.

Fr. FIDEL DE SANTO, *Prefecto.*

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Carta orden para que se guarde lo mandado por S. M. de estar prevenidos con la mira y cuidado como si fuese tiempo de guerra, por la desconfianza que se tiene de los Ingleses, sin dar principio á hostilidad sin que medie la seguridad de haverse practicado por los Ingleses.

[696—3]

small hamlets, and it is necessary to bring them from a distance to establish them in one spot, and they do not wish to leave their own places; secondly, because where many are united it is necessary that there should be many Chiefs among them who are very seldom friendly, by strange chance, and this causes each, with his adherents, to withdraw whenever they disagree among themselves, which frequently happens, so that it is extremely difficult to keep many Indians in subjection, especially those of the Carib nation.

Eight Missions lost since the year 1724 :—

1. The first Mission which was lost was Santa Maria de Yacuaro in the year 1728, which had been founded two years previously, and was composed of 120 souls of the Pariagoto nation. The cause of its loss was an outbreak of small-pox.

2. The second Mission lost was San Miguel de Unata, composed of Guarauno Indians, founded in the year 1735; it consisted of 149 souls. It was destroyed by the Caribs, who burnt it.

3. In the year 1740 the Mission of Payarayma was lost by the invasion of the English. It was composed of Arhureas, Saliba, and Guarauno Indians, to the number of 298 souls.

4. In the year 1742 the Mission of Tipurua was lost by the rebellion of the Asayma Indians, 115 in number.

5. In the year 1750 the Mission of Cunuri, composed of Caribs, was lost; they rebelled and killed six Spaniards, the missionary barely escaping. The Mission was composed of 300 souls.

6. In the same year and day the Mission of Tupuquen, composed of 230 Caribs, was destroyed by the same cause as the two preceding—the rebellion of the Indians—with loss of several Spaniards; and the missionary escaped miraculously, though they had already bound him with the intention of killing him.

7. The same misfortune from the same cause was suffered by the Mission of Curumo, also composed of Caribs, to the number of 180, in the same year 1750.

8. In the year 1758 the Mission of Tarepi was also lost. The Caribs, of whom it was composed, forty-eight in number, had fled the preceding year, but were retaken, and showed signs of perseverance. They were established in the same place, but moved by their inconstant character, they again fled.

All this I certify to be true, in proof whereof I have signed it in this Mission of the Immaculate Conception of Suay, the 26th of February, 1761.

(Signed) Father FIDEL DE SANTO,  
*Prefect.*

Letter giving orders to observe His Majesty's commands to be ready with all care and precautions, as in time of war, on account of the distrust felt of the English, without, however, beginning hostilities unless it be known for certain that they have done so.

2 C

*Copy annexed.*

Sir,

In the course of these last days I have received a general Royal Order, dated from Madrid the 3rd October of last year, communicated by his Excellency Don Julian de Arriaga, Lieutenant-General of the Royal Navy, Secretary of State, and of the Council for the Navy and the Indies, Knight of Malta, in which His Majesty deigns to inform me that although he is desirous of the preservation of peace, to preserve his beloved subjects from the misfortunes which always attend war, yet he has, and will still continue, to uphold his rights against the English by means of amicable negotiation; but not being sure of finding equal good faith from that Crown, he commands me and the other Governors of the ports, and the commanders of the ships and squadrons, to proceed with due distrust, taking all precautions as in time of a declared war, but without commencing hostilities, unless it be known for certain that they have done so.

It is now certain that the subjects of the King of England have commenced hostilities, for last week an English privateer captured, off Macanao, a bilander which sailed from thence on Ash Wednesday, the 24th of last month, with a cargo of merchandize for Porto Rico. Therefore I think it very necessary to communicate to you the contents of the said Royal Order, and the aforesaid act of hostility of the English privateer, commanding your Excellency to take all precautions, and use all vigilance, in the country and jurisdiction under your command, with respect to the English nation, and all individuals belonging to it, or other enemies, to resist and prevent insults and hostility which they may attempt, and for the guidance of your Excellency, in all cases and events foreseen or unexpected which may happen in the territory under your care, the accompanying instructions shall be your guide, and your Excellency shall comply with their contents in all things fully and exactly, advising me of their receipt along with the aforesaid Order.

God keep your Excellency for many years.  
(Signed) JOSEPH DIGUJA.

*Cumand, March 1, 1762.*

Señor Don Juan Valdés.

A copy of the text of the Instructions and the letter and Order on their contents sent to the Commander of the fortified settlement of Guayana, the original of which remain in the Secretary's office of that Government, from which the present copy was taken, and to which I refer.

(Signed) JOSEPH DIGUJA.

*Cumand, August 1, 1763.*

Instructions to be observed by the Lieutenant of Pao concerning the assistance required from him by the Commander of the Fort of Guayana for his defence in any invasion of the enemy.

Letter from the Governor, commanding the Lieutenant of Pao to carry out the preceding instruction, marching with 100 men as

- A Muy Señor mio: En estos ultimos dias hé recibido una general Real Orden fecha en Madrid á tres de Octubre del año proximo passado, comunicada por el Excellentissimo Señor Bahilio Fray Don Julian de Arriaga, Theniente General de la Real Armada, Secretario de Estado, y del despacho Universal de Marina y Indias, en la qual se digna su Magestad prevenirme que aunque desseo de la Paz por precaver á sus amados vassallos de los quebrantos que atrahe siempre consigo la guerra, ha procurado y procura sostener los derechos con la Inglaterra por medio de amistosa negociacion; no pudiendo asegurarse su Magestad de igual buena fée en aquella Corona manda se proceda con esta desconfianza assi por mi, y los demas Gobernadores de los puertos, como por los Comandantes de las Esquadras y Navios, y que estemos todos con tanto cuidado como si fuese en tiempo de guerra declarada, pero sin dar principio á hostilidad sin que medie la seguridad de haverse practicado por los Ingleses.

- B Y hallandome bien asegurado ya de que los subditos del Rey de Inglaterra han comenzado á practicar la hostilidad por el que la semana inmediata passada ha ejecutado un corsario de dicha Nacion Inglesa apressando sobre el Macanao á una Balandra que con registro de frutos para Puerto-Rico salio de este el dia miercoles de ceniza veinte y quatro del mes ultimo; tengo por muy preciso participar el conthenido de dicha Real Orden á Vuestra Merced, y la referida hostilidad del corsario Ingles, ordenando como ordeno á Vuestra Merced este con toda precaucion y vigilancia en esse Pais y jurisdiccion de su comando por lo respectivo á dicha Nacion Inglesa y quales quiera individuos de ella ú otros enemigos para resistir y impedir los insultos y hostilidades que intenten y para el gobierno y proceder de Vuestra Merced en todos los casos y acontecimientos previstos ó ynopinados que puedan ocurrir en el territorio de su cargo acompaño la adjunta instruccion á fin de que en su inteligencia arreglandose Vuestra Merced á su conthenido la observe y cumpla en todo y por todo muy exactamente, dandome aviso de su recibo con esta orden.

Dios guarde á Vuestra Merced muchos años.  
JOSEPH DIGUJA,

*Cumand, 1 de Marzo de 1762.*

Señor Don Juan Valdés.

- E Es copia á la letra de la instruccion y Carta Orden de su conthenido que se dirigieron al Comandante del presidio de Guayana, quedando en la Secretaria de este Gobierno sus exemplares de donde se sacó el presente á que me remito.  
JOSEPH DIGUJA.

*Cumana, 1 de Agosto de 1763.*

- F (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Instruccion que ha de guardar el theniente del Pao sobre los auxilios que le pidiere el Comandante del presidio de Guayana para su defensa en qualesquiera invasion de enemigos.

(Otra nota al margen.) Carta del Señor Gobernador ordenando al theniente del Pao, el cumplimiento de la instruccion antecedente mar-

chando con cien hombres luego que los pida el Comandante de Guayana.

soon as called upon by the Commander of A Guayana.

(Otra idem.) Carta Orden para que se guarde lo que S. M. manda estando prevenido como si fuese tiempo de guerra por la desconfianza que se hace de la Nacion Inglesa sin intentar hostilidad, á menos que no medie la seguridad de haverse hecho por ella.

Letter ordering the fulfilment of what His Majesty has commanded—to take all precautions as in time of war on account of the distrust felt of the English, without commencing hostilities, unless assured that they have done so.

*Copy annexed.*

[Identical with last Annex, but addressed to Don B Juan de Salas.]

*Nota de la Secretaria.*—Nota: Que igual instruccion y ordenes con la mismo fecha se dirigieron al theniente de la villa de Aragua.

JUAN JOSSEPH PINTO.

*Note of Secretary's Office.*—The same instructions and orders with the same date were sent to the Lieutenant of the town of Aragua.

JUAN JOSEPH PINTO.

Es copia á la letra de los exemplares de los documentos originales de su conthenido que se dirigieron al theniente del pueblo de Españoles del Pao, quedando dichos exemplares en la Secretaria de este Gobierno á que me remito.

JOSSEPH DIGUJA.

Exact copy of the text of the copies of the original documents sent to the Lieutenant of the Spanish village of Pao, which said copies remain in the Secretary's office of this Government, to which I refer myself.

JOSEPH DIGUJA.

*Cumana, 1 de Agosto de 1763.*

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Testimonio de la Carta del Comandante de Guayana Dn. Juan de Dios Valdes, noticiando al Señor Gobernador la grande escases que generalmente se experimenta en aquella Provincia del Pan Quotidiano, y en algunas poblaciones del Señor Iturriaga, y de las providencias que ha dado para su remedio.

Information in a letter from the Commander of Guayana, Don Juan de Dios Valdés, to the Governor, of the great scarcity, even of daily bread, generally experienced in that province and in some of Iturriaga's villages, and of the measures he has taken to remedy it.

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Carta del Señor Gobernador al Comandante de Guayana Dn. Juan de Dios Valdes ordenandole en virtud de las suyas, mire con mucha moderacion y prudencia á los pocos vecinos de dicho presidio para que permanezcan gustosos en el con sus familias, y hacer guardar la instruccion en los terminos que sea posible, como quien tendrá el caso presente, aprovandole las Providencias para el abasto de par por la escases que alli se experimenta.

Letter from the Governor to the Commander of Guayana, Don Juan de Dios Valdés, with regard to his report, bidding him look with prudence and moderation to the welfare of the few inhabitants of that part, that they may remain there in contentment, causing the instructions to be carried out on whatever terms are possible when the case presents itself. Approving his orders for providing bread in the scarcity prevailing there.

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Testimonio de la carta del Comandante Dn. Juan Valdes avisando al Señor Gobernador la noticia que dió una India Ladina Christiana que llegó de Esquivo, de hallarse en el puerto de Temeraria un Corsario, esperando otros dos de su faccion para luego que se rompa la Paz pasar á Guayana, y que antes lo hubiera hecho á no haverse interpuesto la suspension de armas.

Information in a letter from the Commander, Don Juan Valdés, advising the Governor of the report made by an Indian woman, a Christian, who came from Essequibo, that there are two privateers in the port of Demerara and two more of their party are expected, intending to go to Guayana when the peace is broken, and that they would have done so before if they had not been prevented by the truce.

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Carta del Señor Gobernador al Comandante de Guayana ordenandole en vista de la noticia que expresa en la suya este con gran vigilancia á fin de que aquella guarnicion se halle pronta y en estado de defensa, en qualesquiera innopinada invasion y de quedar á la mira para con su aviso socorrerle con el destacamento que sea necesario.

Letter from the Governor to the Commander of Guayana, commanding him, in view of the news sent in his letter, to use great vigilance, to the end that his garrison be ready and in a state of defence in case of any sudden invasion, and to be on the watch to succour him when called upon, with the necessary detachment.

A (Al margen la nota siguiente.) Testimonio de la Carta del R. P. Prefecto de las Misiones de Guayana pidiendo á su Señoría un Theniente para el Pueblo de San Antonio para socorro de las Misiones en caso de sublevacion ó de otro rumor de Indios y hacer entradas á los Montes con los Misioneros para impedir el trato de los Olandesses con los Caribes en la compra de Poitos, y algunas armas para defensa de las Misiones, y avisando de Desercion que hicieron los dos soldados de la Mision de Supama, y el hecho de matar dos Indios tomando su destino para Esquivo.

B

Señor Governador y Capitan General Don Josseph Diguja,

Muy Señor mio,

En esta ocaasion passa Don Luis de Rivas á Cumaná para traherse á sus Padres y hermanos, y los que pudieran venir con el permiso de vuestra Señoría para el pueblo de San Antonio. Buelvo humildemente á suplicar á vuestra Señoría se digne dar el titulo de Theniente de dicho Pueblo al mencionado Don Luis por ser sugeto capaz y de la confianza de los Padres de estas Misiones, y me parece que conviene vaya expressada en el titulo ó patente la obligacion que tienen los vecinos de dicho Pueblo de socorrer las Misiones siempre que fueran llamados de los Padres por causa de sublevacion ú otro rumor de Indios, como tambien ofreciendose ir á las entradas á los Montes con los Padres Misioneros; y juntamente que sabiendose que anden los Olandeses entre Caribes por los Montes ó Rios de las fronteras de Nuestras Misiones comprando Indios Poytos, debe estar obligado el dicho Theniente (supuesto que de esto tiene bastante experiencia) hacer todas las diligencias para cojerlos, y por ser esta una materia gravissima, espero que de esta diligencia resultará gran servicio á Dios y al Rey nuestro Señor. En otra carta suplico á vuestra Señoría si nos puede vuestra Señoría socorrer con dos Arrobas de polbora para proveer con dos ó tres cartuchos los Castillitos de las Misiones en caso de necesidad. Y ahora considerando que son muy pobres los vecinos de San Antonio que no tienen medios para comprar un fusil (cosa tan necesaria) hé pensado que vuestra Señoría podria dar Orden (siendo del gusto de vuestra Señoría) al Señor Comandante que por ahora nos socorriese de diez fusiles buenos y dos trabucos porque si se ofrece alguna novedad podrán los vecinos tener este des-  
 C sempeño, y nosotros la confianza mediante el favor de vuestra Señoría y dichas armas estarán en casa del Theniente porque en todo caso esten bien corrientes y de dicha cassa no podrán salir las armas, sino por las causas de arriba expressadas, ú otra de semejante gravedad. Los Indios de Supama que estaban en el Castillo se mantienen domiciliados en esta de Suay. En ocaasion que el Padre Presidente de la Mision de Supama por estar enfermo passó á la Mision de Hima, tubo aviso de los Indios que el otro dia se fueron dessertores los dos soldados tomando el destino para Esquivo, y que mataron á dos Indios de la de Supama porque no querian que dichos soldados se llevasen los ocho muchachos que tenian embarcados por este fin, pero mirando los muchachos que los mataban se huyeron y volvieron á la Mision con otro Indio mas grande que refieren este caso, y se cree ser assi por otras señas que han dejado, Dios los encamine. Haviendo fallecido el Padre Presidente de Carony,

F

Testimony of the letter of the Reverend Prefect of the Missions of Guayana, asking his Excellency for a Lieutenant for the village of San Antonio for the succour of the missionaries in case of a rebellion or disturbance among the Indians, and to explore the forest with the missionaries; to prevent the Caribs selling Indians to the Dutch for the slave trade, together with arms for the defence of the Missions, and advising him of the desertion of the two soldiers of the Mission of Supama, and of two Indians having been killed by them while making their way to Essequibo.

*Copy annexed.*

Sir,

On this occasion Don Luis de Rivas is going to Cumaná to bring his parents, brothers, and all those who can come with your permission to the village of San Antonio. I therefore humbly beseech your Excellency to deign to grant the said Don Luis the title of Lieutenant of the said village, he being competent for the post, and having the confidence of the Fathers of these Missions; and it seems to me fitting that it should be expressed in the grant of the title that the inhabitants of the said village are obliged to assist the Fathers when called upon, in case of a rebellion, or other disturbance among the Indians, as also to offer themselves to go with the Fathers on their expeditions into the forest, and also that when it is known that the Dutch are among the Caribs in the forests or rivers near the confines of our Missions buying Indian slaves, the said Lieutenant (supposing he has sufficient experience therein) be obliged to take the proper measures to apprehend them, for this is a very serious matter. I hope the result will be a great service to God and our Lord the King.

In another letter I begged your Excellency to assist us with 50 lbs. of gunpowder and with two or three cases of shot, to provide the small forts of the Missions in case of necessity. And now, considering that the inhabitants of San Antonio are very poor, and have no means of buying guns (which are so necessary), I have thought that your Excellency might order (if such be your pleasure) the Commander to assist us at present with ten good guns and two blunderbusses, so that should anything occur the inhabitants would have this resource, and we some grounds for confidence, by your Excellency's favour. These arms should always be in the Lieutenant's house, so as to be always ready, and no one shall be allowed to remove them from the said house unless for the causes aforesaid or others of equal gravity. The Indians of Supama who were in the fort are at present domiciled in this of Suay.

On the occasion when the Father presiding over the Mission of Supama was obliged by illness to go to that of Hima [*sic*], I heard from the Indians that the other day the two soldiers had deserted, taking the road to Essequibo, and that they killed two Indians of Supama because these latter did not wish them to take away eight boys whom they had embarked for that purpose; the boys, thinking to be killed, fled, and afterwards returned to the Mission with an older Indian, who related this matter, and it is thought that the report is

ya no me queda otro Padre que es el dicho se Supama, este estará en Carony, cuidará de los de Avacava tambien y luego que los de Carony estaran prontos de sus cassas se pondrán juntos con ellos. y el Padre de Hyma cuidará de Supama como lo hacia desde principio que la fundó. Yo quedo á la obediencia de vuestra Señoria con buen efecto de servir á vuestra Señoria y ruego á Dios guarde á vuestra Señoria muchos años.

Besso la mano de V.S. su mas rendido servidor,  
Fray BENITO DE LA GARRIGA.

*Suay y Diciembre 1 de [17]62.*

true from other traces which they left, God A  
guide them. The presiding Father of Caroni being dead, I have no Fathers left but the one aforesaid, of Supama. He will be in Caroni, and will also look after those of Avacava [*sic*], and so soon as those of Caroni are ready with their houses, the former will be placed with them, and the Father from Ayma will go there from Supama, as he has done from the time of its foundation.

I remain at the orders of your Excellency with all good will to serve you, and I pray God to keep you for many years.

I kiss your Excellency's hands. B

Your most obedient Servant,

(Signed) FRIAR BENITO DE LA GARRIGA.

*Suay, December 1, [17]62.*

To the Governor and Captain-General  
Don Joseph Diguja.

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Carta del Señor Gobernador á dicho R. Padre Prefecto en respuesta de la suya y de solo providenciarle con doce fusiles y sus municiones, y dandole gracias por el cassabe con que socorrió al Comandante de Guayana.

Letter from the Governor to the said Reverend Father Prefect in reply to his, granting him the twelve guns and ammunition, and thanking him for the cassava with which he assisted the Commander of Guayana. C

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Testimonio de la carta del Coronel Don Joachim Moreno participando al Señor Gobernador el despacho que Su Magestad que sirvió conferirle nombrandole Comandante Interino de el Pressidio de Guayana con inmediata subordinacion al Excmo. Señor Virrey de Santa Fée para el nuevo pie en que quiere Su Magestad poner aquellos paises.

Copy of the letter of Colonel Don Joachim Moreno, acquainting the Governor that His Majesty's despatch named him Provisional Commander of the fortified settlement of Guayana, directly subordinate to the Viceroy of Santa Fée, because of the new footing on which His Majesty wishes to place these countries.

(Otra nota.) Carta del Señor Gobernador en respuesta de la que recibio del Coronel Don Joachim Moreno, sobre su despacho de Comandante Interino del Presidio de Guayana.

Letter from the Governor in reply to that of Colonel Don Joachim Moreno on his being named Provisional Commander of the fortified Settlement of Guayana. D

(Otra id. al margen.) Testimonio de la carta del Coronel Don Joachim Moreno, avisando al Señor Gobernador que por sus indigencias y negocios particulares no se ha resuelto á disponer su marcha para el cumplimiento de su comision en Guayana y de intimar á Don Juan Valdés, lo mucho que importa no se pierda la proxima estacion del invierno para que haga hacer copiosas labranzas en el parage que Su Magestad determina se transfiera aquella poblacion treinta y quatro leguas mas arriba.

Copy of the letter of Colonel Don Joachim Moreno advising the Governor that his poverty and personal business have prevented him from setting out to fulfil his commission in Guayana, and to intimate to Don Juan Valdés the importance of not losing the approaching winter season for extensive tillage of the ground in the place to which His Majesty has ordered the settlement to be removed 34 leagues higher up. E

(Al margen la nota siguiente.) Carta del Señor Gobernador al Coronel Don Joachim Moreno acussando el recibo de la suya, y ofreciendose en quanto pueda al servicio de su comision y á comunicarle las dificultades ocurrentes haciendose las presentes á su vista.

Letter from the Governor to Colonel Don Joachim Moreno, acknowledging the receipt of his, and offering to help him in his commission by all the means in his power, to inform him of all difficulties that arise, and to bring all the present ones to his notice.

(Otra id.) Testimonio de la carta del Comandante de Guayana Don Juan Valdés avissando al Señor Gobernador la novedad difundida en aquel presidio de la translacion de su pueblo á la Angostura, y de haver dado á entender á aquel afligido vecindario lo que su Señoria le ordenó para que no abandonen sus casas antes si las cobijen de paja o teja, sin permitirse descartase familia alguna, incluyendo las copias de cartas que se les dirigió en el asunto, y pasaporte del Comandante Interino, y de no dar paso á cosa que no sea dispuesta por este Gobierno.

Copy of the letter of the Commander of Guayana, Don Juan Valdés, advising the Governor that the news of the removal of the settlement to Angostura has spread in the neighbourhood; that he has informed the sorrowful inhabitants of his Excellency's orders, that they may not abandon their houses but roof them with straw or tiles, allowing no family to be excused [?], and inclosing copies of the letters sent to them on this occasion, with passport from the Provisional Governor, nothing being allowed to pass which is not destined for this Government. F

- A** (Otra nota al Margen.) Copia de la carta escrita por el Coronel Don Joachim Moreno al Comandante de Guayana avisandole el despacho de Comandante Interino de aquel presidio y previniendole que sin perdida de tiempo haga se practique en la estrechura labranzas para la translacion de aquella Ciudad al citado parage antes que se pierda el invierno valiendose para ello de los Indios de la Mision de Suay y de los caudales de Su Magestad de aquellas Reales cajas que lo dará bien hecho.
- B** (Otra id. dice lo siguiente.) Otra del Comandante Valdes respondiendo á la del Coronel Don Joachim Moreno expresandole lo imposible de su pretension por no ser el tiempo oportuno par las labranzas por que las muchas aguas y crecientes del Rio Orinoco impiden las rozas y quemazon regular que se ejecuta por el mes de Enero hasta mediado de Abril como á proposito.
- C** (Otra nota al margen dice lo siguiente.) Otra del Señor gefe de Esquadra Don Josseph de Iturriaga noticiando al Comandante Valdes, que el pueblo de Guayana y el de Suay deben trasladarse á la Angostura de Orinoco, y que Don Joachim Moreno está nombrado por Comandante Interino de Guayana.
- (Otra idem dice lo siguiente.) Posdata—Licencia y pasaporte concedido por Don Joachim Moreno como Comandante electo de la provincia de Guayana á Don Apolinar Diaz de la Puente para passar á ella.
- D** (Otra nota al margen dice lo siguiente.) Carta del Señor Governador al Comandante Valdes, acusando el recibo de la suya, copias de carta y pasaporte que le remitió, y ordenandole no consienta hacer novedad sin espresa orden de este Gobierno.
- (Al margen de la pagina No. 241 se encuentra lo siguiente.) Auto mandando acumular diversos documentos conducentes á los que su Señoria está formalizando para el cumplimiento de diferentes Reales ordenes con que se halla de Su Magestad acerca de la Provincia de Guayana, y dar cuenta con individual informe.
- E**
- (Al margen del folio 149 la nota siguiente.) Auto mandando compulsar testimonios integros de los que se han operado para dar cuenta á Su Magestad y al Excelentísimo Señor Virrey del Nuevo Reyno de Granada.
- F** Vistos los autos formalizados por su Señoria para dar cuenta á Su Magestad sobre los inconvenientes y reparos ciertos que impiden la ejecucion y cumplimiento de la Real Orden de Su Magestad (que Dios guarde) librada por el Excelentísimo Señor Bahilio Fray D. Jullian de Arriaga su fecha de Aranjuez á veinte y siete de Mayo de años proximo passado de mill setecientos sesenta y dos mandada poner en testimonio por cabeza los dichos autos, dijo su Señoria; que estando como estan conclusos con la acumulacion de todos los instrumentos conducentes al casso, devia de mandar y mandó se compulse testimonio integro
- Copy of a letter from Colonel Don Joachim Moreno to the Commander of Guayana, advising him of his commission as Provisional Governor of that fortified settlement, and desiring him to have lands cultivated at the Angostura without loss of time, for the transference thither of the town that the winter season may not be wasted, availing himself for that purpose of the Indians of the Mission of Suay, drawing the necessary funds from His Majesty's coffers, who will approve thereof.
- Another letter from the Commander Valdés, explaining to Colonel Don Joachim Moreno the impossibility of his command, this not being the proper season for cultivating the land, because the abundant waters and heavy swells of the Orinoco prevent the clearing of the land and burning, which is usually done from January to the middle of April.
- Another letter from Rear-Admiral Don Joseph de Iturriaga, advising Commander Valdés that the town of Guayana and that of Suay is to be removed to Angostura on the Orinoco, and that Don Joachim Moreno is appointed Provisional Governor of Guayana.
- P.S.—Permission and passport granted by Don Joachim Moreno as Commander of the Province of Guayana to Don Apolinar Diaz de la Puente to proceed thither.
- Letter from the Governor to Commander Valdés, acknowledging the receipt of his, with the copies of letter and passport which he sent, and ordering him not to make any changes without an express order from this Government.
- Decree commanding different documents to be filed relating to those which his Excellency is preparing for the fulfilment of the Royal Orders received from His Majesty touching the Province of Guayana, and an account to be given from individual information.
- Decree commanding true copies to be made of documents drawn up, in order to give an account to His Majesty and the Viceroy of the new Kingdom of Granada.
- Having seen the Acts drawn up by his Excellency in order to give an account to His Majesty of the drawbacks and obstacles which prevent the execution of his Royal Order, sent by his Excellency the Knight of Malta, Don Julian de Arriaga, dated from Aranjuez. 27th May, 1762, and ordered to be placed at the beginning of the said Acts, his Excellency said that being, as they now are, concluded, and all the documents relating to the case having been collected, he must and did command a true duplicate copy to be made thereof for the information of His Majesty by his



de ellos por duplicado para informar á Su Magestad por la via de su despacho reservada acumulandose en el testimonio la citada Real Orden y auto de su obediencia como está mandado, y copia de las consultas fechas á Su Magestad por la via de su real y supremo consejo de Indias de resultas de visitas dando cuenta del estado de las doctrinas y Misiones de Piritu de las que evangelizan los reverendos Padres Capuchinos Cathalanes, y los reverendos Padres Jesuitas de la Compañia de Jesus en el alto Orinoco todas con fecha de diez de Diciembre de sesenta y uno, y de las que están al cargo de los reverendos Padres Capuchinos Aragoneses con fecha de doce de dicho mes y año que exhibirá el Secretario de gobierno Alferez de infanteria. Don Pablo Hamilton para el mencionado fin, y de ocurrir tambien al Excelentísimo Señor Virrey del Nuevo Reyno de Granada, para en vista de lo que Su Magestad se sirviere resolver, dar entero cumplimiento á su Soberano mandato; y por este assi lo proveyó y mandó el Señor Don Joseph Diguja Villagomez Coronel de los Reales Exercitos, Gobernador y Capitan General de estas Provincias por el Rey Nuestro Señor que lo firmó en esta Ciudad de Cumaná en veinte y dos dias del mes de Agosto de mill setecientos sessenta y tres años, de qua doy feé.

DIGUJA

Ante mi:

LUIS DE FIGUEROA VALLEJOS,  
*Escribano Real de Governacion.*

Concuerta este traslado con los autos originales de su conthenido operados por ante mi, y quedan archivados en el de mi cargo á que me remito; y en cumplimiento de lo mandado por el Señor Gobernador y Capitan General de estas Provincias en el auto antecedente hice sacar en doscientas quarenta y seis foxas con esta la primera y correspondiente del sello quarto, y las demas del comun escritas de una misma letra, corregidas y concertadas, y en feé de verdad lo signo y firmino en esta Ciudad de Cumaná en veinte y nueve dias del mes de Agosto de mill setecientos sesenta y tres años.

En testimonio de verdad (hay un signo y dos rubricas).

De Oficio:

LUIS DE FIGUEROA VALLEJOS,  
*Escribano Real de Governacion.*  
(Con su rubrica.)

private despatches, together with the Royal Order, Decree for its fulfilment, and a copy of the Reports sent to His Majesty, through his Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies, giving an account of the state of the Missions of Piritu, and of those instructed by the Catalonian Capuchins and Jesuits in the Higher Orinoco all dated the 10th December, 1761, and of those under the care of the Capuchins of Arragon, dated the 12th of the same month and year, to be extracted from the Government Secretary's office by the ensign of infantry, Don Pablo Hamilton, for the same end, and to call upon the Viceroy of New Granada, that whatever His Majesty may resolve, his sovereign mandate may be fully carried out, and hereby Don Joseph Diguja Villagomez, Colonel of the Royal forces, Governor and Captain-General of these provinces for our Lord the King, has thus provided and commanded, who signed it in this city of Cumaná, the 22nd August, 1763.

Witness his hand,

(Signed) DIGUJA.

Before me:

(Signed) LUIS DE FIGUEROA VALLEJOS,  
*Royal Notary to the Government.*

This copy agrees with the originals, taken before me, and remaining in the archives under my care, to which I refer; and in fulfilment of the order of the Governor of these provinces in the preceding Decree, I caused it to be made on 246 leaves with this first leaf and corresponding leaf with quarter seal, all written in the same hand, corrected, and collated, in witness to the truth whereof I have signed and sealed it in this city of Cumaná, the 29th August, 1763.

In token of truth. (There is a seal and two rubrics.)

Official:

(Signed) LUIS DE FIGUEROA VALLEJOS,  
*Royal Notary to the Government.*  
(Rubric.)

No. 392.

*The Governor van Hogenheijm, Berbice, to Director-General, Essequibo, February 25, 1764.*

(Extract.)

IK verheuge mij telkens over den Yver Sorge en Vlijt waarmede Uwel Ed. Gesr. gestadig bezigt bent om de Indianen aan te spooren enze na onze grenzen te doen marscheeren. Waarlijk het is het middel om het Land regt te Suijvere Wanneer zij alle hunne vermogens daar toe willen aan Wenden twijffel ik niet of de Saken zullen Schielijk een goed eijnde neemen en wanneer demerarij door een Schip van oorlog nu zal gedekt weezen hoop ik dat Uwel Ed. Gesr. geen Swarigheijdt zult maken om de brave Caribize van Barima op onze rebellen af te zenden.

I AM delighted with the zeal and care which your Excellency continually manifests in urging the Indians to march towards our frontiers. This is really the means by which the country may be kept in order. If they all put forth their best efforts I doubt not that matters will end well, and when Demerary is protected by a war-ship I trust that your Excellency will find no difficulty in sending the brave Caribs of Barima out upon our rebels.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, the last day of February 1764.*

(Extract.)

**A** DINDIAENEN welke ik aangemoedigt hadde, en welke reets twee gelukkige expeditionen naer Berbices hadden gedaen, hier door aangemoedigt, quamen ten getalle van ruim hondert den 19 December aen mijn huys, mij vragende naer den toestand van die Colonie. Waer van haer door middel van de Heer van der Heijde welke haer taele in de grond verstaet onderricht hebbende, Soo van het opvaeren van den Gouverneur als van het marcheeren van het detachement over land, waer mede sij seer in haer schik waeren, en haer een partij geweeren, kruid, kogels, en vuurstenen, gegeven hebbende vertrokken sij met beloften naer Berbices te sullen trekken en op de vlugtende aldaer in de bosschen, &c., te sullen passen.

\* \* \* \* \*

De Caribische waer van hier boven gemelt Sijn te rug gekomen mede brengende een heele partij regterhanden van de dood geslaege rebellen, waer voor haer deeze morgen de betaling hebbe gegeven, en alhoewel zij seer redelijk sijn geweest, Sijnde altoos het gebruik in de Colonien dat voor een wegloper of desselfs hoofd of hand, so veel betaelt word als voor een slaef

**C** En hebbe deeze morgen vernomen eenige rebellen heel boven in Demerary, de rivier over zijn geswommen en direct haer weg naer Orinoco genomen, daer sij niet konnen komen sonder in handen de Caribes te komen die overal op haer hoede zijn.

Dit overswemmen sal mede haest moeten cesseeren, als de Caribes van Barima, welke voorlede week van hier sijn gegaen, boven in Demerary gearriveert sullen wezen.

**D** Den Nieuwen Gouverneur van Orinoco heeft een man van vertrouwen hier gezonden welke de verzekering synentwege brengt hij voornemens is den handel met deeze rivier te willen permitteeren (dog geen andere hoegenaemt Hadde met den voorgaende Bode aen sijn Ed. geschreven dog die brief was by het vertrek van deeze man nog niet ontvangen. Schrijve hem deeze week weder over Ses weggeloepe Slaeven van dHr. Malgraef welke naer daer sijn gevlugt, en ook om hem te waerschuwen wegens de Berbices Rebellen

THE Indians whom I had encouraged, and who had already undertaken two successful expeditions to Berbices, being encouraged by this, came to my house on the 19th December, to the number of fully 100, inquiring into the state of the Colony. I informed them, through the medium of Mr. van der Heyde, who understands their language thoroughly, both of the Governor's journey up the river and of the overland march of the detachment, at which they were very pleased, and, having been given a quantity of guns, powder, shot, and flints, they departed with a promise to set out for Berbices, and to keep a look-out for the fugitives in the forests and other places there.

\* \* \* \* \*

The Caribs, about whom mention is made above, have come back, bringing with them a large quantity of right hands from the rebels whom they killed, for which I paid them this morning, it being the custom in the Colonies to pay as much for a runaway's head or hand as for a slave.

\* \* \* \* \*

And this morning I have learned that some rebels far up in Demerara have swum across the river and taken their way direct to Orinoco, whither they cannot get without falling into the hands of the Caribs, who are everywhere on the alert.

This swimming over will also be presently brought to a stop, when the Caribs of Barima who went from here last week have arrived up in Demerara.

\* \* \* \* \*

The new Governor of Orinoco has sent a trustworthy man here, bringing an assurance from his part that it is his intention to allow trade to be carried on with this river (but with absolutely no other). I had written to his Honour by an earlier messenger, but that letter had not yet reached the Governor when this man departed. I am writing to him again this week about six runaway slaves belonging to Mr. Malgraef, who had fled in that direction, and also to warn him concerning the rebels of Berbices.

**E**

Inclosure in No. 393.

*Extracts from the Journal kept by the Commandeur in Rio Demerary.*

November 2, 1763.—Kennis bekomen dat vijf Slaven van de Berbice die in Essequibo op d Ed. Comp. plantagie Duijnenburg waren so langgeset, weg sijn gelopen met een boey Corjaer, de weg na Demerarij genome hebbende.

November 3. een pas gegeve aan den Caraibischen uijl genaemt jourawarie :

**F** Laet passeeren en repasseren den Caraibischen uijl genaemt jourawarie met sijn bijhebbend volk

November 2, 1763.—Have received information that five slaves from Berbices, who had been temporarily placed on the Honourable Company's plantation, Duynenburg, in Essequibo, had run away with a corrial in the direction of Demerary.

November 3.—Copy of a pass issued to-day:—

“Permit the Carib Owl named Jourawarie to pass and return, with his accompanying

om van hier te gaan na Rio Berbice en van daer herwaerds, versoeckende een ijjelijk denselven niet hinderlijk te sijn. Rio Demerarij den derden November 17<sup>e</sup> drie en Sestigh.  
(Getekend) L. L. VAN BERCHEYCK.

men, from here to Rio Berbice and back, requesting every one not to stop their progress.  
(Signed) "L. L. VAN BERCHEYCK."

"Rio Demerary, November 3, 1763."

\* \* \* \* \*  
November 27.—Hebben de Carailbischen & Arawakken mij gebragt 3 neger jongens en 1 dito meijtje, Seggende die uijt Berbice gehaald te hebbe van de plantagie daer dhr. Hendk. van Dalen gewoond heeft gehad, hebbende sij een voor haer ontelbaer getal Slaven op voors: plantagie so in 't water dood geslagen als in 't huijs verbrand, ook de twee vrije Indianen die de Rebellen d'Indiaansche huijsen aanwees, en uijt het huijs dat in brand hadde gestoken vlugteden, gedood.

\* \* \* \* \*  
November 27.—The Caribs and Arawaks have brought me three negro boys and one negro girl, saying that they had brought them from the plantation in Berbice upon which Mr. Hendrik van Dalen had lived, they having killed an innumerable number of slaves on the aforesaid plantation, both by throwing them into the water and by burning them in the house, and that they had also killed the two free Indians who had shown the rebels the Indian houses, and who had escaped from the house which had been set on fire.

No. 394.

Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, April 9, 1764.

(Extract.)

IK hebbe d'eer U EGA hiernevens te senden de laeste ontfangene brieven van Berbices, waer uijt U EGA sullen zien de saeken Gode lof sig aklaer redelijk ten goede beginnen te schikken waertoe onze Caribis soo uijt deeze rivieren als selver van Barima trouw haer best hebben gedaen en nog doen, geduurig rondomswervende tusschen beijde colonien en door des Heeren zeegen soo gelukkig sijnde geweest in alle haer expeditien geene der haere te hebben verlooren, maekt sulx haer stout, en boven gewoonte en verwachting ondernemend, en selver renkeloos, en maeken deeze voorvallen een groote verbittering tusschen de swarten en haer, welke wel en in de redelijkheid aengequeekt, niet als van veel nut en dienst in het vervolg voor de colonien kan wezen.

Hier worde gestoort door een Corps Carailbis bij malkanderen versamelt door UEGA Criool Veth (welke indien in den beginne geemployeert hadde boven verwagting dienst gedaen soude hebben het geene noijt van die oude Paaij verwachte hadde) omtrent Ses weeken geleden hebbe hem opgesonden, en daer komt hij af met soo een partij, dat UEGA kan verklaeren noijt Soo veel Indiaenen bij een hebbe gesien, mijn huijs is soo vol dat geen mensch door kan en dit is nog het kleijuste gedeelte Sijnde d'andere over land naer Demerarij gegaen om deeze af te wachten, welke mij maer 12 Snaphaenen, kruid en Loot voor d'opperhoofden hebben gevraegt, welke haer hebbe gegeven, en vertrekken heden naer Berbices met brieven van mij, om daer ge employeert te worden soo als nodig bevonden sal worden.

\* \* \* \* \*  
Dit corps Indiaenen is alleen uijt de Rivier van Masserounij, hadde noijt gedagt of konnen denken soo een getal Carailbis in die Rivier alleen woonde, wel is waer dat in het begin van op een nae den laesten oorlog, haer getal eens grosso modo hebbe laeten opnemen en bedroeg doen elfhondert weerbaere mannen, maer dit was de geheele jurisdictie van d'Ed. Compagnie van Abari tot Barima, maer ondervinde nu het vierde part niet gehad hebbe of moeten extraordinair geaugmenteert sijn.

I HAVE the honour to send you herewith the letters last received from Berbice, from which your Honours will see that affairs, God be praised, are beginning once more to take a tolerably satisfactory turn there, to which end our Caribs, both from these rivers and even from Barima, have loyally done their best and are yet doing it, constantly roving about between the two Colonies, and having, through the Lord's blessing, been so successful in all their expeditions as to have lost none of their own people, this makes them bold and beyond habit and expectation enterprising, and even reckless; and these occurrences cause a great embitterment between the blacks and them, which, if well and reasonably stimulated, cannot fail to be of much use and service in the future to the Colonies.

I have just been disturbed by a body of Caribs collected by your Lordships' creole Veth (who, had I employed him in the beginning, would have been of immense service beyond all expectations). About six weeks ago I sent him up the river, and now he comes back with such a band that I must declare that I have never seen so many Indians together before. My house is so full that no one can get through, and this, too, is the smallest portion, the other lot having gone overland to Demerary to wait for these, who have asked me for only twelve rifles, powder, and shot for the Chiefs, which I have given them; they are leaving for Berbices to-day with letters from me, in order that they may be employed there as may be found necessary.

\* \* \* \* \*  
This body of Indians is wholly from the River Mazaruni. I had never supposed or been able to suppose that such a number of Caribs lived in that river alone. It is quite true that at the beginning of the last war but one I once had their number taken *grosso modo*, and it then amounted to 1,100 men capable of bearing arms; but this was the whole jurisdiction of the Company, from Abary to Barima. But now I find that I did not have the fourth part, or else they must have increased extraordinarily.

A Bij de te rug komst van dHr. Schutz hebbe wederom brieven van Berbices ontfangen, waer van d Eer hebbe Copijen te senden waerom mij daer over niet sal uijtbreijden

Uijt dezelve sullen UEGA nog al verder zien dat de rede van ongerustheijt voor Demerarij seer wel gefundeert is geweest Sijnde het laest geattaquerde Corps van omtrent drie hondert rebellen geretrancheert geweest tusschen Berbices en Demerarij, niet wel tien uren van de laest genoemde rivier.

With the return of Mr. Schutz I have again received letters from Berbices, of which I have the honour to send you copies, wherefore I shall not dilate upon that matter.

From these your Lordships will see the reasons for anxiety concerning Demerary were well grounded, the last body attacked, consisting of about 300 rebels, having been entrenched between Berbices and Demerary, not quite ten hours from the last-mentioned river.

B

No. 395.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, June 15, 1764.*

(Extract.)

C WANNEER in Essequibo weder sal wezen geretourneert, sal alles aldaer mede reguleeren, op de Post in Maijkounij is een Posthouder met zijn hijlegger, sijnde aldaer genoeg, op Arinda een Posthouder met twee man, wat Maroco aengaet (welke wegens de weglopers, en aldaer passeerende vreemdelingen die den meester daer beginnen te spelen) meer aengelegen is, Is den Posthouder met drie man, waer nog een denke bij te voegen, en ik sal trachten door de Caribis in Cajoenij de nodige Schikkingen te laeten maeken, om aldaer een onder officier met acht man te leggen dog hier sal wat tijd toe hooren, en kan zoo lang de regens duuren niets aen gedaen worden sijnde de vallen onbevaerbaer.

AS soon as I get back to Essequibo I shall regulate matters there. At the Post in Maykouny there is one Postholder with his assistant, that being enough for that place; at Arinda there is one Postholder with two men. In Moruka, which is of more importance on account of the runaways and the strangers who pass that way, and who are beginning to play the master there, there is a Postholder and three men, to whom I think of adding another. I shall try and make the necessary arrangements with the Caribs in Cuyuni to station an under-officer there with eight men; but some time will be wanted for this, and nothing can be done in the matter so long as the rains last, the falls being unnavigable.

D Ik hebbe de Posthouders van Maroco en Maijkounij georlonneert, kost wat kost, vaertuijgen te laeten maeken door d Indiaenen zoo voor het Fort, als Demerarij.

I have ordered the Postholders of Moruka and Maykouny to get the Indians to make, at any cost, boats, both for the forts and for Demerara and the plantations.

No. 396.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, August 1764.*

(Extract.)

E DEN handel met Orinoque, geloof ik nu genoegsaem vry sal wezen wijl onze vaertuijgen niet alleen onverhindert heen en weder vaeren, maer ook nog voorlede week twee Spanjaerden bij mij zijn geweest, met Formeele paspoorten van den Gouverneur om naer hier te komen Stond wel niet uijtdrukkelijk Essequibo in de Selve, maer naer de nabuurige Colonien van vrienden en ge allieerden, twelk Equivalent is.

I THINK that trade with Orinoque will now be fairly easy, because our boats not only go to and fro unchecked but only last week two Spaniards came to me with formal passports from the Governor to come here. Essequibo was not expressly mentioned in them, but the neighbouring colonies of friends and allies, which is equivalent.

Hebbe d Eer U. E. G. A. hier nevens te laeten toekomen,

I have the honour to send herewith—

Korte verhandeling over d Ed. Comp. buijte Posten.

A brief treatise concerning the Honourable Company's outposts.

F Copije Instructie van den Posthouder op Arinda.

Copy of Instructions for the Postholder at Arinda.

P.S. Hebbe deeze week ordre gegeven de Post Arinda vier dagreijzen hoger aen de mond van de Rivier Ripenuwini te versetten. So dat deselve in omtrent hondert Uuren van het Fort Zeelandia sal weezen ook bevoolen Essequibo op te vaeren, dat nog niet gedaen is om de talrijke en magtige

P.S.—I have this week given orders to remove the Post Arinda four days' journey higher, at the mouth of the River Ripenuwini [Rupununi], so that the Post is now about 100 hours from Fort Zeelandia. I have also given orders for going up the Essequibo, which has not yet been

Natie, Tarouma genaemt te besøken, en zoo doenlijk den oorspronk van Essequibo naer te vorsschen.

done, in order to visit the numerous and powerful nation called Tarouma, and, if possible, to discover the source of the Essequibo. A

Inclosure 1 in No. 396.

*A brief Treatise concerning the Honourable Company's Trading-places.*

(Extract.)\*

D. Ed. West. Comp. heeft onder het ressort deser Colonie, vier onderscheijdene posten, of handelpaatsen, te weten Een in de kreen Maheyka, en Macaurni doorgaans benaamt Majkounij een boven Essequibo, een in Cajoenij, en Een in de kreen Wacquepo en Maroco.

1. Die in Maheyka en Majkounij is gelegen omtrent 8 uren boven in de kreek Welke tusschen berbices en Dimmerarij is gelegen omtrent 7 uren boven Dimmerarij Oostwaards op.

Dese streek is't meest bewoond door de Naatje garouna, bij ons Warouwen genaemt, welke meest alle hare huijsen in de moerassen, op steijlen hebben staan, dese geneeren zig geheel met sig voor Eenig werk bij de blanke te verhuuren, zijnde goede werklieden (maar zeer dieftagtig) off met vaertuijgen te maken, dit en het souten van vis in 't drooge saisoen nevens het houden van possessie, tusschen de twee Colonien, is het geheele oogmerk van dese postering waar ook maar twee man op is, ook op de weglopende Slaven zoo van hier als andere Colonien te passen.

En geen post daar sijnde soude seer gaauw D'Indianen verjaagt zijn, door de dwingelandijge en onbehoorlijke handeling van d'Ingeseene.

2. De post boven Essequibo Arinda genaamt, van geheel andere aangelegentheid Legt de Rivier Essequibo op omtrent seventig uren (naar gissing want is nooit Exact opgenomen) boven het Fort Zeelandia, naar gedagten omtrent op de Vier graden en Eenige minuten Noorderbreete.

Men moet eer men op die post kan komen, verscheijdene vallen en al Eenige zeer grooten passeeren, egter niet seer gevaarlijk voordie geene, welke die weg kundige indiaenen hebben in haer vaertuijgen, zoo dat men zelden off nooit van ongelukken hoort, ende weijnige die geschied zijn, door Eijgen Schuld dronkenschap of diergelijke.

Den Handel welke daar gedreven word, bestaat tot nu toe in roode Slaeven en de Acuwayse en Attarijsse verwen welke hoe Schoon op het oog egter tot nu toe van geen gebruik zijn geweest.

Niet tegenstaande den handel van roode Slaeven, seer voordeelg gemaakt kan worden, maakt deselve weijnig tot de aangelegentheid van dese post.

Want behalven dat deselve seer dienstig is om de Communicatie met de binnenlansche natien, en de vriendschap daar mede onderhouden, waar door groote ontdekkingen gedaan soudon konnen worden

Soo dient men te weten, dat niet heel verre boven de post twee andere rivieren in Essequibo vallen (Sibarouna en Repinowini genaamt waar van d'Eerste nog niet seer bekend is.

Maar de tweede een seer verre uijtgestrekte Loop hebbende is eenige dage vaerens boven de

THE Honourable West India Company possesses within this Colony four different Posts or trading-places, viz.: one in the Creeks of Maheyka and Macaurni, generally called Maykouny, one above Essequibo, one in Cuyuni, and one in the Creeks Wacquepo and Moruka. B

1. That in Maheyka and Maykouny lies about eight hours up the creek which is situated between Berbices and Demerary, about seven hours eastward above Demerary.

This district is mostly inhabited by the Garouna nation, called by us Warouws, who live mostly in the morasses, building their houses chiefly on piles. They support themselves entirely by working for the whites, being good workmen (but very dishonest), or by making boats. This, and the salting of fish in the dry season, together with keeping possession between the two Colonies, is the entire use of this Post, where there are only two men to keep an eye upon the runaway slaves either from this or other Colonies. C

If there was no Post here the Indians would soon be driven away by the tyranny and harsh treatment of the settlers.

2. The Post above Essequibo, called Arinda, of entirely different importance, lies about seventy hours (at a guess, because it has never been exactly measured) above Fort Zeelandia, up the River Essequibo, and, as it is thought, at about four degrees and a few minutes' latitude north. D

To get to that Post several falls, some of them very large, have to be passed; they are not really very dangerous for those who have Indians in their boats who know the way, and accidents are seldom or never heard of, the few which happen being due to men's own faults, drunkenness or the like. E

The trade carried on there has hitherto consisted in red slaves, and in Acuway and Ataray dyes, which, although very pretty to look at, have up to the present not been of any use.

Although the trade in red slaves might be made very profitable, it contributes but little to the importance of this Post, because, in addition to the latter being of great service in keeping up the communication and friendship with the inland nations, by means of which great discoveries might be made, it should also be stated that not very far above the Post two other rivers (called Sibarouna and Rupununi, the first of which is not yet very well known) fall into the River Essequibo. F

But the second having a very extensive course, there is a place a few days' journey

\* The passages omitted throughout this Treatise are details of the general trade and business of each Post, or of native tribes, &c.

A post een plaats, waar men over een laag en moeras-sig Land het vaartuijg, omtrent drie uren verre latende slepen komt in de kreek Meejou Maho anders genaamt, welke uijtwatert in Rio Bianco, dese in Rio Negro welke in d'Amazones vallende de Communicatie met die groote Rivier gemakkelijk kan maken.

Boven in Ripenuwini vind men ook geheele Bosschen van Cacao.

In deselve rivier is de groote en vermaarde en tot nu toe soo weijnig bekende Christal mijn ook in sig selfs beschout van weijnig belang, maer d'eenpaerig getuijgenis der schrijvers over het Edelgesteente en alle d'overeenkomende berigten der Spanjaarden van heel boven Orrinoque, bewijzen dat dese Cristal mijne, de moeder zij van den Smaragd, welke daar en daar alleen in gevonden worden kan hier mede voordeel van worden getrokken. Essequibo selve (dat verwonderingswaardig is), schoon Even breed en groot blijvend is eenige dagen boven de post onbekent, niemand die weg ingeslagen sijnde welk geloof veroorzaakt te wesen, door dien de swervers (onkundige Liederen en meest als d'Indianen selver de Schapen slagten en den een den andere volgen, sonder sig te bekreunen aan eenige ontlekkings of voordeelen welke nog onseker sijn.

Volgens de Strekking van desselfs Loop zijden ten oosten, en zijld zijld oost denkt men met reden desselfs oorsprong niet verre van d'Amazone moet wesen zoo daar zelve niet mede correspondeert.

Naast deselve in een groote Savaan is de mede zoo vermaarde en zoo weijnig bekende piramide.

D Boven in die rivier aan desselfs boorden, dog seer hoog woond de talrijke en zoo door d'andere naatien gevreesde natie der Manoas, hier genaamt Magnauwen (welke ten teijde van wijlen den Commandeur de Heere soo onvoorsigtig als kinderagtig verjaagt, qualijk behandelt en voor altoos van ons vervreemt sijn, zijnde de tot nu toe aangevende pogingen om communicatien met haer te hebben vrugteloos geweest, een politieke streek van de natie der Caribainen daar me deselve weijnig bequaam toe soude oordeelen te sijn. Aan dese natie sijn de Portugeesen in Brazil verschuldigt d'ondekking van het goud, en der diamanten, hadde sulx veel hooren seggen, en ook gelesen, maar is mij overtuigend bevestigd, door d'Heer del Torres de Bandeyra, tweede persoon van Brazil, wanneer deselve eenige Jaeren geleden om een verschil met den bisschop van Fernambuk uijt Brazil vlugtig eenige weeken bij mij aan hujs is gelogeert geweest. . . . .

E Is nu seer ligt te begripen van wat aangelegentheijd dese post kan worden indien het gesag aan kundige en naarstige menschen kan worden toe-vertrouwt. . . . .

F Stofgoud weet men dat in vorige dagen daar is van daan gekomen, en De La Chaw in sijne reijse door Dinmerarij naar Essequibo twee jaeren geleden, heeft eenige korrels daar van gevonden.

Onse swerver Jan Stok heeft zoo verre opge-weest, dat de missien van de Portugeesen heeft gesien dog heeft niet aan durven gaan, door een kinderagtige vrees den Indiaanschen handelaeren zoo gemeen.

Onwedersprekelijk is het dat naar die zijde veele ontdekkingen van groote aangelegentheijd gedaan soude worden. . . . .

above the Post where, by dragging the boat for about three hours across a low and marshy land, we come into the Creek Meejou, also called Maho, which flows into the Rio Bianco, and the latter into the Rio Negro, which, falling into the Amazon, can make communication with that great river easy.

Up in Rupununi there are found whole woods of cocoa.

In the same river is the great and hitherto but little known crystal mine; it is of little importance in itself, but the unanimous testimony of writers on precious stones, and all the reports of the Spaniards living right away up in Orinoco, agree that these crystal mines are the mothers of the emerald which, if found there, and there alone, could here be exported with profit.

The Essequibo itself (which is worthy of admiration), retaining its beauty, evenness, breadth, and magnitude, is unexplored a few days above the Post, no one having gone in that direction. This may be accounted for, I believe, by the fact that the itinerant traders in these parts are ignorant folk, who mostly, like the Indians, kill their own sheep, and follow each other without troubling themselves to make discoveries or procure advantages which are still somewhat uncertain.

According to the course of this river, which runs from south to east and south-south-east, it is thought, with some reason, that its source cannot be far from the Amazon, and that it perhaps even corresponds with that river.

In a great savannah next to the river is the famous but little known Pyramid.

Up in the river, on the banks of the same, but a good way up, there dwells the numerous nation of the Manoas, here called Magnouws, much feared by the other nations, and which, in the time of the late Commandeur de Heere, was so injudiciously and childishly driven away, badly treated, and for ever estranged from us, that the efforts made to enter into communication with it have hitherto proved fruitless—a political dodge of the Carib nation of which it would be thought incapable. The Portuguese in Brazil are indebted to this nation for the discovery of the gold and diamonds. I have heard and read a good deal of this, but have had it corroborated by Mr. del Torres de Bandeyra, the second person in Brazil, who came to lodge with me a few years ago on fleeing from Brazil on account of some dispute with the Bishop of Pernambuco. . . . .

It is now easy to understand of what importance this Post may become if it be intrusted to sensible and steady people. . . . .

It is known that gold dust was brought thence in former days, and De la Chau, in his journey through Demerary to Essequibo some years ago, found a few grains of it.

Our runner, Jan Stok, has been so far up the river that he has seen the Missions of the Portuguese, but did not dare to approach them out of a childish fear of the Indian traders.

It is indisputable that many discoveries of great importance might be made in that region. . . . .



De mislukte reij's van Nicolaas Horstman in den Jaere 1740 die rivier opgesonden souden veel nut nangebragt hebben indien geen schurk was geweest, en in plaats van sijne Instructien te volgen met sijne Coopmanschappen gedeserteert naar de Portugeesen, waar naar toe de weg van Ripenoenij heeft gebruikt, en waar door de Heer de La Condamine in sijne reij's van d'Amazones gesproken is, welke die reij's mede voor eene van sijne bewijse van de non existentie van het Lac van Parima gebruikt. De groote Rivier van Massaroenij tusschen Essequibo (eigentlich genaamt) en Cajoenij in legd is, tot seer groote verwondering weijnig of niet bekend dat de selve regt op zijld west naar binnen dezen Lande Loopt in verre na zoo gevaarlijk niet door vallen als de twee andere zijnde alleen een plaats daar de selve onder een seer groote Rots doorloopt omtrent een paar mijlen naar gissing lang, door den ingesete C. Finet bevaeren en sonder gevaar bevonden. Den Ingesete E. Pipersberg is den eenigsten mijns weetens die de selve eenigsints verre heeft opgevaeren dartien van sijnde weggeloopene slaven vervolgende welke ook heeft bekomen bij eene natie welke nooit een blanke hadde gesien, en welke hem den ingang van haar land ook weijgerde, hebbende sijne slaven door tusschenkomste van eene bij haar bekende vrije Indiaan bekomen mits een parthije Cargasoenen in betaling gevende. . . . .

3. De derde post is geweest in de rivier van Cajoenij, welke rivier zoo wel als Massaroenij meest regt zijld west op strekt haar eerst eenige mijlen verre west opgestrekt te hebben, volgens het eenpaerig getuijgenis der Indianen hebben dese Rivieren Massaroenij en Cajoenij haar Oorsprong uijt een groot meijr of binnenlandsche zee zoo als d'Indiaenen het noemen, welk meijr rondom met hooge bergen is omringt, welke door een ontelbaere meenigte Indiaenen zijn bewoond, welke uijt vreesse der Spanjaarden geen Toegang in haar land vergunnen, zijnde volgens verhaal voorsz reets twee detachementen Spanjaarden naar die kant ter ondekkinge gesonden door haar verslagen en vernielt.

Of dit meijr nu het meijr van Parima is, of dat van Cassipa, is tot nu toe onbekent.

Dese Post nu is in den jaere \* soo als bekend is op een verraderlijke en tegens het regt der volkeren en alle tractaten strijdende wijzen door de Spanjaarden van guajana met een detachement van honderd man aaengetast, den Posthouder en bijlegger gevankelijk naar guajana kert daar naar, naar Comana gebragt de huijsingen aldaar vernield en verbrand.

De reden welke tot zoodanige onwettigen handel hebben gehad, moeten haar zelve best bekend zijn, want konnen geen de allergeingsten schijn van pretensie van eigendom hebben of moeste die chimerique voorgevens der Paepen in dese gewesten wesen, dat gantsch America zijne Cath. Majesteijt toebehoort, en alle andere natien maar Precario, en bij toelating daar besittingen hebben.

Zoo dat daar geheel andere redenen toe gehad moeten hebben en welke al van veel gewigt moeten wesen om zoodanigen nijstap te doen, welke redenen seer wel gegist konnen worden dog als nog in geen sekerheid bestaande stilswijgens sal passeeren.

The unsuccessful journey of Nicolaas Horstman, sent up that river in the year 1740, would have been of great advantage if he had not been a scoundrel, and had followed his instructions instead of running away with his merchandize to the Portuguese, in going to whom he took the road of Rupununi, and of whom Mr. de la Condamine speaks in his journey of the Amazon, which journey he also uses as a proof of the non-existence of the Lake of Parima. Strange as it may seem, it is known but little or not at all that the great River of Massaruni, lying between the Essequibo and the Cuyuni, runs south-west right into the interior of these lands; that it is by no means so dangerous in falls as the two others, there being only one place where it runs under a very large rock about a few miles long; and that it was navigated and found to be without danger by the colonist C. Finet. The colonist E. Pipersberg is the only man to my knowledge who has been any distance up the river, in pursuit of thirteen of his runaway slaves, whom he got back, too, from a nation which had never seen a white man, and which refused him admittance to its land, he having got his slaves back through the medium of a free Indian known to that nation, and by means of payment.

3. The third Post was on the River of Cuyuni, which river, like that of Massaruni, mostly stretches in a straight south-westerly direction, after having first stretched for some miles in a westerly one; according to the unanimous testimony of the Indians, these Rivers Massaruni and Cuyuni have their source in a large lake or inland sea as the Indians call it, which lake is inclosed by high mountains, inhabited by vast numbers of Indians, who, through fear of the Spaniards, allow no strangers to come into their country, it being related that already two detachments of Spaniards sent into those parts to make discoveries have been beaten and massacred.

Whether this lake is the Lake of Parima or that of Cassipa is not yet known.

Now, this Post was, as is known in the year [ \* ] attacked in a treacherous manner contrary to the law of nations, and contrary to all Treaties, by the Spaniards of Guayana, with a detachment of 100 men, the Postholder and his assistant being taken prisoners to Guayana, and from there to Cumaná, the buildings at the Post being destroyed and burnt. The reasons that they had for such unlawful proceedings must be best known to themselves, because they can have not the very least shadow of a claim to possession, or it must have been the chimerical pretensions of the priests in these parts that the whole of America belongs to His Catholic Majesty, and that all other nations hold possession merely *precario*, and by permission.

So that they must have had entirely different reasons, and which must be of great consideration to authorize such an excess—which reasons can very well be guessed, but not being certain about them, I will pass over them in silence.

\* Blank in original. The year was 1758.  
[696—3]

\* Blank left in original. The year was 1758.  
2 F

**A** De selfde redenen welke d'aangelegentheid en het nut van de Post Arinda boven Essequibo bewijzen, zijn voor dese meede.

Daaren boven komt nog [\* het bent van] dat dese rivier een Streek Lands van waar de Spanjaarden sig van jaar tot jaar allengs uijtbreijden, en hoe langer hoe nader komen, door middel van haare missions, komende hare uijtgesonde kleijue parthijen tot dicht aan de plaats daar d'Ed. Comp. Indigo Plantagie heeft gestaan, en sig seker sullen tragtigen te vestigen, soo niet in tijdt gestuijt worden.

**B** Guajana of Orinoco is nu een Gouvernement geworden en den nieuwen Gouverneur heeft bevel mede gebragt en is werkelijk besig de stat of dorp in Orinoco te verlaten en aftebreken en eenige dagen reijzens hooger die rivier op te brengen waar door (door de strekkingen der beijde rivieren) de Rivier Cajoeny seer nadert deze grooten arbeit en swaare kosten geschieden niet sonder een groot en seker oogmerk.

**C** Dat de Rivier Cajoenij vol mijnen is, is genoegsam seker, soo door eenparig seggen der Indianen, als door het bewijs dat de wateren van dese rivier geven, welke wanneer het drooge seizoen geeijndigd is, en het begin der regenen, de wateren welke tusschen de bergen stil hebben gestaan onbruikbaar, ja self eeniger maten vergiftig, extra ongesond en vol Spaansgroen zijn.

De kopermijn in den blauwen berg is bekend, maar buiten dat ziet men dat d'Indiaenen silvere halskragen hebben welke selver maken en volgens haar verhaal uijt de bergen halen.

**D** Vele steenen zijn daar gevonden vol arsenicalee stoffen, en alle aanwijssinge van rijke metael stoffen.

In den jaere 1758 soude een rijke silver mijn ondekt zijn geweest, sonder het verraad van een Comp. half vrije Criool, welke daarom tot slaaf gemaakt is, en nog werkelijk aan 't fort Zeelandia werkt.

**E** Men moet niet ligt verwagten van d'Indiaanen eenige meijnen te weten te komen het gemeen der selve weten die selver niet, en zijn alleen de hoofden en oudste welke deselve sorgvuldig geheijm houden en d'andere Indianen wijs maken dat op diergelijke plaatsen de Jawaho of duijvel woond, waar door afgeschrikt worden daar niet omtrent te komen.

Dit is veroorzaakt door de wreede behandelingen der Spanjaarden eerste ondekkers, welke door het doen werken in de mijnen, veele diijssende deser menschen naer d'andere waereld hebben gesonden.

Onse swervers zoo bijgeloovig als d'Indiaanen selver sullen sig mede wel wagten op diergelijke plaatsen te komen.

**F** Dese post is meede seer noodig, om het wegloopen der slaaven naer de Spanjaarden te verhinderen sijnde dit de naaste weg.

4. Nu resteert nog de Post tussen Essequibo en Orrinocque aan de zeekant gelegen in de Kreeken Wacquipo en Maroco, niet verre beneden de Rivier Powaron welke kreeken een communicatie met Powaron hebben binnen 's lands over water, gelijk mede een met de Rivier Uaijna welke een

The same reasons which made the Post of Arinda above Essequibo of importance and utility also exist here. In addition to this, there is also the fact that [the bend of]\* this river is a tract of land along which the Spaniards spread themselves from year to year, and gradually come closer by means of their Missions, the small parties sent out by them coming close to the place where the Honourable Company's indigo plantation stood, and being certain to try and establish themselves if they are not stopped in time.

Guayana, or Orinoco, has now become a Government, and the new Governor has brought orders, and is actually at work, to abandon and to break down the town or village in Orinoco, and to bring it a few days' journey higher up the river, by doing which and on account of the ramifications of the two rivers, he is brought much nearer the River Cuyuni. This immense work and the heavy expense are not undertaken without some important and certain aim.

That the River Cuyuni is full of mines is pretty certain both from the unanimous testimony of the Indians, and from the fact that the waters of this river, which have been stagnant amongst the mountains, are found to be undrinkable, and even, to some extent, poisonous, at the end of the dry season and when the rains begin. They are then exceedingly unwholesome, and full of verdigris.

The copper-mine in the Blue Mountain is well known, but besides this it is seen that the Indians have silver collars, which they make themselves, and which, according to their words, they get from the mountains.

Many stones are found there full of arsenical matter and every appearance of rich metal.

In the year 1758 a rich silver-mine would have been discovered had it not been for the treasonable conduct of a half-free creole, who was consequently made a slave, and who is now actually at work at Fort Zeelandia.

We must have no expectations of getting information concerning any mines from the Indians. The common people themselves know nothing of them, and it is only the Chiefs and the Elders who carefully keep the same secret, and make the other Indians believe that the Jawaho or Devil lives in those places, by which they are frightened from approaching those places.

This is caused by the harsh treatment of the Spaniards, the first discoverers, who, by making them work in the mines, have sent many thousands of these people to the other world.

Our itinerant traders, as superstitious as the Indians themselves, are also very careful not to come near those places.

This Post is also very necessary to stop the slaves who run away to the Spaniards, this being the nearest way.

4. There now remains only the Post situated on the sea-coast between Essequibo and Orinoco, in the Creeks Wacquipo and Moruka, not far below the River Pomeroon, which creeks have an inland water communicating with Pomeroon, as also with the River Waini.

\* There is an erasure here in the Director-General's own handwriting, which makes it rather doubtful how he finally intended these words to stand.

heeft met de Rivier Barima, welke alle in het regen seizoen bevaerbaar zijn, en dus een zeer groot gemak aan den handel soo met d'Indiaenen, als vooral met de Spanjaarden toebrengen, moettende alle welke met geen groote welbezeijlde vaartuijgen naar af van Orrinoque vaaren de Post noodwendig passeeren.

Den handel van die Post heeft oudtijds meest bestaan in vaartuijgen en Oraene verwe voor welke laatste een seer groote quantiteit plagt te leveren maar nu geheel te niet.

De vaartuijgen welke van daar komen zijn verre de beste en duursaamste wordende door de Warouwen welke d'Eijlanden in de mont van Orrinocque bewoonen gemaakt.

Het voornaamste nut van die Post bestaat:—

1. In possessie van die Landstreek te houden.  
2. In het afsnijden en vangen der slaven welke uijt dese Colonie naar Orinoque tragten te deserteren welke meest die weg passeeren.

3. Om d'Indiaenen te besorgen welke zoo d'Ed. Comp. plantagien als particuliere ingesetene noodig hebben om te gaan souten zijnde meest alle welke onder die post woenen goede zeelieden ende het vaaren gewend.

4. Om de noodige vaartuijgen te besorgen, den gesaghebber van dese Post indien een man was welke zijn intrest behartigde konde een groot fortuijn maken.

Want behalven den handel met d'Indiaenen voor hangmatten, vaartuijgen, soute vis, slaven, en andere Indiaansche coopmanschappen, dat niet sonder goede voordeelen is.

Soo moeten alle de Spanjaarden welke naar hier komen met muij esels, Koebeesten, Toebak, huijden, smeer, Gedroogd vlees, &c., bij hem passeeren en eenige daegen ververschen en de beesten laten uijtrusten.

Indien den selven sig voorsag van de goederen welke de Spanjaarden benoodigt hebben souden die seer in haar schik wesen sig daar te kunnen voorsien en niet verder komen, dese saak is ligt te begrijpen.

Bij dit beknopte wegens de posten of handelplaatsen gesegt, dient nog geconsidereert te worden, de wijd uijtgestrektheid der landerijen, tusschen die vier posten gesitueert, sonder die geene te requenen, welke voorbij deselve en onder de jurisdictie van d'Ed. Comp. behooren.

Boven d'eerste val in Essequibo is door een Jood, Moses Isakse de Vries genaamt, sedert eenige jaren geleden een suijker plantagie begonnen, het daar gegroeijde riet heeft de verwondering en verbaastheid van alle inwoonders na sig getrokken.

De Rivieren Massaroenij, Cajoenij, Powaron, Wacquepo, en Moroka, Weijni, &c., overtreffen dese zoodaanig in vrugthaere Landen dat in geen de minste vergelijking kunnen gebragt worden.

Indien men ooit tot zodanig een nutte zaak wilde overgaan en het voorbeeld der Engelsche en Franschen naervolgen, souden die posten daar van gehandelt is, van de alderuijterste Noodsakelijkheid en ononbeerlijk zijn, en (mag het gesegt worden) indien dit niet bij der hand genomen word, sullen onse Nabuuren sagjes aanaderen ons omcingelen en ten langen laetsten sonder geweld te gebruiken het Land doen ruijmen, men begint dat reets te bemerken en wat is te verwagten, van

which has one with the River Barima, which are all navigable in the rainy season, and thus of very great use in furthering commerce both with the Indians and with the Spaniards. all who do not sail in very large ships having to pass the Post on their journey from Orinoco. The trade of that Post formerly consisted mostly in boats and oriane dye, of which last it used to yield a very large quantity though now it sends none.

The boats which come from there are by far the best and most durable, being manufactured by the Warouws, who inhabit the islands in the mouth of the Orinoco.

The importance of this Post consists in—

1. Keeping possession of that district.  
2. Stopping and catching the slaves who try to run away from this Colony to Orinoco, and who mostly pass this way.

3. Providing the Indians who are required both by the Honourable Company's plantations as well as by private colonists to go salting, most of those who live under this Post being good sailors and used to the sea.

4. Providing the necessary boats.

The holder of this Post could make a large fortune if he was a man to look after his own interests, because, in addition to the trade with the Indians in hammocks, boats, salt-fish, slaves, and other Indian merchandize, which is not without good profit, all the Spaniards who come here with mules, cattle, tobacco, hides, dried meat, &c., pass the Post, and stop there for a few days to refresh themselves and rest their animals. If he kept a stock of the things that the Spaniards required, the latter would be very pleased to buy them there, and not be obliged to go further. This fact it is easy to grasp.

In addition to what has been briefly stated here concerning the Posts or trading-places, there must also be considered the vast extent of the districts situated between the four Posts, without reckoning those which are past the same, and belonging to the jurisdiction of the Honourable Company.

Above the first fall in Essequibo a Jew named Moses Isaac de Vries, who has now been dead some years, commenced a sugar plantation, and the cane which was grown there called forth the admiration and astonishment of all the inhabitants.

The Rivers Massaruni, Cuyuni, Pomeroon, Wacquepo, Moroka, and Waini, &c., surpass this one so greatly in the matter of fertile lands that not the slightest comparison can be instituted.

If we ever desired to follow the example of the English and French, the Posts of which I have spoken would be absolutely necessary and indispensable, and (be it said) if this matter is not taken in hand, our neighbours will quietly approach and surround us, and finally, without exercising any violence, drive us from the country. This is already beginning to be observed, and what can we expect from the numerous arrivals of settlers in Cayenne and the

A die sco schielijke en talrijke versendingen van Inwoonders naar Caijenne, en het versetten der Spaansche volken plantingen in Guaijana zoo veel nader aan onse Grensen.

Dese gaan als een trotsche natie opentlijker te werk en daar kan men zig beter voor wachten als een opentlijk vijand, nooit zoo gevaarlijk is als een geheijmen.

B Dog d'eerste zal heel anders te werk gaan. Zij zullen zig denk ik voor eerst wel wagten Lang de zee kust de Rivier Marewijne (haar scheijdpaal met Suriname) te passeeren maar is te verwagten sulx Landwaards in en agter onse Colonien om sullen doen, en dan al schielijk aan de boorden van Essequibo geraken en dus naderen (*e.g.*, d'Ohio in N. America) of naar d'Amazones de Portugeesen naderen.

Eenige jaeren geleden, heb ik een passpoort van een Gouverneur van Cajenne gesien, waar in het hoofd stond, Gouverneur van de fransche Volkplantingen van Damazones tot Orinoque. *Ex ungue Leonem.*

removal of Spanish people and plantations in Guayana so much nearer to our boundaries? The latter go to work openly, like a proud nation, and they can therefore be better opposed, an open enemy never being so dangerous as a secret one.

But the former will go to work in an entirely different way. They will, I think, at first be careful not to pass the River Marewyne on the sea-coast (their boundary-line with Suriname), but it is to be expected that they will do so inland and behind our Colonies, and then quietly reach the banks of the Essequibo, and thus approach us (*e.g.*, the Ohio in North America) or the Portuguese on the Amazon.

A few years ago I saw a passport issued by a Governor of Cayenne, which was headed, Governor of the French Colonies from the Amazon to the Orinoco. *Ex ungue Leonem.*

#### Inclosure 2 in No. 396.

C

*Instructions issued by the Director-General, Essequibo, to the Postholder, Arinda.*

INSTRUCTIE voor den Posthouder boven Essequibo, waer naer sig nauwkeurig sal hebben te reguleeren.

I.

D Den Posthouder sal de Vreede en Vriendschap met d'Indiaensche natien zoo veel in zijn vermogen is nauwkeurig trachten t'onderhouden, en aen te queeken, en volstrekt niet gedoogen, dat deselve door iemand wie het ook zij, verongelijkt of qualijk gehandelt werden, en sulx onverhoopt door Swervers geschiedende deselve sonder oogluiking, Schoon met een pas voorzien zijn, direct met eene zijner bijleggers afzenden naer het Fort Zeelandia.

II.

E Hij zal met alle moogelijke vlijt, op alle weglopende Slaeven passen, deselve vangen en aen het Fort brengen sullende daer voor genieten, de premie, door den Ed. Achb. Raed daer op gestelt.

III.

Hij zal geen vreemde handelaers van waer ook zijn mogen in de Rivier Essequibo of daer in uitwaterende rivieren gedoogen, ook geene uijt deeze Colonie als die met een behoorlijke pas voorzien zijn, maer deselve arresteeren en naer het Fort senden. Wel verstaende echter hier onder geene Vrije Indianen begrepen zijn.

IV.

F

D'uijstaende Schulden zoo van d'Ed. Comp. als andersints zal hij met alle mogelijk vlijt invorderen en d'Indianen door Sachte middelen tot de betaling trachten te noodsaeken.

V.

Hem en zijne bijleggers word toegestaen, voor haer privé te mogen handelen, dog sullen alle ver-

INSTRUCTIONS to the Postholder in Upper Essequibo, which he will have to follow carefully.

I.

The Postholder shall try to maintain and cultivate friendly and peaceable relations with the Indian nations as far as lies in his power, and shall not allow those nations to be unjustly or badly treated by any one, whoever it may be, and should any such offences be committed by wanderers, the latter, although they may be provided with a pass, shall instantaneously and directly be sent with one of his assistants to Fort Zeelandia.

II.

He shall keep a look-out with all possible zeal for runaway slaves, capture them, and bring them to the fort, receiving in return the reward set upon them by the Honourable Court.

III.

He shall allow no foreign traders from wherever they may be in the River Essequibo or in the rivers that fall into it, nor any traders of this Colony except such as are provided with a proper pass, but shall arrest them and send them to the fort. It is well understood that free Indians are not included in this.

IV.

He shall collect with all possible zeal the outstanding debts both of the Honourable Company and others, and shall employ persuasive measures to get the Indians to pay.

V.

He and his assistants shall be allowed to trade on their own account, but they shall all be

plicht weezen eer van haere ingehandelde slaeven of goederen disponeeren, geene uijtgesondert hoe gering ook deselve, alvorens aen ons te vertoonen, behoudende aen ons het regt van preferentie op dezelve, haer daer voor betalende de volle waarde.

## VI.

Voor oude Schulden welke voor Ingeseten komt t'ontfangen, sal hij genieten tien guldens per Slaen boven d'onkosten zoo eenige komt te doen.

## VII.

Het geene hem belast word te besorgen door den Directeur-Generael, Sal hij nauwkeurig en zonder versuijm uijtvoeren, en de toe te sendene beveelen exact naer komen.

## VIII.

Zoo drae eenigsints doenlijk is zal hij de Post versetten, en dezelve overbrengen aen de mond van Ripenuwini, wyl sulx om redenen volstrekt nodig geoordeelt wordt.

## IX.

Hij zal trachten mede zoo drae doenlijk om de rivier Essequibo selver op te vaeren, en Vriendschap maeken met de Taroumas, en d'andere aldaer woonende natien, zoo doenlijk mede met de Manoas (anders Magnauwen genaemt) en eenige onkosten dies aengaende genootsaekt zijnde te doen, dezelve in rekening brengen, Sullende hem deselve van wegens d'Ed. Comp. goed gedaen worden mits niet te hoog of exorbitant daer in gaende, moettende daer in voorsigtig zijn, en behoorlijke menagie betrachten.

## X.

Hij zal niet permitteeren eenige Swervers uijt deeze Colonie de weg van Essequibo opvaeren voorbij de post aen Ripenuwini, in der wel Ripenuwini Selvers op vaeren, om te pravenieeren deeze goede saek, door het gewoone quaed gedrag dezer menschen niet verhinderd werde, en dit articul van zijne Instructie aen alle opkomende Swervers voorlezen, wordende haer die weg Strikt verboden, en hij sal die gene die daer tegens aengaaen, aenstonds afzenden.

Deeze twee articulen van groote aengelegetheijt zijnde, worden hem op het Serieusten aenbevoolen en door hem nauwkeurig en wel volbragt wordende Sal aen H. E. G. A. voorgedraegen worden om hem naer verdiensten te recompenseeren

## XI.

Hij zal door Vriendelijkheid van d'Indiaenen, tragten te ontdekken, waer mijnen, gesteenten of diergelijke zijn, wel onderricht zijnde die aldaer gevonden worden, de plaetsen nauwkeurig aentekenen en aen ons rapport doen.

## XII.

Ook de Christal mijn boven in Ripenuwini naaukeurig examineeren, en indien eenigsints doenlijk de Piramide besigtigen of door sijne bijleggers laeten besigtigen en daer mede rapport van doen.

[696—3]

obliged, before disposing of their slaves or goods, A to show them to us first (without any or the slightest exception), we reserving to ourselves the right of purchasing any of the same, and paying them the full value for them.

## VI.

For old debts which he collects for colonists he shall receive 10 guilders per slave over and above the costs (if any).

## VII.

He shall execute carefully, exactly, and without delay all orders sent to him by the Director-General. B

## VIII.

As soon as it is at all possible he shall remove the Post to the mouth of the Ripenuwini, such being considered absolutely necessary.

## IX.

He shall try to make his way up the River Essequibo as soon as possible, and enter into friendly relations with the Taroumas and the other nations living there; if possible, too, with the Manoas (also called Magnouws); and of any expenses which he may be compelled to incur he shall make out an account which will be paid him by the Honourable Company, provided it be not too high or exorbitant, for he must be careful in this, and try to be duly economical. C

## X.

He shall not permit any itinerant traders from this Colony to proceed up the Essequibo past the Post at Ripenuwini (though they may proceed up the Ripenuwini itself), in order that our good relations may not be disturbed by the usually bad behaviour of such people, and he shall read this article of his instructions to all wanderers coming up stream, that road being strictly prohibited to them, and those who continue their journey contrary to his orders he shall immediately send down. D

These two Articles being of great importance, are recommended to his most serious attention, and if carefully observed by him, his conduct shall be mentioned to their Lordships, in order that he may be rewarded according to his merits. E

## XI.

By friendliness with the Indians he shall try to discover where there are mines, precious stones, or such things, and when properly informed of where such things are found, he shall carefully mark the places and send us a report. F

## XII.

He is also to examine carefully the crystal mine above the Ripenuwini, and if it is at all possible he shall inspect the Pyramid, or get his assistants to do so, and send us a report upon the same.

A

## XIII.

De bijleggers word geordonneert, sig mede hier naer Stipt te gedraegen, Haeren Posthouder nauwkeurig en zonder tegenspreken volstrekt te gehoorzaemen, en bij manquement hier aen sal den Posthouder deselve direct hebben af te senden, als wanneer met d'Eerste vertrekkende Engelsche barq naer Noord America versonden sullen worden Sullende hier in, de minste Consideratie niet meer gebruikt worden, jegens die geene die aen haer plicht of het naerkomen van deeze Instructie Sullen manqueeren.

B En verders Sal den Posthouder sig in alles gedraegen als een Eerlijk en getrouw bediende van d'Edele Compagnie behoort te doen.

## XIII.

The assistants are ordered to follow these instructions literally, to obey the Postholder carefully and without opposition, failing which the Postholder shall immediately send the same down the river, when they will be shipped to North America in the first departing English vessel; not the slightest consideration will be shown in this matter to those who fail to do their duty or to carry out these instructions.

And the Postholder shall further act in all things as it behoves an honest and trusty servant of the Honourable Company to do.

(Signed) L. STORM VAN 'S GRAVESANDE

Fort Zeelandia, on the Rio Essequibo, August 14, 1764.

No. 397.

*Extract from a Letter or Despatch said to be from Storm van 's Gravesande to Governor Crommelin, and to be dated Rio Essequibo, August 18, 1764.\**

C

(Extract.)

EEN vaartuijg van de plantagie La retraite, &c.,

A BOAT from the plantation La Retraite, &c.,

ontwaar sijnde geworden verscheijde Surinaamsche swervers met passen van UWelEd. Gestr. voorsien om naar Barime te gaan handelen in plaats van deselve te volgen sig jaar en dag in deese colonie ophouden en dus apparent haare crediteuren in Suriname maar zoeken te bedriegen, sal deselve alle doen vertrekken en hebben deese week nog aan eene Wolff genaamt, geordonneert aanstonds weeder naar Suriname te gaan, sullende geen een derselve meer toelaaten sig hier op te houden, als voor soo verre brood of iets benodigt mogten hebben.

D

Bij deese geleegentheit dat hiervan spreekte, neeme de vrijheid UWelEd. Gestr. te melden, dat UWelEd. Gestr. in die passen de Rivier Barime noemende, sulx klagten van de Spanjaarden veroorzaakt welke sustineerende die rivier haar toekomt, waarin geloove, gelijk hebben, reets eenige van die passen naar het Hof van Spanjen zijn gesonden.

E

In alle de passen die ik verleene stelle alleen, permissie om de posten te passeeren en onder de Indiaanen te gaan handelen sonder eenige plaats te noemen, en in de instructie van onse posthouders gestelt sijnde, haar geordonneert werd UWelEd. Gestr. passen te respecteren, kan dit seer wel vermijid worden.

En wel te meer, wijl hier groote reeden van klaagen over de Spanjaarden hebbe, welke reets lange door den Ambassadeur van den Staat voor het Hof gebragt zijn, wel wenschte sij de geringste uijtvlugt niet hadden, want dit gaat reets soo verre dat voorsie, wanneer mijne ontfangene

F

hayeelen ten uijtvoer brenge (waartoe de noodige preparaties beginne te maaken) het binnen korten wel tot daadelijkheeden soude kunnen komen.

having become aware that several Surinam rovers provided with passes from your Excellency to go and trade in Barima, instead of doing so stay for an indefinite time in this Colony, and are therefore apparently only trying to cheat their creditors in Surinam, I shall compel them all to go away, and even this week I have ordered one Wolff to return immediately to Surinam, not allowing one more to remain here unless it be in want of bread or anything.

Whilst on this subject I take the liberty to inform your Excellency that mentioning the River Barima in those passes causes complaints from the Spaniards, who, maintaining that the river belongs to them, in which I believe they are right, some of these passes have already been sent to the Court of Spain.

In all passes issued by me, I only grant permission to pass the Posts and to trade amongst the Indians, without mentioning any place; and since in the instructions to our Postholders they are ordered to respect your passes, this can be very well avoided.

Moreover, whilst I have every reason to complain of the Spaniards, and this has already long since been made known to the Court by the Ambassador of this State, I do not wish that they should have the least ground for complaint, because things have gone so far that I foresee that if I carry out the instructions which I have received (and the necessary preparations are already being made) we should speedily come to blows.

\* There is some reason to doubt the authenticity of this extract. It purports to be a copy of an extract with the following head-note:—

"Extract from a letter from L. Storm van 's Gravesande, dated Rio Essequibo, August 18, 1764, to Governor W. Crommelin." No original can be found. It is certainly not in Storm van Gravesande's spelling, and there is no reference in the contemporary despatches from him to the events with which it deals.



*The Shareholders of the Dutch West India Company in the Chamber of Zeeland to their High Mightinesses the States-General, October 23, 1764.*

(Extract.)

HET heeft U Hoog Mog. behaagt bij der selver onderscheijdene Resolutien van den 16 en 27 Julij des loopenden Jaars 1764, aan de præsidiaale Kamer Amsterdam toe te senden twee Copien Missiven door den Capitein ter Zee van Oijen den 10 en 27 April jongstleeden uit Rio Demerarij aan U Hoog Mog. geschreeven, concerneerende den slegten staat van defensie waar in de Colonie van Essequibo, en onderhoorige Rivieren sig (sijns oordeels) soudén bevinden, mitsgaders de middelen die tot redres van dien, naar desselfs begrip, behoorde te worden in het werk gesteld; met order aan opgemelde præsidiaale Kamer, om aan U Hoog Mog. opening te geeven van den staat en toestand van de voorsz Colonie, en van de middelen die tot defensie van deselve worden geëmployeert; mitsgaders om U Hoog Mog. te dienen van der selver consideratien en berigt op den verdere inhoud der voornoemde Missives.

Wijders sullen U Hoog Mog. uit de onderscheijdene Missives van de voornoemde præsidiaale Kamer, den 8 der gepasseerde Maand Augustij ter Vergadering van U Hoog Mog. ingekoomen, gesien hebben, dat welgemelde præsidiaale Kamer sig van het geeven van het voorsz berigt tragt te excuseeren, op grond (soo deselve seggen) dat zij de directie en verantwoordinge van de Colonie van Essequibo en onderhoorige Rivieren seedert het onstaan der bewuste differenten over de Vaart op deselve, ten jaare 1750 geheel en al aan deese Kamer soudén hebben overgelaaten. Een avance, Hoog Mog. Heeren! die geensints bij de Kamer Zeeland werd geadvoueerd, dog waar omtrent deselve sig ten deesen in geen verdere discussie sal inlaaten; eensdeels, om alle aigreur met haare meede Kamerén te eviteeren, en anderdeels, om de attentie van U Hoog Mog. met geen saaken, die buiten het voorgestelde oogmerk zijn, noodeloos te vermoeijen: ook vermeend de Kamer Zeeland (onder eerbied) Hoog Mog. Heeren, altoos en speciaal seedert dien tijd omtrent de Colonie van Essequibo en de defentie van dien, soodanige directie gehouden te hebben, dat zij deselve, met een gerust gemoed, voor het oog van den Souverain durft bloot leggen.

En deese zijn dan vervolgens ook de reedenen, waarom zij best geoordeelt heeft, het gerequireerde berigt op de boovengemelde Missive van den Capiteijn van Oijen, direct en uit haar eijgen naam te stellen, dog het selve des niettegenstaande, door het gewoone canaal van de præsidiaale Kamer aan U Hoog Mog. te laten toekoomen; ten eijnde deselve præsidiaale Kamer alle soodanige remarques en reflexien, als zij op het selve soude moogen hebben, bij een aparte Memorie, *simul & semel*, aan U Hoog Mog. soudén kunnen suppéditeeren.

Om dan vervolgens punctuëlijk aen den inhoudé van de hier booven geëxtendeerde Resolutien van U Hoog Mog. in een gelijdelijke order te voldoen, soo sal de Kamer Zeeland bij dit berigt, de twee volgenden punten wat nader ten genoegen van U Hoog Mog. aantoonen: te weten, eerst, den staat van defensie waar in sig de Colonie van Essequibo bevonden heeft, ten tijde dat den Capitein van Oijen in deselve is gearriveert; mitsgaders dat de voorsz staat van defensie soodanig is geweest, dat

IT has pleased your High Mightinesses to send to the Presidial Chamber, Amsterdam, by Resolution of the 16th and 27th July of this year (1764), copies of two despatches written to your High Mightinesses by Captain van Oyen on the 10th and 27th April last from Rio Demerara concerning the bad state of defence in which the Colony of Essequibo and the rivers belonging thereto would, in his opinion be, unless the measures suggested by him for remedying the same were put into execution: together with orders to the aforesaid Presidial Chamber to lay before your High Mightinesses an account of the state and condition of the aforesaid Colony, and of the measures employed for the defence of the same; and also to furnish your High Mightinesses with its opinion and a report upon the further contents of the aforesaid despatches.

Further, your High Mightinesses will have seen from the several despatches of the aforesaid Presidial Chamber, laid before your High Mightinesses' Assembly on the 8th August last, that the Presidial Chamber endeavoured to excuse itself from making the said report on the ground, as they say, that since the differences arose in the year 1750 concerning the navigation to the Colony of Essequibo and the rivers belonging thereto they had entirely abandoned the direction and responsibility of the same to this Chamber—an assertion, your High Mightinesses, by no means admitted by the Chamber of Zeeland, but concerning which the same will not enter upon any further discussion now; firstly, in order to avoid any friction with other Chambers; and, secondly, in order not to needlessly tire your High Mightinesses with any matters beyond the present concern. The Chamber of Zeeland also respectfully contends, your High Mightinesses, that especially since that time it has managed the affairs and the defence of the Colony of Essequibo in such a manner that it can fearlessly submit the same to the inspection of the Sovereign.

And these are, therefore, also the reasons why this Chamber considers it best to draw up directly, and in its own name, the report required concerning the above-mentioned despatches from Captain van Oyen, but to send them to your High Mightinesses, nevertheless, through the usual channel of the Presidial Chamber, so that the said Chamber may add in a separate Memoir, *simul et semel*, such remarks and reflections as it might wish to make to your High Mightinesses.

In order, therefore, to carry out the contents of the above-mentioned Resolutions of your High Mightinesses in due order, the Chamber of Zeeland will, in this Report, dwell more particularly upon the two following points, to wit:

1. The state of defence in which the Colony of Essequibo was at the time that Captain van Oyen arrived there; also, that the aforesaid state of defence was such that no other or further reasons can be required.

A er geen andere of meerdere met reeden kon worden gerequireert.

En ten tweeden, dat de informatie en reflexien van den selven Capitein van Oijen soo gegrond niet zijn, als deselve in den eersten opslag wel schijnen, mitsgaders dat desselfs middelen tot redres, meerendeels zijn impracticabel, en buyten alle moogelijkheid.

B Belangende dan het eerste point, soo gelieven U Hoog Mog. geïnformeert te zijn, dat de Colonie van Essequibo in sig bevat dat district van de noord-oost kust van Zuid America, het welk tusschen de Spaansche Colonie de Orinoco, en de Hollandsche Colonie de Berbices geleegen is, en het geen niet alleen door de Hooft-Rivier Essequibo, maer ook door verscheidene kleine Rivieren, als Barima, Weijne, Maroco Pouwaron en Demerary word doorsneden, waar van het dan ook de naam van de Colonie van Essequibo, en onderhoorige Rivieren draagt, dat egter in het voorsz geheele district, ten minste soo lang het onder de directie van de Westindische Maatschappij heeft gestaan tot den jaare 1750, geen andere riviere is bewoond of bevolkt geworden dan de Hooft-Rivier van Essequibo.

C Dat in de voorsz Rivier van Essequibo van alle oude tijden af op een Eijland booven in deselve, juist ter plaatse daar de Rivieren Cajoene en Maseroeni in deselve vallen, en dus op een driesprong meer dan twintig uren gaans van de Mond van de voorsz Rivier, heeft geleegen een oud Fort, wegens zijn situatie Kijkoveral geheeten, alwaar de Commandeurs in der tijd residentie hebben gehouden.

2. That the information and reflections of the said Captain van Oyen are not so well based as they appear at first sight to be, and that his measures of redress are mostly impracticable and beyond all possibility.

Concerning this point, your High Mightinesses will please to understand that the Colony of Essequibo comprises the district of the north-east coast of South America lying between the Spanish Colony, the Orinoco, and the Dutch Colony, the Berbices, and that the same is crossed not only by the chief river, the Essequibo, but also by several small rivers, such as Barima, Waini, Moruka, Pomeroon, and Demerary, from which it takes the name of the Colony of Essequibo and the rivers belonging thereto, though in the whole of the aforesaid district—at least, as long as it was under the direction of the West India Company, until the year 1750, no other river than the chief river of Essequibo was inhabited or populated.

That on an island in the aforesaid River of Essequibo there was established of old, just on the spot where the Rivers Cuyuni and Massaruni fall into the same, and therefore on a point of land more than twenty hours' march from the mouth of the aforesaid river, an old fort, called Kijkoveral on account of its position, where at one time the Commandeurs had resided.

No. 399.

D

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, December 28, 1764.*

(Extract.)

DE Gehouwe Steenen van het Fort kyk over al (want de mopsteenen sijn alle reets door de Plantagien van U. E. G. A. afgehaelt en gebruikt) konnen al seer verre Strekken maer Ed. Gr. Achb. Heeren het afbreken en afhaelen derselve vereijst seer veel tijd en arbeid, het is een oud Portugees werk extra hecht en Sterk gemetzelt.

THE hewn stones of Fort Kijkoveral could be of very great service, but, my Lords, to break them down and bring them away would require very much time and labour. It is an old Portuguese work, built extraordinarily tight and strong,

E Wanneer U. E. G. A. seer ge Eerde aen den Raed van Justitie, in de laest gehoudene vergadering gelesen wierd. Vroeg eene der Raeden of de 40 man welke U. E. G. A. daer in bepaelen voor het Guarnisoen dezer Colonie voor de beide Rivieren was? daer op replicerende dat ik het zoo begreep, antwoorde hij, dat het dan omtrent evenveel was of er in tgeheel geen soldaeten waeren, als 20 man in ieder rivier, dog dat dewijl sij maer met haer twee Raeden present waeren, hij gevoeglijker oordeelde de deliberation op voors. missive uijtgesteld wierd, tot den Raed Compleet vergadert was.

When your Lordships' honoured letter was read to the Council of Justice at their last meeting one of the Councillors asked whether the forty men which your Lordships destined for the garrison of this Colony were for both rivers. Upon my replying that I understood it so, he answered that twenty men in each river was much the same as if there were only two Councillors present, he thought it better that the consideration of the aforesaid despatch should be adjourned until there was a full meeting of the Council.

F

Ik hebbe rapport ontvangen van de weijnig ingeetene welke nog boven in de riviere woonen dat sij eenige weeken geleden een blanke met eenige Indiaenen gesien hebben de vallen van de Rivier Cajoeny afvaeren en de rivier van Masseroeny op vaeren. Ik hebbe haer seer gereprocheert waerom sij die man niet geapprehendeert en naer het Fort gesonden hebben, en wel expres gelast hem of andere weder in het oog krijgende aenstonds

I have received a report from the few colonists who still reside in the upper reaches of the rivers that a few weeks ago they had seen a white man with a few Indians proceeding down the falls of the River Cuyuni and proceeding up the River Massaruni. I reproached them very much for not apprehending and sending the man to the fort, and expressly charged them that if they caught sight of others they should

t'apprehendeeren en mij toe te senden, twelk mij beloofd hebben.

Dit legt op geen goede Luijmen Ed. Groot Achbaere Heeren, dit sijn spions die alles komen opnemen en vreeze van de kant van Cajoeny nog het een of t'andere sal uijt broeijen.

Wat moeite gedaen hebbe of wat beloften hebbe geen Inliaenen tot nu toe konnen krijgen om behulpsaem te wezen, de Post in Cajoeny te herstellen, en sonder haer hulp kan het niet geschieden, want met slaeven is niet alleen te kostbaer maer ook te gevaerlijk, soo dat met dat werk seer verlege ben. Want de herstelling van die post, is, mijns bedunkens van de grootste noodsaekelijkheid.

De schielijke en soo spoedig voortgaende bevolking van Cajenne, ondervind ik aen mij niet alleen veel stof tot naerdenken, verleent, maer hebbe een week of vier gelede een brief ontfangen van den Gouverneur van Suriname, sig seer breed over dat subject uijt laetende, en daer soo wel als ik noodlottige gevolgen voor onze Colonien aen de vaste kust voorstellende.

Ik hebbe d'Eer U. E. G. A. hier nevens te senden de Conditien door het Fransche Hof voorgesteld tot die bevolking (mogelijk hebben U. E. G. A. deselve reets gesien dog dit afschrift hebben wij uijt het verongelukte Schip aen de (Corentijn) Sulke onnoemelijke kosten als daer toe aangewend worden, is dat Hof niet gewend te doen, sonder eenig groot en gewigtig vooruijsicht. Ick hebbe soo als d'Eer gehad hebbe in het naeschrift van mijne laeste d'Eer gehad U. E. G. A. verslag te doen van mijn bevel om de Post Arinda te versetten, en mijn voornemen soo drae maer eenigsints mogelijk is, deselve nog veel verder op te setten of nog een post hooger op te Stellen (dog dit laeste sonder Speciaal bevel van U. E. G. A. niet gedaen konnende worden, ben ik verplicht het selve eerst af te wachten) om ten minste nauwkeurig bericht van alle de bewegingen binnen 's Lands van onze naebuuren t'ontfangen. Wyl den Loop van onze Rivier Essequibo sig zoo verre Zuidwaerts Strekt, dat mij seker voorstelle deselve ten minste voor een gedeelte achter Cayenne om loopt, Schoon zeer verre Landwaerts in.

Dat nog meer aanleiding tot naedenken geeft is dat de Fransche Commissarissen welke over het verongelukte Schip in Suriname en Berbices geweest zijn sig pijningen om met alle mogelijke redenen de menschen t'overtuigen dat het project onuijvoerlijk is, en gestaekt Sal moeten worden. Ik voor mij hebbe te lang in deeze landen geresideert om mij sulke prollen in de hand te laeten stoppen.

Den Gouverneur Crommelin melt mij nog de Fransche gans niet ter goeder trouwe gehandelt hebben met de rebellen van het Oost indisch Schip Nijenburg, wyl nog verscheijde en wel niet der geringste, sig in Cayenne bevinde, en wie weet Segt zijn Ed. was het niet om dofficieren die hij daer naer toe gesonden heeft, of wel eenige bekome soude hebben. Hij heeft over het eene en het andere soo mij melt omstaendig aen de Heeren Directeuren van de Societeijt van Suriname geschreven.

Dus de Fransche Oostwaerts de Spanjaerden Westwaerts, Sitten wij waerlijk als een bootje tusschen twee Oorlogschepen.

Ik Sal mij niet vermeeten Ed. Gr. Achb. Heeren aen mijne Meesters eenige raedgevingen voor te draegen in een Saek welke in niemands vermogen is te verhinderen of te beletten, mijn eenigste oogmerk in deeze is alleen U. E. G. A.

[696—3]

immediately apprehend them and send them to me, which they promised to do. A

There is something behind this, my Lords; these are spies who come and get all the information they can, and I fear that some trouble or other is brewing on the side of Cuyuni.

Whatever trouble I have taken, and whatever promises I have made, I have not been able to get any Indians up to the present to aid me in re-establishing the Post in Cuyuni, and without their help it cannot be done, because with slaves it is not only too costly but also too dangerous, so that I am in great difficulties with this work, and the re-establishment of that Post is, in my opinion, of the greatest necessity. B

The quiet but steady increase made in the colonization of Cayenne affords me not only much food for reflection, but three or four weeks ago I received a letter from the Governor of Surinam in which he expresses himself very fully upon that subject, and in which he, like me, sees fatal results for our Colonies on the mainland.

I have the honour to send your Lordships herewith the conditions laid down by the Court of France for that colonization (possibly your Lordships have already seen these, but we have this copy from the ship that was wrecked near the Corentin). That Court is not accustomed to lay out such unheard-of sums as have been expended in this matter without having some great and important aim. C

I have, as I had the honour to inform you in the postscript of my last, given orders for the removal of Post Arinda, and it is my intention, as soon as it is at all possible, to establish it much higher still, or to establish another Post higher up (but since this last cannot be done without special orders from your Lordships, I am obliged to await these first) in order that I may, at least, receive detailed reports of all the movements made by our neighbours in the interior, for the course of our River Essequibo runs so far southwards that I most certainly think it must, partly at least, run behind Cayenne, although very far inland. What gives occasion for more reflection is the fact that the French Commissioners who have been to Surinam and Berbices concerning the ship that was wrecked are doing their utmost to convince the people that the project is impracticable and must be dropped. I, for my part, have lived too long in these countries to allow myself to be blinded in that way. D E

The Governor (Crommelin) tells me also that the French acted with no very good faith with the rebels of the East Indian ship "Nyenburg," since several, and not the least of them, are still in Cayenne, and who knows, says his Excellency, whether it was not on account of the officers whom he sent there, or some of whom he may have received. I am told that he has written fully concerning these matters to the Surinam Company. F

Thus, what with the French on the east and the Spaniards on the west, we are really like a little boat between two men-of-war.

I shall not attempt to give my masters advice in a matter which it is in no one's power to prevent or to circumvent. My only aim in this is to respectfully submit to your Lordships what is our humble opinion concerning this in all our

2 H

A eerbiedig voor te draegen wat ons gering gevoelen daer over in alle onze aen de vaste kust gelegene Colonien is en onze wel gegronde vreeze over de gevolgen.

Voor mij sie niets dat in deeze saek alhier gedaen kan worden, als de bevolking der Colonie en het uijtsetten van goede binnelandsche posten om op alle bewegingen een nauwkeurig en Scherp-siendend oog to houden.

B Want zoo als reeds d'Eer hebbe gehadt U. E. G. A. te melden, indien iets ondernomen word, Sal het binnen 's Lands geschieden, en niet langs de zeekust dit stel ik vast en seker en gelove niet het twee jaeren sal aenlopen of men sal al iets van dat soort ontwaer worden.

By deeze gelegentheijt heb ik met van der Heyde weder gesproken wegens Cajoenij, hij heeft mij gesegt d'Indiaenen overgehaelt waeren om behulpsaem te wezen, maer dat dan ook versekert wilde zijn van bescherming tegens de Spanjaerden.

C Hij is van oordeel dat nootsaekelijk soude weezen, eerst ter plaetse daer de post sal staen een goede broottuijn gekapt en beplant wierd opdat zoowel den posthouder als Indiaene geen gebrek mogte lijden (want kost als vis en wild is daer in grooten overvloed) en dat het goed soude weezen eenige van d'oude slaeven welke niet alleen niets meer deden maer tot swaere last der plantagien waeren daer te settens als nog genoegsaem in staet om op de broodtuijnen te passen en die schoon te houden en naer te planten wanneer door den overvloed van brood, een groote menigte van Indiaenen altoos om en bij de post soude weezen.

Colonies situated on the mainland, and our well-grounded fears concerning the consequences.

I, for my part, see no remedy for this matter except by populating the Colony and establishing good Posts in the interior, from which a sharp and careful look-out can be kept upon all movements.

Because, I have already had the honour of informing your Lordships, that if anything be undertaken it will be done inland, and not on the sea-coast; of this I am perfectly certain, and I do not think that two years will elapse before we see something of the kind.

In this emergency I have again had a talk with Van der Heyde about Cuyuni. He has told me that the Indians were won over to be helpful, but that they wished in that case to be assured also of protection against the Spaniards.

He is of opinion that it would be needful that, at the place where the Post is to stand, a good bread-ground be first cleared and planted, so that neither the Postholder nor the Indians should suffer want (since food such as fish and game is there in great abundance), and that it would be well to place there some of the old slaves, who not only do no more work, but are a heavy burden on the plantations, yet still competent to tend the bread-grounds and to keep them in order, and to plant again; when, if bread were abundant, a great multitude of Indians would always be at and about the Post.

No. 400.

D

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, February 3, 1765.*

(Extract.)

E DE vriendschap met d'Indiaenen, is Seker van de Hoogste nootsaekelijkheid voor de Colonie, de gevaerlijke omstandigheden waer wij ons in bevonden hebben, en de in die tijd, betoonde trouw en bijstand der Caribischen en Acuwayen hebben overtuigende blijken gegeven, van wat nut haere vriendschap en hoe naedelig haer Vijandschap voor de Colonien is, Des niet tegenstaende ontsien sig veele ingesetene niet die menschen op alderhande manieren te mishandelen en te onderdrukken. U. E. G. A. zouden niet geloven hoe ik met de klagten van de menschen geplaeht wordt in den tijd van 14 daegen hebbe over de tien gehadt die haer beklag quamen doen en deze selfde morgen nog een Stuk of drie.

FRIENDLY relations with the Indians are certainly of the greatest necessity to the Colony: the dangerous circumstances in which we found ourselves, and the loyalty shown and assistance rendered at that time by the Caribs and Acuways, have given convincing proofs of what advantage their friendship, and how injurious their enmity, might be to the Colonies. Notwithstanding this, many of our colonists do not hesitate to ill-treat and oppress these people in every way. Your Lordships would not believe how I am troubled by the complaints of these people; within a fortnight I have had more than ten of them who came to tell me their grievances, and only this morning I had three.

Inclosure in No. 400.

F

*Register of the Colony of Essequibo and Demerary (1764 .*

(Extract—Title-page.)

NAAMWIJZER der Colonie Essequibo Dimmerarij & onderhorige Districten.

Gelegen aan zuijd Americas Noord kust omtrent op zeven Graeden Noorderbreete en twee en veertig graeden lengte van de kreek Abari ten Oosten tot de Rivier Amacura ten Noorden, bevattende de Rivieren, Dimmerarij Essequibo

REGISTER of the Colony of Essequibo. Demerary, and dependent districts.

Situated on the north coast of South America. at 7° north latitude and 42° longitude from the Creek Abari on the east to the River Amacura on the north, comprising the Rivers Demerary. Essequibo, Pomeroon, Waini, and the great

Powaron, Weijne, en de groote Kreeken Maijkounij Maheijka Wacquepo, en Moroco zijnde een Streek Lands Langs de zee-kust, van omtrent een Hondert en 20 Mijlen van 15 in een graed toebehorende aan d'Ed. Gen. Geocrij West Ind. Compagnie der ver Eenigde Nederlanden onder de bestiering van de Kamer Zeelande.

Creeks Maykouny, Maheyka, Wacquepo, and Moruka, being a stretch of land along the sea-coast of about 120 [Dutch] miles of 15 in 1° belonging to the Chartered West India Company of the United Netherlands, under the administration of the Chamber of Zeeland. A

No. 401.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, May 11, 1765.*

(Extract.)

NOG geen raport ontvangen wegens het ver-setten van de Post Arinda hadde dien Posthouder gelast in het begin van dit jaer af te komen dog daer bij ernstig Gerecommandeert een Waekende oog te houden op al wat booven zijn Post en in de binnenlanden passeert, Waer door moogelijk op gehouden wordt, seedert mijn per de Sarah hebbe Geen Verder berichte van Cayenne ontvangen.

I HAVE not received any report concerning the removal of Post Arinda. I had instructed the Postholder to come down at the beginning of this year, but as he has been earnestly charged to keep a sharp look-out upon all that goes on beyond his Post and in the interior, he has possibly been detained. Since my letter by the "Sarah," I have received no further information from Cayenne. B

No. 402.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company May 27, 1765.*

(Extract.)

VERNEME niets van den Posthouder van Arinda, Indien hem eenig ongeval was overkomen soude seeker door middel der Indiaenen, iets daer van vernemen, zoo dat niet weete waer aen zijn lang achterblijven sal toeschrijven. Presumeere hij verre naer boven zal zijn gegaen onder de natien om nauwkeurig op te nemen hoe het daer gestelt is: verlange seer naer zijn komste, en hebbe ordre gegeven naer de Post om informatie te zenden onze swervers selve die gewoon waeren naer boven te gaen om onder d'Indiaenen te handelen, Schijnen dit werk niet te betrouwen, want komt geen een om een permissie briefje.

I HEAR nothing of the Postholder of Arinda; if anything had happened to him I should certainly have heard something of it through the Indians, and therefore I do not know to what to attribute his long silence. I presume that he has gone among the natives right up in the interior in order to obtain accurate information of how matters stand. I am longing for his coming, and have sent orders to the Post to send me information. Our travellers who were wont to go up stream to trade with the Indians do not seem to trust that business, for not one of them comes and asks for a pass now. D

No. 403.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, August 13, 1765.*

(Extract.)

DEN eersten Junij van Essequibo vertrokken zijnde ben ik den darden in Demerary gearriveert, Ik hadde wederom gedagt in mijne voorgenome reijse verhindert soude zijn geworden, zoo als nu vier achter een volgende reijse geschied was, wijl eenige daegen te vooren, tijding van boven Masseroeny hadde ontvangen, de Caraibische natie met die der Acuwaysche in vollen oorlog waeren en de laest-gemelte in Masseroeny alle de vrouwen en kinderen van een Caraibis dorp gemassacreert hadden.

HAVING left Essequibo on the 1st June, I arrived at Demerary on the 3rd. I thought that I should again be prevented from undertaking this journey, as I had already been prevented on four consecutive occasions, because a few days before my departure I had received tidings from Upper Massaruni that the Carib nation was at war with that of the Acuways, and that the latter had massacred all the women and children in a Carib village on the Massaruni. F

Dit dede mij niet sonder reden wij wederom als over eenige jaeren daer in gemeleert zoude konnen worden, voor al door den voorsigtighed van eenige swervers en belangsgtige ingeseten en welke sonder de gevolgen voor uijt te sien sig door eenig schijn gewin laeten permovere sig met die verschillen te bemoeien en d'eene of dandere partye tsij met wapenen tsij met raed ondersteunen het welke door dandere party eens ondeckt wordende,

Not without some reason did I fear that we should again be mixed up in this as we were a few years ago, especially through the indiscretion of some itinerant traders and avaricious settlers, who, without taking any heed of the consequences, allow themselves to be drawn into these quarrels upon the slightest inducement of profit, supporting one or other of the parties either with arms or with advice, which being

- A altoos fatale gevolgen naer sig sleept en selver voor de Colonie noodlottig konde weezen.

Dog in die tusschen tijd den Bijlegger van Arinda afgekomen zijnde met het schriftelijk rapport van den Posthouder, waer in van die saek gemelt word, en dus bevindende deselve zoo erg niet was als men gedagt hadde, schoon in de grond volkome waer, heb ik mijn reys voortgeset en den Commandant Bakker een schriftelijke instructie gelaeten, waerin, belast van alle voorvallen van aengelegenheit, illico rapporte doen en indien genoodsaekt mogt worden, door het gevaer der ingeseten boven een detachement te senden, hij aen den Commandeerende onder officier Scherp zoude bevelen simpel defensief te ageeren en sig direct of indirect met de verschillen der Indiaenen niet te bemoeijen, en sig door geene redenen te laeten permovereen eenige attaquen te doen. Ook alle planters wel ernstig gerecommandeert, volstrekt neutrael te blijven in deezen oorlog.

- B aen den Commandeerende onder officier Scherp zoude bevelen simpel defensief te ageeren en sig direct of indirect met de verschillen der Indiaenen niet te bemoeijen, en sig door geene redenen te laeten permovereen eenige attaquen te doen. Ook alle planters wel ernstig gerecommandeert, volstrekt neutrael te blijven in deezen oorlog.
- C waeren het welke hem ter halver wege gestuijt hadde, dog dat hij een uijl van elke natie bij hem onthoden hebbende haer gesegt hadde uijt mijn ordre naer boven moest vaeren en dat hij zoo drae sijn bijlegger te rug quaem van benede, zoude komen welke hem geantwoord hadde sulx gerust konde doen.

Dat hij de Post nog niet verset hadde, doordien bevonden hadde d'Eerst verkoore plaets aen den hoek van Ripenuwini bij den regen tijd vier voet onder water stond, maer een half uur hoger op een seer bequaeme plaets hadde gevonden.

- D Maer dat doordien het jegens woordig rontom de post krielde van Caribis welke sig daer met er woon gestelt hadden en deselve maer op het verlaeten van de Poste wagtende om de Acuwaven daer seer op verbittert zijn op het Lijf te vallen, Hij niet raedsaem had gedagt als nog te verhuysen, wyl hier door de vaert op de rivier onveylig, jae onbruykbaer zoude weezen, Waerin alle mogelyke devoiren had aengewendt om die natien te bevreedigen, waer in tamelijk had gereusseert, dog die natien niet veelte vertrouwen zijde stelt hij voor of niet best zoude wezen twee man op doudte post te laeten en hij met een naer boven ging, wanneer genoegsaem versekert was zij haer rust soude houlen, en verder Landwaerd in haer gading soude gaen soeken, waer ook naer alle waarschijnlijkheid, haers gelijke zoude vinden en dus wat gedweer worden.
- E

Dit voorstel tamelijk met mijn voornemen over een stenumende, Sal ik hem gelasten sulx provisioneel werkstellig te maken.

- Binnen s' Lands word nog niets van wegens eenige vreemde vernomen, en hij heeft onder d Indiaenen sulke Schikkingen gemaekt, dat al wat daer mogt komen, aenstonds gevat, en naer het Fort gesonden sal worden. *Principiis obsta, sero medicina paratur.*
- F

Eene zijner bijleggers heeft hij naer de beruchte Piramide gesonden, welke mij mondeling verslaeg heeft gedaen en een aftekening, zoo goed als quaed mede gebragt, welke zoo verward was dat indien zijn mondelingen uijtleg daer niet bij hadde gehadt, niets ter waereld van zoude hebben

discovered by the other side always leads to fatal results, and might be of great danger to the Colony itself.

But in the meanwhile the Assistant of Arinda having arrived with a written Report from the Postholder, in which he informs me of this matter, I, finding that it was not so bad as had been thought, although at bottom perfectly true, set out upon my journey, leaving Commandant Bakker written instructions to send me immediate reports of any events of importance, and in case he should be compelled by the danger of the settlers up the river to send any soldiers there, to give the commanding subaltern strict orders to act simply on the defensive, and not to interfere directly or indirectly in the quarrels of the Indians, nor yet to allow himself to be induced on any account to undertake any attack. I also impressed upon the planters the desirability of remaining perfectly neutral in this war.

The Report from the Postholder of Arinda states that all is still well as far as the Post is concerned; that he had intended to proceed up the River Rupununi, but had found the Macoussis and Wapissanes, the two nations living there, at war, which had stopped him half-way, but that he, having summoned an Owl of each nation, had told them that he had received orders from me to proceed up the river, and that he should come as soon as his assistant had returned from below, whereupon they had answered him that he might do so without any fear; that he had not yet removed the Post, having found out that the site first selected at the corner of the Rupununi was covered with 4 feet of water in the rainy season, but that he had found a very good site half-an-hour higher up.

The Post being at present surrounded by swarms of Caribs who had taken up a position there, and were only waiting for the abandonment of the Post to fall upon the Acuways, against whom they felt very bitter, he had not considered it advisable to remove yet, since, by his doing so, progress up the river would be made unsafe, nay, impossible. Wherefore he had done all that he possibly could to pacify the two nations, and had fairly succeeded; but those nations not being very trustworthy, he asks whether it would not be best to leave two men at the old Post whilst he went up the river with one as soon as he was sufficiently certain that the natives would keep the peace or go and fight it out further inland, where they would in all probability find their match, and thus become somewhat more tractable.

This suggestion corresponding pretty well with my own ideas, I shall authorize him to put it into execution provisionally.

Nothing has yet been heard of any strangers in the interior, and he has made such arrangements with the Indians that whoever might turn up would be immediately seized and sent to the fort. *Principiis obsta, sero medicina paratur.*

He had sent one of his assistants to the famous Pyramid.\* This man gave me a verbal account of the same, and brought me a drawing, which was so confused that I could have made absolutely nothing of it unless I had had his verbal explanation. I shall attempt to bring it

\* See note on p. 108.



konnen maeken. Ik Sal trachten deselve eenigermaten in ordre te brengen op het Pampier, en d'Eer als dan hebben deselve UEGA te laten toekomen.

Den Posthouder van Maroco ben ik genoodsaekt geweest heel spoedig van het Fort te senden, wijl d'Indiaenen van Powaron aen het Fort quaemen rapporteeren dat eenige Canoes met Spanjaerden in Powaron waeren, en een brief van zijn bijlegger quam meldende dat in d'Itaboes eenige vermoorde Indiaenen gevonden waeren. Ik heb hem belast ten spoedigste te gaan onderzoeken wat van deeze zaake was en indien nodig aenstonds aen de Heer Bakker laete weten welke hem dan adisistentie zoude Senden en mij verslag doen.

Den naer boven gezonde Criool van UEGA om te verspieden is mede afgekomen, die assurante kaerel is tot op de Spaensche missie geweest, onder het pretext van weg lopen hebbende sig daer eenige daegen opgehouden, en nog eenige beelde van Heilige medegebragt, om te toonen dat daer wezentlijk geweest was.

Hij rapporteert dat het op die missie, een uur of vier van Cajoenij aen de Westzijde gelegen grielt van Acuwaijen en dat de Missionarissen doorsaek zijn van den oorlog tusschen de Caribis en die natie wordende door haer opgestookt en van wapenen voorsien.

Hij segt mede dat toestel gemaekt wordt, om een nieuwe Missie aen te leggen tusschen Cajoenij en Masseroenij, dus midden in ons land.

Dit geschiedende sal men genoodsaekt wezen, sig met geweld daer tegen te stellen, wijl de gevolgen daer van niet als noodlottig konnen wezen, en de ruine der Colonie eijndelijk naer sig moeten sleepen. Dit is seker dat zoo lang door het Hof van Spanje, geen voldoening werd gegeven over het geval van de Post in Cajoenij, De Spanjaerde hoe langer hoe stouter sullen worden, en van jaer tot jaer op ons sullen grond winnen.

Ik Sal ondertusschen een wakend cog op al haer verrigtingen houden, en denselfden Criool Soo als het drooge Saisoen begint weder opsenden.

Ik hebbe nog vergeten te melden dat den Criool van UEGA die in Cajoenij is geweest, op de Spaensche missie aldaar heeft gevonden den Criool van UEGA Ariaen genaemt welke bij d'overrompeling van de post door de Spanjaerden nevens den posthouder en bijlegger gevankelijk was weggevoert, denselfde is op de missie jegenswoordig smitsbaes. Is het niet hart Ed. Gr. Achtb. Heeren, dat men sulke roverijen met goede oogen moet aenzien, en dulden.

into some order on paper, and will then have the honour to forward your Lordships the same. A

I was obliged to send the Postholder of Moruka away from here very quickly, because the Indians of Pomeroon came to the fort to report that some canoes filled with Spaniards were in the Pomeroon, and because a letter came from his assistant informing us that some murdered Indians had been found in the Itaboes. I charged him to go and inquire into these matters as speedily as possible, and, if necessary, to immediately send to Mr. Bakker, who would then send him assistance. The creole belonging to your Lordships sent up the river to spy out has also returned. This bold fellow has been as far as the Spanish Mission, pretending to be a runaway. He stayed there for a few days, and brought some pictures of saints back with him in order to prove that he had really been there. B

He reports that there are swarms of Acuways at that Mission, situated about four hours from Cuyuni on the west, and that the missionaries are the cause of the war between the Caribs and that nation, the natives being incited and provided with arms by them. C

He also says that preparations are being made to establish a new Mission between Cuyuni and Massaruni, that is, in the middle of our land.

Should this happen we shall be compelled to oppose them with violence, because the consequences of that could only be harmful, and would finally result in the ruin of the Colony. This is certain, that so long as no satisfaction is given by the Court of Spain concerning the occurrence of the Post in Cuyuni, the Spaniards will gradually become more insolent, and will encroach upon our ground from year to year. D

I shall meanwhile keep a watchful eye upon all their operations, and again send out the same creole as soon as the dry season sets in.

I have also forgotten to mention that your Honours' creole who has been up in Cuyuni at the Spanish Mission found there your Honours' creole, named Ariaen, who was carried off a prisoner along with the Postholder and assistant at the raiding of the Post by the Spaniards. He is at present head smith at the Mission. Is it not hard, Sirs, that one must look on patiently at such piracies and endure them? E

No. 404.

*West India Company to Director-General, Essequibo, September 19, 1765.*

(Extract.)

WE keuren allezints goed de door UEd. gegeven reprimende, aan die lieden, welke eenige Indiaanen met eene blanke de Rivier Cajoenij afvaarende en de Masseroenij opvaarende hadden gezien, zonder die te arresteeren en aan het fort te brengen; zooals mede de door UEd. deswegens gegeve recommandatie en ordres zijnde voorruitjzigt en voorzorge met voorzigtigheid noodzakelijk en nuttig.

WE fully approve the reprimand which you have given to those people who saw some Indians with a white man going in a boat down the River Cuyuni and up the Massaruni, and yet did not arrest them and bring them to the fort; and likewise the recommendation and orders given by you in that connection, for foresight and precaution, as well as prudence, are necessary and useful. F

A Wij zijn volkomen met U. Ed. eens dat de herstelling van de Post in Cajoenij van de hoogste noodzakelijkheid is, en dienvolgens was het ons hoogst aangenaam to verneemen dat men eijndelijk Indiaanen had kunnen bekomen om daar in de behulpzame hand te bieden mits hen verzekering van bescherming teegen de Spanjaarden werd gegeven, t' geen hen ligt te belooven was, &c.

B Wij conformeeren ons ten vollen met de door U. Ed. aan ons gecommuniceerde Idées van den Directeur van der Heyden, nopens de zoo evengem. Post in Cajoenij en zulks zoo wel met relatie tot het aanleggen van een Broodthuijn, als met betrekking tot het plaatsen van eenige der oude slaaven van de respectie Plantagien bij dezelve; en zal het ons derhalven aangenaam zijn dat door U. Ed. op dien voet daar toe de noodige ordres werde gesteld.

C Zooals wij ook wel mogen lijden dat de rest der Macroenen, die tot het uitvoeren van het een en ander nog zouden instaat zijn, met een opziender bij den anderen worden geplaatst tot het bezorgen eener kost- en veeplantagie, te weeten van pluimvee, cabritten, en schaaopen, en kan het zijn ook om koebeesten en paarden aen te fokken; mits daartoe goede gelengendheid voor handen is, en geene onstandigheeden de uijtvoering daarvan beswaarlijk maken, waaromtrent wij ons op UEd. goede directie zullen verlaten.

We are perfectly at one with your Honour that the restoration of the Post in Cuyuni is of the highest necessity, and accordingly it was most acceptable to us to learn finally that Indians had been found to offer a helping hand, provided an assurance of protection against the Spaniards was given them, which it was easy to promise.

We fully concur with the ideas of Director van der Heyden, communicated to us by your Honour, concerning the just-mentioned Post in Cuyuni, both with relation to the opening of a provision garden, and also to the segregation of some of the creole slaves of the respective plantations, and we shall be pleased if the necessary orders be drawn up by your Honour on this basis.

We are likewise not averse to your taking the rest of the broken-down slaves who may still be able to do some sort of work and placing them together under an overseer, to attend to the care of a plantation for the raising of food-crops and stock, such as poultry, goats, sheep, and, if possible, also horned cattle and horses, provided there exist good opportunity for this and there be no circumstances to make its execution difficult, wherein we shall trust to your good management.

No. 405.

*File concerning the removal of Guayana to Angostura.*

General Archives of the Indies, Seville. Audiencia of Caracas, 133, 3, 16.

Expediente relativo á la Traslacion de la Ciudad de Guayana á la Angostura del Orinoco. Nombramiento de Comandante interino de Don Joaquin Moreno de Mendoza y sobre lo que se ha de practicar para el surtiniento de parte espiritual, el no. de que se ha de componer la guarnicion, y modo de fortificarla é incidencias. 4 de Novbe. de 1765.

El Governador de Guayana, Don Joaquin Moreno, avisa el estado en que se halla aquella nueva fundacion.

File relating to the removal of the town of Guayana to Angostura: appointment of Don Joaquim Moreno de Mendoza as Provisional Commandant; measures to be taken for providing spiritual ministry; the number of the garrison, mode of fortification, and other incidents. November 4, 1765.

The Governor of Guayana, Don Joaquin Moreno, gives an account of the state of the new settlement.

E Excelentísimo Señor, Señor,

F HAGO presente á V.E. que en el angustiado tiempo de poco mas de un año favoreciendo Dios mi celo, se ha logrado cerrar y asegurar perfectamente el Orinoco desde esta Angostura con el Castillo San Gabriel cuyos Cuarteles Almagacenes, y demas oficinas se hallan concluidos, y con un Fortin, en la otra orilla, tambien concluido nombrado San Raphel, cuyo plano incluyo á V.E. evitandose con su guardia, el paso hasta la menor Curia, que intente en noche obscura pasar al favor de la corriente omitiendo remos ó canaletes, embaasando assi mismo la desercion, y huida de delinquentes, y asegurandose con dicho Fuerte, la comunicacion con las inmediatas provincias que pudiera privar alguna partida enemiga, los Ganados y hatos, que alli se ban estableciendo para la provision de esta nueva, alegre, y sanissima ciudad de cuyas ventajosas circunstancias como de todo quanto es de mi cargo hé dado cuenta á Don Joseph Solano, por cuya mano dirigo á V. E. esta mi humilde representacion para que informe de el merito de su contenido.

Sir, I WOULD acquaint your Excellency that in little less than a year of anxiety, God favouring my zeal, the Orinoco has been successfully closed and secured from Angostura downwards, by this fort of San Gabriel, which with the quarters, arsenals, and other dependencies are now finished, which, with a small fort on the opposite bank, also finished, called San Raphael (the plan of which is inclosed), with their guards, completely closes the passage of the Orinoco, even to the smallest boat, which might attempt on a dark night to pass, favoured by the current, without using oars or paddles; thus putting a stop to desertion, and the escape of criminals, assuring the communication with the neighbouring provinces, from which the enemy might otherwise carry off the cattle and flocks established there for the subsistence of this new, happy, and most healthy city; of whose advantageous circumstances, as well as of all other things under my charge, I have given an account to Don Joseph Solano, by whose

Las insuperables dificultades y oposiciones que hallé para la fabrica de San Gabriel, y translacion de los vecinos se dejan considerar por las ningunas providencias que encontré, como por sus incitados animos á resistirla y de la facilidad con que podian tratar con los extrangeros de que se hallan privados en este parage de el amor que cada uno tiene á su suelo, y hacienda que debe recuperar despues á fuerza de nuevo trabajo y costo. Todos me fueron enemigos sin encontrar mas viviente favorable que el Contador Don Andres de Oleaga, alli vivian licenciosamente por lo confuso del terreno, y siendo su vida tan penosa como la de una continuada enfermedad, no havia expresiones con que hacerles conocer su mismo bien. Ya lo confiesan generalmente con el gusto de verse establecidos con muy mejores casas en un sitio de la mas perfecta sanidad, pues no se a visto ni se vée enfermo que no se a conducido de el antiguo perjudicial sitio, donde actualmente tengo 28 soldados enfermos con 9 aqui, que se han podido conducir. Nada acredita su sanidad de admirable como que en el primer año de su desmonte, y limpieza no se haya visto un entierro de persona grande, sus campos son fertilisimos segun los muchos inteligentes, que han pasado de los Llanos á reconocerlas que tratan de establecerse aqui, donde no obstante lo trabajoso del paso del Río para el ganado se ha dado principio á tres hatos, con bastante numero de reses haviendo mas de ciento de leche en la ciudad. Los conucos que ha permitido hacer la estreches del tiempo han producido triplicadamente de lo acostumbrado, y se hallan con abundancias las vituallas y miniestras del pais. Se coje con facilidad el pescado, y es un recreo del puerto del Castillo, y toda la orilla del pueblo.

Omitiendo la incesante fatiga que ha podido superar la falta de Caudales utencilios y oficiales militares y mecanicos hago presente á V. E. que todo el costo de este pueblo, y los dos Fuertes dudo haya llegado á 16,000 pesos haviendose recojido de descaminos en la Real Caxa cerca de 20,000 de cuya cierta individualidad no puedo en el dia hacer capaz á V. E. por hallarse en Santa Féé, Don Andres de Oleaga, donde tube por combeniente despacharle de maestre de plaza pero lo executaré á su llegada.

En estas circunstancias vencidas ya todas las dificultades, solo falta para la total defensa de esta provincia, y cumplimiento de los piadosos Rs. motibos de mi comision la fabrica de la fortificacion del padrastró, que en lo principal está á cargo del Ingeniero, quien pasa á Caracas con mis informes á ponerse de acuerdo con Don Joseph Solano, en la que debe construirse y supuesto á que bajarán caudales con las ultimas Reales Ordenes, no dudo que para fines del verano proximo queden á lo menos puestos ya sus fundamentos respecto tambien á que no ceso en lo que puedo de preparar materiales, mediante lo qual, y de que yo me hé inutilizado mas de lo que estaba con la continua fatiga de animo y

hand I send your Excellency this my humble **A** representation, that you may judge of the worth of its contents.

The insuperable difficulties which I had to meet in building the Fort San Gabriel and removing the city may be imagined, from the want of measures taken to assist me, the determination of the inhabitants to resist it, because of the facility they there enjoyed of trading with foreigners, of which they are here deprived, the natural love one has for one's soil and land, which must afterwards be re-established with new labour and cost. Every one was against me, and not one in my favour, **B** except the Auditor, Don Andres de Oleaga. There they lived in licentiousness, owing to the irregularity of the site, leading lives of ill-health, like one continued illness, yet no words sufficed to make them understand what was for their own advantage. All confess it, now that they find themselves established in much better houses, in a perfectly healthy place; for no one has been nor is now to be found in ill-health who was not brought here from the old unhealthy spot, where I have at present **C** twenty-eight soldiers on the sick-list, and nine here whom they were able to bring. Nothing speaks so well for the healthiness of the place as the fact that, during the whole of the first year of its clearance and settlement, there was not a single burial of an adult. The fields are most fertile, according to the report of the experienced persons who came to explore them from the Llanos, and are endeavouring to establish themselves here. In spite of the labour of getting the cattle across the river, three cattle farms have been commenced, with a sufficient number of cattle, there being more than 100 milch cows in the town. **D** The farms which the short space of time has allowed the establishment of have yielded three-fold the usual crops; all the provisions and vegetables of the country are abundant. Fish is easily caught, and affords pastime in the port of the fortress, and all along the bank occupied by the town.

Passing over the incessant exertions which overcame the want of funds, tools, military officers, and mechanics, I will acquaint your Excellency that I doubt whether the cost of the settlement and of the two forts aforesaid **E** has amounted to 16,000 pesos, there being now collected in the Royal Treasury nearly 20,000 pesos from the seizure of goods for unpaid duty, the details of which I cannot give your Excellency to-day, Don Andres de Oleaga being at present in Santa Féé, where I had occasion to send him as "Maestro de Plaza," but I will do so on his return.

Under these circumstances, all difficulties being overcome, it only remains for the complete defence of the province, and accomplishment of His Majesty's pious intentions, and my commission to fortify the Padrastró which is principally intrusted to the engineer, who is **F** at Carácas, to carry my reports and agree thereon, with Don Joseph Solano, as to the method of its construction, and supposing funds to have been sent with the last Royal Orders, there is no doubt that by the end of next summer the foundations, at least, will be laid, as I have not ceased to collect and prepare materials, as far as was in my power, which has incapacitated me still more by the

A cuerpo, y que del todo estoy inhavil para el frecuente viajar como es preciso de aqui á las fortificaciones de abajo, hallandome enfermo y de edad abanzada no puedo menos Excmo. Señor que hacer de nuevo presente á V. E. la imposibilidad en que me veo de cumplir bien la precisa fatiga de mi cargo suplicando mui humildemente á V. E. lo ponga en noticia de S. M. para ser relebado; y que se digne su Real clemencia conferirme el Gobierno de Puerto Rico con el grado de Brigadier si mis servicios de 35 años con el que acabo de hacer me proporcionan á merecerlo con la Real oferta que en Cedula que inclui á V. E. en Agosto del año pasado hizo S. M. del de Mariscal de Campo á el Coronel Don Carlos de Sucre, por la construccion de un fuerte en este parage.

Con dicho grado (cuya concecion será estímulo para los oficiales de honor, y el que me relebe) podre servir en Caracas, puesto á la orden de su Gobernador con el sueldo que corresponde á el grado que oy tengo, y este destino será á mi celo mas apreciable que ninguno porque aseguro el desempeño de mi proceder estando mandado y no mandando, en cuya virtud quedo esperando de la justificada piedad de V. E. que hará presente á S. M. quanto llevo expuesto para que se digne emplearme en lo que sea mas de su Real agrado y servicio.

Dios guarde la muy importante vida de V. E. muchos años.

Excelentísimo Señor, Señor, besa la mano de V. E. su mas rendido servidor,

JOACHIN MORENO DE MENDOZA.  
(Con su rubrica.)

D Nueva Ciudad de Guayana, Angostura de Orinoco, 4 de Noviembre de 1765.

Excelentísimo Señor B. F. Don Julian de Arriaga.

constant fatigue of mind and body, all of which renders me unable to undertake the frequent and necessary journeys to the fortifications further down, and my ill-health and advanced age oblige me once more to represent to your Excellency the impossibility in which I find myself of fulfilling the obligations of my office, humbly beseeching your Excellency to lay the same before His Majesty that I may be relieved therefrom, and that his Royal clemency may deign to confer upon me the Government of Puerto Rico, and the grade of Brigadier, if my thirty-five years of service, with this last rendered, may be sufficient to merit it, with the Royal offer made in the "Cedula" I inclosed to your Excellency, which His Majesty made to Colonel Don Carlos de Sucre, of the grade of Major-General, for the construction of a fort at this place.

With this grade (the concession of which will be a great inducement to all officers of honour, and the person by whom I am relieved here) I could serve at Carácas, under the orders of the Governor, with pay corresponding to my present grade, and such a post would be more appreciated by me than any other, as obeying rather than obeyed, I should be freed from responsibility, to which end I trust in the well-known goodness of your Excellency to lay before His Majesty what I have here expressed, that he may deign to employ me in whatever is most fitting to His Royal pleasure and service.

God keep your Excellency's valuable life for many years.

I kiss your Excellency's hands.

Your most humble servant,

JOACHIM MORENO DEMENDOZA  
(with his Rubric).

New City of Guayana at Angostura, November 4, 1765.

His Excellency Don Julian de Arriaga,  
Knight of Malta.

No. 406.

Memorial of the Shareholders of the Zeeland Chamber of the West India Company to the States-General, November 26, 1765.

E

(Extract.)

MEN voor eerst uit de natuur, constitutie, regeering, directie en administratie der Rivier Demerarij ten volle sal doen blijken, dat deselve is annex en onderhoorig aan de voorsz. Colonie van Essequibo.

THEY will, first of all, make it absolutely clear that from its nature, constitution, government, management, and administration, the River Demerara is adjoined to and pertains to the aforesaid Colony of Essequibo.

F Belangende het eerste Point, soo staat omtrent de natuur deeser rivier te noteeren, dat deselve insgelijks, soo wel als Essequibo, waarvan de distantie tusschen beide op omtrent maar ses à seeven Hollandsche mijlen word gerekent, behoort tot de soogenaamde Wilde Kust, gelegen aan de vaste wal van America, waarvan bij het hiervooren aangehaalde Berigt, aangaande de Colonie van Essequibo en onderhoorige Rivieren, mitsgaders bij het Betoog van Bewindhebberen ter Kamer Zeeland, meede hiervooren vermeldt, in het breede is gesproken; en dat derhalven ten deesen al meede van niet minder applicatie is, hetgeen daarbij werd gesegt van de particuliere

As to the first point, with respect to the nature of this river, it is to be observed that this river, just like Essequibo, the distance intervening between which two is reckoned at no more than about 6 or 7 Dutch miles, belongs to the so-called Wild Coast, which is situate on the continent of America, and has been treated of at length in the Report, cited above, upon the Colony of Essequibo and rivers thereto pertaining, and, moreover, in the manifesto, also mentioned above, of the Directors of the Zeeland Chamber, and that, therefore, to our present point applies just as well what was therein said, and to which, for brevity's sake, we refer, citing also in further corroboration the

betrekking der Zeeuwsche ingezeetenen, op de voorsz. Wilde Kust in het generaal, seedert desselfs eerste ontdekking, soo met relatie tot het bevaaren van deselve, als het aanleggen en stigten van colonien en volkplantingen aan de voorsz. Kust, waartoe kortsheidshalven werd gerefereert; zijnde ook nader gestaafd met Resolutien, soo van de Vergadering van Neegentien als Tien respectivelijk, sullende ten deesen in opstgt van Demerarij in het particulier nog bovendien aanmerken, dat deselve geleegeen is tusschen beide de twee verste uitgestrekste Handelsplaatsen of Posten op Essequibo, teeweeten, *de eene* Noordwaarts aan die Rivier *Marocco*, en *de andere* aan die van *Maykounij* Zuidwaarts, beide meede, soowel als de andere tusschen geleegeene rivieren, aan die Colonie onderhoorig; hetgeen immers ontegensprekelijk aantoon, dat Demerarij een en deselve Colonie met Essequibo is.

Resolutions of the Assembly of Nineteen and the Assembly of Ten, about the particular interest of the inhabitants of Zeeland in the aforesaid Wild Coast in general, ever since its first discovery, both in relation to navigation upon that coast and with regard to establishing and founding colonies and settlements thereon. In addition to what was there set forth, we shall in this connection remark about Demerara in particular, that it is situated between the two most extreme trading-places or posts in Essequibo—namely, the one, to the north, on the River Moruka, and the other, to the south, on the River Mahaicony, both of which rivers, as well as the others situate between, pertain to that Colony—which, of course, shows undeniably that Demerara is one and the same Colony with Essequibo.

No. 407.

*West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo, December 2, 1765.*

(Extract.)

AANSTONDS dan ter zaake overgaande, zoo keuren wij bij deesen ten vollen goed de ordres, door UEd. schriftelijk aan den Commandant Bakker, geduurende UEd. noodwendige en te meermalen door voorvallende zaaken uitgestelde reisje naar Demerarij gegeven, omme namentlijk van alle zaaken van aangelegendheid ilico aan UEd. het noodige rapport te doen toekomen en in allen gevalle zorge te dragen dat niet, dan Defenciv, door de Dethacementen [*sic*], welke hij mogt noodig oordeelen te doen, zoude worden ge-ageerd teneinde zoowel door de militaire, als planters, aan welke UEd. ten dien opzichte ook de vereijchte recommandatien had gedaan in den oorlog tusschen de Caribische en Acuwayische natien ontstaan, een stipte neutraliteit welke wij met UEd. hoog noodig oordeelen mogte worden ge-observeert.

Uit diezelvde beweegreden laaten wij ons ook welgevallen het dilajjeeren van de verplaatsing der Post Arinda, en, naardien de daartoe bevoorens verkoore plaats aan den hoek van Ripenuwini, als bij den regentijd vier voeten onder water staande, daartoe bij nadere examinatie onbequaam word bevonden, mogen wij wel lijden, dat dezelve een halv uur hooger op, op een bequaem terrain worde overgebracht en verplaatst.

Hoe volleedig en naukeurig de teekening der bij UEd. genoemde berugte pijramide sub L<sup>e</sup> F bij UEd. voorsz. missive, gevoegd geweest, ook zijn mag, kunnen wij ons egter van de natuur, situatie, eigenschap en nuttigheid, &c., van diezelvde pijramide geen regte denkeelden vormen, en zal het ons deshalven aangenaam zijn, daaromtrent en waarin eigentlijk de beruchtheid derzelve bestaat bij gelegenheid een nader en naukeurig te worden ge-informeerd.

Het was ons aangenaam te zien schoon wij aan UEd. gewoone prudentie en vooruitzigt niet anders waren verwagende, dat UEd. met alle behoorlijke voorzigtigheid en attentie op de beweegingen der Spanjaarden een wakend oog zoude houden, en gepaste mesures in cas van onverhoopte noodzaakelijkheid teegens dezelve te neemen; intusschen verbeelden wij ons dat de vrindschap en hulpe der Carabische natie in zoodanige om-

COMING to the point, then, we hereby fully approve of the written orders which, during your necessary voyage to Demerara, which had more than once been postponed on account of matters that came up, you gave to Commandant Bakker, namely, that of all affairs of moment he should at once inform you—that he should in every case take care that the detachments which he might deem it necessary to make should act only on the defensive, so that both the soldiery and the planters, to whom you had also given the necessary recommendation in this regard, might, in the war between the Carib and Acuway nations, observe a strict neutrality, which we agree with you in thinking extremely important.

For the same reason we also approve of the delay in transferring the Post Arinda, and whereas the place heretofore selected for it at the junction of the Rupununi is upon nearer examination found unfit, as being in the rainy season under 4 feet of water, we are not averse to its being transferred and removed half-an-hour higher up, to a suitable location.

However complete and accurate may be the drawing of what you call the famous pyramid, sent as Inclosure F in your aforesaid letter, we, nevertheless, can form no right idea of the nature, situation, quality, and purpose, &c., of that pyramid; and it would therefore give us pleasure to be more fully and accurately informed, when occasion offers, as to those points, and as to wherein consists its fame.

We were glad to see, though we expected nothing else from your customary prudence and foresight, that you intended with all proper circumspection and attention to keep a watchful eye upon the movements of the Spaniards, and to take proper measures against them, in case this should unhappily become necessary. Still, we are of opinion that the friendship and help of the Carib nation would under such circumstances be

**A** standigheeden ons van eene ongemeene nuttigheid zoude zijn en zelv tot voordeel zoude kunnen strekken, waaromme wij dan ook het cultiveeren van dezelve, zooveel doenlijk aan UEd. attentie en zorge zijn aanbeveelende.

to us of uncommon utility, and might even bring us profit; for which reason we strongly recommend that you cultivate it as much as possible.

No. 408.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, December 13, 1765.*

**B**

(Extract.)

VAN de Post Arinda hebbe rapport ontvangen dat alles nog wel was daer omtrent, Sullende den Posthouder tegens Nieuwjaer selver afkomen.

I HAVE received a report from Post Arinda that all was still well in those parts, and that the Postholder will come down himself about New Year.

**C** De reden waerom de Posthouder van Maroco zoo schielijk van hier moest vertrekken zooals ik d'eer hebbe gehad in eene mijner vorige te melden, is geweest door het rumoer dat een moord onder d'Indianen heeft veroorzaekt, denkende de bijlegger dat eenige Spanjaerden daer de hand in hadden gehad, hetwelk anders bevonden is sijnde sulx door Indiaenen selver geschied eene der moordenaeren hier in den tronk gebragt, heeft zigselve vermoord voor sijne teregtstelling waerin apparent vrijgesproken zoude zijn geworden, en is zijn lichaam aen de galge gehange ter voldoening van des overledens vrienden. Den voornaemste ist niet geapprehendeert en ik hebbe de klaegers gesegt zij hem selver moesten apprehendeeren en hier brengen wanneer zijne welverdiende straffe ontvangen.

The reason why the Postholder of Moruka had to depart from here so suddenly, as I had the honour to inform you in one of my former letters, was a rumour that he had caused a murder among the Indians, the assistant thinking that certain Spaniards had had a hand therein. This was found to be otherwise, the act having been committed by Indians themselves. One of the murderers, brought here and imprisoned, has killed himself before being brought to trial, wherein he would probably have been acquitted, and his corpse has been hung on the gallows for the satisfaction of the deceased's friends. The principal one has not been apprehended, and I have told the complainants that they must themselves apprehend him and bring him here, in which case he should receive his well-deserved punishment.

**D** Den Posthouder F. Dost zijn ontslag versogt hebbende heb ik den bijlegger Charles Maini op ontboden, om in deselfs plaets tot Posthouder aengesteld te worden.

F. Dorst, the Postholder, having sent in his resignation, I have sent for the assistant, Charles Maini, whom I shall appoint Postholder in his place. I have also discharged the Postholder of Maykouny because he did nothing at all, and I have appointed Constable Jan van Wyngaerden in his place.

Gelijk ook die van Maijkounij gedimiteert hebbe wijl in het geheel niets uijtvoerde en den Constapel Jan Van Wijngaerden in de plaets aengesteld.

**E** Vreeze Seer ik noijt het genoegen Sal hebben regt bequaeme Posthouders te krijgen zijnde zedert de veranderingen aengaende de Posten gemaakt nog geen eene geweest haer eijge negotie nu drijvende en niet voor de Compagnie, worden zij door dingesetenen geheel bedurven, negotieren voor deselve en blijven Selver arme Jakhalsen, altoos overlaeden met Schulden en dit maekt moedelooze en onagtsaeme bediendens die Seer weijnig om geven hoe het gaet.

I very much fear that I shall never have the pleasure of getting really competent Postholders, there not having been a single one since the alterations concerning the Posts were made. As they now do business for themselves and not for the Company, they are entirely spoilt by the settlers, doing business for the latter, and remaining themselves poor devils, always over-burdened with debts. This discourages them, and makes them inattentive servants, who care but little how matters go.

De Ringkraegen voar d'Indiaensche hoofden, hebbe wel ontvangen, deselve zijn seer fraij maer al te fraij en en Swaer voor Indiaenen, die zij gebruiken zijn doorgaens omtrent ter dikte van een Schelling, en een plankje ingelaeten voor de Stevigheijt.

I have received the ring-collars for the Indian Chiefs; they are very pretty—too pretty, in fact, and too heavy for Indians. Those which they use are on an average about as thick as a shilling, and set in a piece of wood to make them stronger.

**F** Mij is bericht de twee Uijlen, van Essequibo en Masseroenij overleden zijn of waer is weet ik niet dog hebbe deselve in geene Ses maende gezien, Die van Barima heb ik laeten gelasten om op te komen wanneer hem eene der Ringkragen geven zal.

I have been informed that the two Owls (or Chiefs) of Essequibo and Massaruni are dead. Whether this is true I do not know, but I have not seen them for six months.

I have sent word to him of Barima to come here, when I will give him one of the ring-collars.

Den ongelukkige schipper Jan Dekkers met het schip den Jongen Jan en Daniel van St. Eustatius naer hier komende, is benede de rivier ver-

The unfortunate skipper, Jan Dekkers, coming here from St. Eustatius with the ship "Den Jongen Jan en Daniel," fell below the river, and being



vallen, en voor de Rivier Weijne zijnde heeft zijn opperstuurman met twee matroozen in de boot gesonden om te recognosceeren waer of hij was. Deeze in Weijne geweest zijnde en die riviere erkend hebbende, quaemen weder naer buijten denkende het schip nog ten anker te sullen vinden, maer tot haer groote verwondering zaege zij het-selve niet, zijn nog diep in zee gestoken en acht daege gesworven zonder het te zien, en zijn bijnae van honger vergaen. Hetwelk apparent haer lot geweest zoude zij hadden zij eijndelijk den ingesetene Diederik Neelis van Barima komende niet ontmoet die haer nog met eenige spijs voorzien heeft, waernaer zij hier aen het Fort zijn aengelant.

off the River Waini, sent his first mate with two sailors in a boat to find out where he was. These, having been in the Waini and having recognized that river, came out again, thinking that they would find the ship yet at anchor; but, to their great wonderment, they did not see it. They pushed on far out to see and wandered for eight days without seeing it, and nearly perished of hunger. This would probably have been their fate, had they not finally met the colonist Diederik Neelis coming from Barima, who provided them with some food, after which they came and landed here at the fort.

Inclosure in No. 408.

*Report of the Postholder at Maroco to the Director-General, October 3, 1765.*

Sijn Exelentie,

DAATO Deesser 3 Octob. des morgens door de neeger Sijn Hoog Edele Brief ontfangen terstond gezonden nae Indiaenen Soo veel als te bekomen waeren hebbe Scharlemijn, met Bel Roose, aenstonds weg gezonden nae Weijne & Barima tot in de mont van Orinoque op See per ongeluk in der twee Rivieren Een in liep; de weijl ik geen bescheijdt weeten welk Orinoque is, het dikwijls gebeurt is. Als dan Welligt Cans Soude Sijn haer vaertuijg te beschaeren En anstons mijn te laten Waerschouwen.

Ik legge in tusschen de mont van Moroco en Boueron Soo ik alles Sien kan wat de Seekant passeert had ik duijtsche bijlegger gehad ik was Selfs gegaen hebbe hebbe P. V. meere soo lang op de Post met een Cleijne Jongen gelaeten. Dit is alles wat sijn Exelentie nog berigten kan, Soo haest ik teijding Sal hebben Sijn Exellentie ten eersten berigten nae alle gedagten benne Maroco al verbeij.

Your Excellency,

HAVING this morning received your Excellency's letter by the negro, I immediately sent out for as many Indians as were to be got. I have just sent Scharlemijn with Bel Roose to Waini and Barima, as far as the mouth of the Orinoco. [If] at sea they should accidentally run into one of the two rivers, as has frequently occurred, because there is nothing to show which Orinoco is, they may probably have some chance of concealing their boat, and immediately have me warned.

I am lying between the mouth of Moruka and Boueron (Pomeroon), so that I can see everything that passes the sea-coast. If I had had a Dutch assistant I would have gone myself, and would have left P. V. Meere at the Post with a little boy. This is all that I can tell your Excellency; as soon as I have tidings I will let your Excellency know at once; in all probability they have already passed Moruka.

Your Excellency's humble Servant,  
(Signed) J. F. DORST.

No. 409.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, December, 27, 1765.*

(Extract.)

MIJNE missive aen U.E.G.A. per deezen bodem, even geeijndigt zijnde, ontfang ik per een tweede expresse van boven deeze rivier tijding, dat verscheijde Indiaenen van de Spansche Missien, welke boven Cajoenij zijn, die rivier afgevaeren, en Masseroenij opgevaeren waeren, geleijd wordende door een Indiaens officier. Waer door de menschen boven woonende in de grootste ongerustheijt gebracht wierden, en seker niet sonder reden.

Waer op aenstonds een ordre afgevaerdigt hebbe, aen H. Lussis Directeur op Oud Duijnenburg, om d'Ed. Compagnie Criool Tampoko welk sig boven bevind bij sig tontbieden, en hem te gelasten, eenige Caraibanen bij hem te nemen. Masseroenij op te vaeren, dien Spaenschen officier t'apprehenderen, en hier bij mij te brengen.

T'effens nauwkeurig t'onderzoeken, of ook een begin word gemaakt met de geprojecteerde Missie, tusschen Cajoenij, en Masseroenij, waer van d'Eer hebbe gehad U.E.G.A. per t' schip de Spoor tonderhouden,

HAVING just concluded my despatch to your Lordships to be sent by this vessel, I received tidings by a second express from the upper part of this river that several Indians of the Spanish Missions which are above Cuyuni had sailed down that river, and had proceeded up the Massaruni under the leadership of an Indian [sic] officer, whereby the people living up there have been in a state of great uneasiness, and not without reason.

Thereupon I immediately sent off an order to H. Lussis, Director at Old Duijnenburg, to summon the Honourable Company's creole, Tampoko, who is up there, and to charge him to get a few Caribs to go up the Massaruni with him to apprehend that Spanish officer, and to bring him to me.

Also to inquire most carefully whether a commencement had been made with the projected Mission between Cuyuni and Massaruni, of which I had the honour to write to your Lordships by the vessel "De Spoor;" this being the

A Zijnde dit dien selfde Criool waer van in mijn missive per de Spoor, omstandig hebbe gemelt een stout onvertzaegt kaerel, daer gelove op vertrouwt kan worden ;

En hebbe den Commandant Bakker gelast, sig vaerdig te houden om op eerste bevel, met een detachement naer boven te gaen indien nodig bevonden mogt worden.

Hebben den Directeur Van der Heijde gecommuniceert U.E.G.A. bevelen, wegens de hoe langer hoe noodsaekelijker wordende Post in Cajoenij, en Sal als de Heer behaegt, even naer Nieuwjaar een aenvang daer mede gemaekt worden.

B

Verscheijde gissingen worden gemaekt, over dit geduurig op en af vaeren der Spaensche Indiaenen, alle even onseker en sommige belacchelijk, die welke mij het waerschijnlijkste voorkomt, is dat het geschiet, om d'Indiaenen van Masseroenij te winnen, om door haer niet verhindert te worden, in het aenleggen van haer geprojecteerde zending.

\* \* \* \*

C

Wie heeft die menschen dog wijsgemaekt, dat een Cartel in weezen was met den Gouverneur van Guajana en ons ? Ik heb het noijt geslooten, wijl sulx in mijn magt niet stond, als provisioneel, tot approbatie van de Souverain bekomen was, en dan had ik het aen UEGA moeten zenden, om hetselve t'erlangen. Ten tyde Don Diego Tabarez, Gouverneur van Guajana was, welke een man van geboorte, en extra beleeft was, heeft denselve mij geschreven, op de reclame welke van eenige slaven hadde gedaen, dat de bevelen van Sijn Catholique Majesteijt waeren, de weggelopene swarte slaeven te verkopen, en de penningen naer aftrek der onkosten aen d'eijgenaers terhand gestelt zoude worden, en ingevolgen dit schrijven, is inderdaet het montant aen d'afgesondene van hier voor eenige slaven terhand gestelt.

D

Maer naer dien Heer zijn vertrek, noijt meer. Een negerin van Struijs, met een timmerman in dienst van d'Ed. Comp. weggelopen, teneerste gereclameert, is door d'afgezondene gezien, en gesproken, in het huijs van den Commandant Don Juan Valdez, maer niets konnen obtineeren. Zooals vervolgens altoos gegaen, en naer d'overrompeling van de post in Cajoenij, heb ik noijt een letter antwoord, op alle mijne brieven ontvangen ; selver zijn eenige ongeopend teruggesonden.

E

D'Hrn van der Heijde en Bakker zijn den veertiende naer boven de rivier gevaeren niet alleen om het vooren verhaelde t'onderzoeken, maer ook dewijl een heijmelijk bericht bekomen hebbe dat alle d'Ed. Comp. halfvrije criolen en criolinnen voornemens zoude wezen naer de Spaensche missien boven in Cajoenij te deserteeren om heel vrij te wezen.

same creole of whom I had spoken in my despatch by "De Spoor" as being a bold and fearless fellow, in whom I think I can trust.

And I have ordered Commandant Bakker to hold himself in readiness to start up the river with a detachment at a moment's notice in case that it should be found necessary.

I have communicated to Director van der Heyde your Lordship's orders concerning the Post in Cuyuni, which is getting more necessary every day, and a beginning will, God willing, be made in the matter immediately after the New Year.

Many conjectures, some ridiculous and all equally vain, are being made concerning the continual journeys to and fro of the Spanish Indians. The idea that seems to me most feasible is that they are doing this to win over the Indians of Massaruni, in order that they may not be disturbed by them in the establishment of their projected Mission.

\* \* \* \*

Who in the world has made those people believe that a Cartel existed between the Governor of Guayana and us ? I have never concluded one, because this was not within my power, except provisionally, until approbation of the Sovereign has been obtained, and in that case I should have sent it to your Honours, in order to obtain yours. At the time when Don Diego Tabarez was Governor of Guayana, a gentleman by birth and exceedingly polite, he wrote to me, upon the reclamation which I had made of some slaves, that the orders of His Catholic Majesty were to sell the black runaway slaves, and that the proceeds after subtracting the expenses should be handed to the owners, and in pursuance of that letter the amount for some slaves was actually handed to the envoys sent from here.

But, after that gentleman's departure, never again. A negress of Struijs who, had run away with a carpenter in the service of the Company, and was at once demanded back, was seen and spoken to by the envoy in the house of the Commandant, Don Juan Valdez, but he could obtain nothing. Thereafter it has always gone thus, and since the raid upon the Post in Cuyuni I have never received one word of answer to all my letters ; some have been even sent back unoccupied.

\* \* \* \*

Messrs. van de Heyde and Bakker went up the river on the 14th, not only to investigate what was reported before, but also because I have received a secret report that all the Company's half-free creole men and women intend to desert to the Spanish Missions up in Cuyuni, so as to be entirely free.

F

No. 410.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, January 18, 1766.*

(Extract.)

DE blanke welke de Rivier Cajoenij af en Masseroenij op gevaere was zoo als in mijne voorige gemelt hadde, is ontsnapt, en niet meer verscheenen, maer de tijding van de komst der Spaensche Indiaenen met haer Capiteijn zoo als

THE white man who had come down the River Cuyuni and sailed up the River Massaruni as I reported in my last despatch, has got away and has not been seen since, but having received news in time of the coming of

zij hem noemen (wij zeggen een Uijl) in tijds be-  
komen hebbende, Heeft U.E.G.A. Criool Tampoko,  
mijne beveelen zeer wel geobserveert, met een  
partij Indiaenen, hem illicio naer geset, achter-  
haelt, en met Sijn volk hier bij mij gebragt, en  
aenstonds weder opgesonden, om eene van haer,  
welke mij bericht was over land naer Powaron  
was, om vaertuijgen te koopen, en seer verdragt  
was, mede op te zoeken, Seer Spoedig met hem  
mede bij mij geweest.

Deselve nauwkeurig ondervraegt zijnde is be-  
vonden zij gekomen waeren op het versoek van  
een Caribischen uijl van Massaroenij welke een  
oude wrok op d'Acuwaijsche natie hebbende, en  
dandere van zijn natie onder deeze Jurisdictie  
woonende seer aangeweest zijnde om hem te  
helpen d'Acuwaijen te beoorlogen, en door haer  
afgewezen met hem mijn gereitereerd verbod voor  
te houden, deeze Spaensche Bokken tot zijn adsis-  
tentie geroepen hadde, dog d'Acuwaijen, door  
d'andere Caribische gewaerschuwt waeren op haer  
hoede en gereed om hem wel t'ontfangen.

Ik hebbe de Spaensche bokken gelast aenstonds  
weder naer haer wooningen te vertrekken, en niet  
meer naer hier te komen, of dat anders haer op  
een onaengenaeme wijze zoude laeten ontfangen,  
waer op ook seer bevreesd zijnde met d'uijterste  
verhaesting vertrokken zijn.

Den uijl van Massaroeny hebbe laeten aenzeg-  
gen dat indien wederom sulke saeke aenrigtede ik  
hem met een Engelsche Barq naer Noord America  
zoude zenden, hij heeft mij beloofd dit bevel te  
sullen naerkomen hebbe hem veel vriendelijker  
behandelt, als wel andersints gedaen soude hebben,  
wijl hij eene der geene is welke sig zoo wel hebben  
gedraegen, in der tijd der troubelen in Berbices.

By dondervraeging der Spaensche Indiaenen is  
bevonden de Geweeren, kruid en Hagel welke  
de Heeren van der Heyden en Bakker boven in  
de rivier in haer vaertuijgen gevonden hebben,  
haer door den ingesete Bastiaen Christiaense  
waeren verkogt, voor Hangmatten en Jacht  
bonden, sij seijde hij haer wel niet aengeset hadde  
om d'Acuwayen te vermoorden, maer dat doen  
konden wat zij wilden wyl het een wilde natie  
was daer ons niet aengelegen lag. Een slegt  
gedrag Edele Groot Achbaere Heeren, daer het nog  
in varsch geheugen is wat gevaer de Colonie  
gelopen heeft en wat moeyte ik hebbe gehadt om  
een goed vrede met die natie, te bewerken, dog  
die man ben ik versekert dat alles stout en styf  
sal hieten liegen, wanneer hem daer over Spreeke,  
het welk echter eerstdaegs voornemens ben te  
doen.

Dus is het niet gelegen geweest met den an-  
deren Indiaenen door Tampoko afgehaelt, deselve  
is bevonden een Spion van de Spaensche missien  
te wezen geduurig heen en weder gaende om alles  
over te brengen. Hebbe hem in bewaring van  
Tampoko gestelt en gelast Stipt bij hem te blijve  
woonen zonder van hem af te gaen en domleggende  
Indiaenen hebben hem beloofd als hem alleen  
vinde de kop in te sullen slaen.

Volgens het verslag mede der Spaensche In-  
diaenen is het maer al te waer dat men Nieuwe  
Missien in Cajoeny en over Cajoeny wil aenleggen,  
maer nu met den Eerste aen het oprechten van  
de Post gegaen sullende worden, sal hoop ik een  
eijnde aen alle deze inkruipingen gemaekt worden.  
Ik heb reeds een Posthouder aengenomen welke  
d'Indiaensche taelen volkome magtig is en sal  
hem zoo drae eenige Huyzingen klaer zijn een  
Commando van een onder officier en ses man  
geven voor het eerst tot dat wel gevestigd is, maer

[696—3]

the Spanish Indians and their Captain, as they A  
call him (we say an Owl), your Lordship's  
creole Tampoko, having very carefully observed  
my orders, went after them immediately with a  
party of Indians, overtook and brought them  
here to me, and being again immediately sent  
out to go and find one of them, a very sus-  
picious character, who, I had been informed,  
had gone overland to Pomeroon to buy boats,  
he came back to me very quickly with him.

Having closely interrogated the former, I  
found that they had come at the request of a  
Carib Owl of Massaruni, who, having an B  
old grudge against the Acuwai nation, had  
urged the others of his nation living under this  
jurisdiction to help him to fight the Acuwaijs,  
which they had, however, refused to do, remind-  
ing him of my oft-repeated commands. He had  
then called these Spanish Indians to his assis-  
tance, but the Acuwaijs, warned by the other  
Caribs, were on their guard, and ready to  
receive them well.

I ordered the Spanish Indians to return to their  
homes immediately, and not to come here again,  
otherwise I would have them received in a  
disagreeable manner, whereupon, being greatly C  
terrified, they departed with the utmost haste.

I have sent word to the Owl of Massaruni  
that in case he did such a thing again I would  
send him to North America in an English ship.  
He has promised me to obey this order. I have  
treated him in a much more lenient manner  
than I should otherwise have done, because he  
is one of those who behaved so well at the time  
of the troubles in Berbices.

During the examination of the Spanish  
Indians, I found that the guns, powder, and  
shot which Messrs. van der Heyden and Bakker D  
had found in their boats up the river had been  
sold to them by the colonist, Bastiaen Chris-  
tiaense, for hammocks and greyhounds.

They said that he had not actually incited  
them to murder the Acuwaijs, but that they  
could do what they pleased, because it was a  
savage nation for whom we did not care.  
This is bad behaviour, my Lords, for it is still  
fresh in our memories what danger the Colony  
was in, and what trouble I had to keep on terms  
of peace with that nation; but I am convinced  
that this man will declare it all to be a pack  
of lies when I speak to him about it, which I E  
intend to do at an early opportunity.

This was not the case with the other Indian  
brought down by Tampoko; this man was found  
to be a spy from the Spanish Missions, going  
continually to and fro to report what he saw.  
I have placed him in Tampoko's keeping, and  
ordered him not to move out of sight of the  
latter, and the Indians round about us have  
promised to crack his skull if they find him  
alone.

According to the reports of the Spanish  
Indians, it is only too true that there is a desire F  
to establish new Missions in Cuyuni and above  
Cuyuni, but now that a beginning was to be  
made on the 1st with re-establishing the Post, I  
hope that an end will be put to all these en-  
croachments. I have already engaged a Post-  
holder who is well acquainted with Indian  
languages, and as soon as some of the buildings  
are ready I will give him a commando of one  
under-officer and six men to begin with until it

2 L

A sal werk hebbe ses protestantsche soldaeten te vinden, en diende geen Roomschegezinde en voor al geen Fransche daer te wezen wyl deselve gansch niet te vertrouwen is, en meer als de helft van het Guarnisoen bestaet nog in Fransche.

is well established; but I have some trouble in finding six Protestant soldiers, it being of importance that no Roman Catholic, and especially no French, be sent there, because they are not to be trusted at all, and more than half of the garrison consists of Frenchmen.

Ik bidde U. E. G. A. dog het oog gelieven te laeten gaen over de soldaeten die in het toekomende gesonden worden laet ons dog geen Fransche meer krijgen, en zoo weijnig Roomsgezinde als doenlijk den Commandant kan geen ses Protestante vinde voor de Post in Cajoeny, en Roomsche mogen wij daer volstrekt niet vertrouwen. Wat nu gedaen?

I beg your Lordships to be good enough to carefully examine the soldiers that are sent us in future. Pray do not let us have any more French, and as few Roman Catholics as possible. The Commandant cannot find six Protestants for the Posts in Cuyuni, and we dare not trust Catholics to go there. What is to be done?

#### No. 411.

*Director-General, Essequibo (in Demerary), to West India Company, April 6, 1766.*

(Extract.)

C WAT de piramide aenbelangt, sal ik d'eer hebben UEGA te melden dat reeds in d'eerste jaeren van mijn inwoning in deeze landen veel hoorde vertellen door oude inwoonders dat sig boven in Ripenuwini een seer hooge piramide van steen gebouwd bevond, daer selver in de nabuurige gewesten van gesproken wierd; hebbende ik verscheijde brieven daerover ontfangen om informatie daerover t'erlangen sonder dat ik instaat ben geweest, soo als nog niet ben om daer voldoende antwoord op te geven, niettegenstaende alle aengewende devoiren en belofte niemand hebbende konnen bekomen die deselve wilden gaen besigtigen, om het ingewortelde bijgeloof d'Indiaenen alle eenparig van geloof zijnde het de woonplaats is van den Jawaho dus noemen zij den duivel. In den jaere 1740 ondernam een mulat Pieter Tollenaar (denselfde welke de criolen van UEGA om de mishandelingen van den bergmeester Hildebrand weggelopen terug heeft gebragt) op mijn versoek een reijs daer naertoe te doen verselt met twee van die criolen, en bij de terugkomst wierd ik van de wezendlijkheid van die saek versekert, brengende hij een ruwe tekening daarvan mede, gelijk ook van verscheijde beeltenisse welke daerbij in de steen uijtgehouden had gesien.

E Deze mulat kort naer zijn terugkomst overlede, gaf meerder voedsel aen het bijgeloof, en wat devoiren aengewend hebbe, naer die tijd geen bericht daarvan konnen bekomen als alleen den onlangs overlede Raed E. Pijpersberg zijn bericht dat de Rivier Masseroenij aivaerende waer hij achter zijn weggelope slaeven zoo verre was opgevaeren dat bij natien was gekomen welke noijt blanke gesien hadde, mede aen zijn regterhand omtrend dezelfde strekkinge nog eene piramide seer hoog duidlijk had gesien welke hij seer nieuwsgierig was geweest van nabij te besigtigen, maer niet als Indiaenen bij sig hebbende nevens sijne weggelopenen en agterhaelde slaeven, niet uijt zijn vaertuijg had durve treden.

F Nu eijndelijk door den bijlegger Bekker ondernomen zijnde, welke mede een seer ruwe en onvolmaakte schets medegebragt hebbende van beijde deselve zijnde in het gesigt van malkanderen, heb ik gedagt verplicht te wezen UEGA zoo goed mogelijk eenig bericht van te moeten geven. Met deselfde gelegentheit heb ik een aftekening gesonden aen mijn goede vriend den Professor

AS to the pyramid, I shall have the honour to inform you that already in the first years of my stay in these lands I heard many stories told by old inhabitants how up in the Rupununi there was a very high pyramid built of stone, of which people talked even in neighbouring districts; I have received several letters upon this subject, asking for information upon this, though I have never been able, and still am not able, to give a satisfactory answer thereto, for, notwithstanding all the pains I have taken and the promises I have made, I have not succeeded in finding any one who would go to examine it because of the inveterate superstition, the Indians all being unanimously of belief that it is the dwelling-place of the Jawaho, the name they give to the devil. In the year 1740 a mulatto, Pieter Tollenaar (the same one who brought back your Honours' creoles who had run away on account of the ill-treatment of the miner Hildebrand), at my request, undertook to make a voyage thither in company with two of these creoles and upon their return I was assured of the reality of that affair, for he brought with him a rough drawing thereof, and also of various images which he had seen near it cut in the stone.

The circumstance that this mulatto died shortly after his return gave further support to the superstition, and, whatever trouble I have taken, I have not since that time been able to obtain information thereof, except only the report of the Councilor E. Pypersberg, who has recently died, that, as he was coming down Massaruni, up which he had gone in pursuit of his runaway slaves so far that he had come to nations who had never seen white people, he had distinctly seen, also on his right hand, in about the same direction, yet another very high pyramid, which he had been very curious to examine from near by, but, as he had only Indians with him besides his runaway and captured slaves, he had not dared to leave his boat.

The thing now having at last been undertaken by the assistant Bakker, who has also brought with him a very rude and imperfect sketch of both of them, the one being in sight from the other, I have considered it my duty to give your Honours as well as possible some information about them. By the same opportunity I have sent a copy to my good friend Professor Allamand, at Leyden, requesting

Allamand te Leijden en desselfs sentiment daerover versogt te weeten, waerop nog geen antwoord hebbe.

to have his opinion upon it, to which I have not yet received an answer. A

Het is mij seer aengenaem geweest de goed keuringe van U. E. G. A. te erlangen wegens d'instructie en bevele aen den Commandant Bakker in mijn absentie gegeven aengaende den oorlog tusschen de Caraïbische en Acuwaijsche natien, deselve zijn exact naergekomen, en is zoo veel zoo door persuasien als door dreijgementen uijtgevoert, dat alhoewel de verbittering wederzijds groot is, echter niets van belang tusschen haer is voorgevallen, en bij kleine Schermutzelingen gebleven en nog alle bedekt en bij nacht geschied. Van de gesteltenis op Arinda hebbe nog geen bericht, den Posthouder ingevolge mijne gereitende bevelen de reys naer de binne lande eijndelijk ondernomen hebbende, heeft mij laeten weeten dat hoopte in Maert af te komen, dog men weet wel wanneer men uijtgaet, maer de wederkomst is onzeker.

I was very pleased to hear that your Lordships approved of the instructions and orders given to Commandant Bakker concerning the measures to be taken during my absence with regard to the war between the Carib and Acuwai nations. The same were accurately followed, and so much was done both by persuasion and by threats that, although there is a great feeling of bitterness on both sides, nothing of importance has actually taken place, the fighting having been restricted to a few skirmishes that occurred under cover of night. I have as yet no report how matters stand at Arinda, the Postholder, who has at last undertaken the journey to the interior according to my reiterated instructions, having sent me word to say that he hoped to come down in March, but though we know when we go out we know not when we shall return. B

Ik continueere een seer wakend oog op alle de bewegingen der Spanjaerden boven deeze rivieren te laeten houden, en hebbe daerom U. E. G. A. Criool Tampoko gelast bij d'Eerste val in Cajoeny te gaen wonen en continueel die rivier op en af te vaeren en onder d'Indiaenen goede correspondentie te houden, en alle vier weken af te komen om mij verslag te doen van al wat voorvalt.

I continue to have a good look-out kept on all the movements of the Spaniards in the upper reaches of these rivers, and have therefore charged your Lordships' creole, Tampoko, to go and live near the first fall in the Cuyuni, to make his way continually up and down this river, to keep up good relations with the Indians, and to come down every four weeks to report to me upon all that occurs. C

In soortgelijke saeken kan men gerust op den bijstand der Caraïbasien staetmaeken, den ingewortelden haet en Vijandschap van die natie tegens de Spanjaerden is zoo groot, dat weijnig apparentie van versoening tusschen haer is en hoewel die natie veel van haer oude wezen verbasst is, blijft dit nog als een ingebooren eigenschap bij haer.

In such kind of matters we can fully rely upon the assistance of the Caribs. The deep-rooted hatred and enmity of that nation towards the Spaniards is so great that there is little probability of a reconciliation between them, and although that nation has lost many of its old characteristics, this still continues to be one of its innate peculiarities. D

Met die selfde occasie sal ik aen den Gouverneur van Orinoque Schrijven over den staet der saeken in Barima welk een rovers nest zoude worden een partij *jan rap en zijn maet* van onze ingesetene sig daer ophoudende onder pretext van soute Indiaenschen handel, hout maken, &c. Leven daar als wilde menschen. Branden elkanders hutten af, setten malkandere in de Boeijen, en vreeze nog moord en doodslag van sal komen.

I shall write to the Governor of Orinoco concerning the state of affairs in Barima, which would become an absolute den of thieves, a rag-tag-and-bobtail party of our colonists staying there under pretence of salting, trading with the Indians, and felling timber, &c. They live there like savages, burning each others huts and putting each other in chains, and I fear that bloodshed and murder will come of it. E

De West zijde van Barima seker Spaensch territoir zijnde (en daer houden sig op) kan ik daer geen geweld gebruijke om dat nest te verstoorren. Geen rede van klagten willende geven waerom aen dien Gouverneur (welke hoe langer hoe meer om zijne vriendelijkheid voor alle vreemde beroemt word) denke te proponeeren om dit gesamenenderhand uijt te voeren of dat mij permitteert sulx te doen, of zoo en op wat wijze hij best sal oordeelen.

The west side of Barima being certainly Spanish territory (and that is where they are), I can use no violent measures to destroy this nest, not wishing to give any grounds for complaint; wherefore I think of proposing to the Governor (who is daily being more highly praised for his friendliness to all foreigners) to carry this out hand-in-hand, or to permit me to do so, or as and in what manner he shall consider best. F

No. 412.

Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, May 30, 1766.

(Extract.)

IN een mijner voorige d'Eer gehad hebbende U. E. G. A. melding te doen van de gruwelijke levenswijze eeniger onzer ingesetenen in Barima, en vernemende hoe langer hoe erger toeging, heb

HAVING had the honour to inform your Lordships in one of my former letters of the barbarous mode of life of some of our colonists in Barima, and hearing that this was

A ik in Demerarij zijnde den Posthouder van Maroco welke daer bij mij quam gelast, om alle verdere onheijlen te pravenieren daer naer toe te gaen, en de saeken zoo bevindende deselve tordonneeren naer het Fort te komen.

Daer komende vond den armen Thomas Adamse wel met een ketting vast geklonke aen een boom welke door Jan Adolph van Rose dus over de drie maende gehouden was, en meest dood, had de Posthouder nog drie a vier daegen weg gebleve was hij apparent dood geweest denselve los gemaekt en in zijn vaertuijg hebbende ging naer Rose en communiceerde hem mijne bevelen om naer het Fort te komen welk niet alleen weijgerde maer op het seggen van den Posthouder dat hij moest komen Pakte hij een Donderbus met vijf kogels geladen en een Sabel in de hand, om denselve overhoop to Schieten dog den nieuw aengenome Posthouder voor Cajoenij bij sig hebbende met eene zijner bijleggers Schooten deeze Schielijk toe en ontweldigde hem het geweer bragten hem in het vaertuijg en vervolgens gisteren naer hier, Adams is in het hospitaal gebragt en Rose in het Fort, sal ten eerste informatie wegens die saek laeten houden, en de Schuldige den 5<sup>de</sup> May voor de Court te regt laete stellen.

J. A. van Rosen te regt gestelt zijnde, is bevonden hij op een enkele suspicie Thomas Adams welke in Barima Cederhout liet maeken voor rekening van de Hr. J. Knott. Dat deselve in zijn absentie zijn pleisterhuijs in Brand gestoken zoude hebben, geweldig aengetast, en omtrent de drie maenden met een ketting om den Hals een aen de armen en een aen de beenen aen een Stijl vast geklonken hadde gehouden, hem dagelijx met een weijnig Cassavi en water onder houden en al zijn goed naer zijn plaets getransporteert, nevens nog veel andere onchristelijke en brutale behandelingen. Heb ik naer alles nauwkeurig geexamineert was R. O. ge Eyscht voors Rose gebracht zoude worden ter plaetse daer men gewoon is Crimineele Justitie te doen om aldaer Strengelijck gegeesselt te worden en verder voor Eeuwig gebannen uijt de Limiten van het Octroy, welken Eysch in zoo verre gemitigeert is dat den Raed hem heeft gecondemneert om op eene publiquen dag, een uur lang met de strop om den hals onder de Galg te pronk soude staen en voor altoos gebannen, verder in de kosten, &c. Een vonnis waerlijk veel te sagt voor zoo een Schurk welkers gedrag zoo lang in de Colonie is geweest sig heel slegt heeft gedraegen, en welke men zegt bevorens uijt Suriname gebanne te weezen.

Verder heeft den Raed verboden niemand meer in Barima sig sal mogen ophouden en den Posthouder van Moroco gelast hier voor te Sorgen, wijl dit met er tijd een Rovers nest zoude worden en ons in gevaer brengen van met onze naebuuren de Spanjaerds over hoop te geraten.

F Sende heden een bevel af naer den Posthouder van Maroco om optekomen om sig te verantwoorden over eenige tegens hem ingebragte beschuldigingen, hierin bestaende dat hij eenige Spaniaerden voor zijn oogen heeft zien en laete vertrekken uijt Maroco welke van hier een neger van de Heer Persik gestolen hadde op de plaets van de Weduwe Beijssenteuffel alles weggenomen ook al het goed van den geweze posthouder F. Dost, &c., &c.

Wat eygentlijk d'omstandigheden van deeze

getting gradually worse, I charged the Postholder of Moruka, when he came to see me whilst I was in Demerary, to proceed thither in order to prevent all further mischief, and, in case matters were really so bad, to order the evil-doers to come to the fort.

On his arrival there he found poor Thomas Adams bound fast to a tree with a chain, and nearly dead, having been thus kept for over three months by Jan Adolph van Rose. Had the Postholder come three or four days later the man would certainly have been dead. Having unbound him and placed him in a boat, the Postholder went to Rose and communicated to him my orders to come to the fort; this he not only refused to do, but when the Postholder said that he must come, he seized a sword and a blunderbuss loaded with five bullets, intending to shoot him down, but the newly-appointed Postholder of Cuyuni, who was present with one of his assistants, rushed upon him, tore the weapon from him, and took him to the boat. He was brought here yesterday. Adams has been taken to the hospital and Rose to the fort. I shall have inquiries made into the matter as soon as possible, and will have the culprit brought before the Court on the 5th May.

J. A. van Rosen having been brought before the Court, it was found that he had suspected Thomas Adams (who was having some cedarwood cut in Barima on behalf of Mr. J. Knott) of having during his absence set fire to his house. He had thereupon made a violent attack upon him, had laden him with chains about his neck, arms, and legs, and kept him rivetted to a post for about three months, feeding him daily with a little cassava and water, having carried all his property to his own place, and committed many other un-Christian and brutal acts. After all had been carefully inquired into, I demanded that the said Rose should be taken to the place where capital punishment is usually carried out, and should be severely flogged there, and should be further banished for ever from the Chartered Company's territories, which demand was mitigated in so far that the Court condemned him to be publicly exposed under the gallows for one hour with the rope about his neck, and to be banished for ever, and to pay such costs, &c., a sentence much too lenient for such a villain, who had behaved very badly the whole of the time he was in the Colony, and who is said to have been banished from Surinam.

The Court made a further order forbidding any one to stop in Barima, and charged the Postholder of Moruka to see that this was carried out, because in time this would become a den of thieves, and expose us to the danger of getting mixed up in a quarrel with our neighbours the Spaniards.

I send off to-day an order to the Postholder of Moruka to come and answer certain accusations made against him, to the effect that he saw and let depart from Moruka before his eyes certain Spaniards who had stolen from here a negro of Mr. Persik's, and had carried off everything at the place of widow Beijssenteuffel, also all the property of the late Postholder F. Dorst, &c.

What are actually the circumstances of all this



geheele saek zijn weet ik niet, maer wegens den neger van d'Hr. Persik is positief waer sij hadden deselve in Maroco komende in haer vaertuijg waervan den Posthouder door Indianen gewaerschuwt wierd, en echter hoewel hij vier man doen bij hem had heeft hij haer niet durven aentasten. Waerop een Spaensche Mulat Francisco genaemt welke lang in deeze rivier heeft gewoont hem seijde: Sult gij die neger van Persik zoo laete wegvoeren, dan sal ik wel middel vinden om het te beletten en heeft ook de volgende nacht met eenige Indiaenen de canoa van die schurken daer de neger en daer geweeren in waeren still losgemaakt en met deselve naer hier gekomen en de neger aen d'Hr. Persik teruggebragt. Het is schandelijk dat een Mulat en nog wel een vreemdeling beter sijn plicht doet als een Posthouder expres daertoe gesteld. D'Hr. Persik mag wel met waerheid scheijven: Het is God geklaegt dat men wat moeijte men doet geen goede getrouwe Posthouders kan krijgen. Als die menschen maer kiltum konnen krijgen stooren zij zig verder nergens aen.

Ik hope den Posthouder van Arinda nog voor het Sluijte deses Sal afkomen, hebbende in lang geen tijding van boven gehad.

Den Borger Capiteijn J. Knott heeft den Commandeur en mij kennis gegeven dat bericht hadde ontfangen, Dat de Acuwayen vernomen hebbende de Caribischen welke haer voorlede jaer boven in Demerary van alles beroofd hadden, Sig in grooter getal vaerdig maekte om haer te komen aentasten, de Natie sig eenige honderde Sterk verzamelt hadde op de plaets van den uijl Maritane (mij seer wel bekent) zijnde heel boven tusschen de rivieren Demerary en Essequibo om de Caribische af te wachten zoo dat alle daege een bloedige bataille te gemoed gezien word. Welke van gevolge konde wezen voor al indien de Caribis geslaege worden (Soo als wel apparent is) vraegende hij Capiteijn welke heel boven woont hoe sig hier in hadde te gedraegen.

Ik heb den Commandeur gelast, welke hier ter bijwoning der Vergaderingen geweest is, sig naer boven in Demerary te begeven om op onvoorsiene voorvallen ordre te konne Stellen en voor al wel te Sorgen dot door de Borgers een exacte neutraliteijt werde onderhouden, sonder sig direct of indirect met die Saek te bemoeijen of eene der beide natien eenig geweer hoe genaemt bij te setten, en te trachten soo nog tijd, door middel van Aruwakken welke vriende van alle zijn, de bloedstorting te pravenieren, en het verschil bij te leggen. Het welk mij al eenige reijse zoo door goede woorde als Dreijgementen gelukt is.

affair I do not know ; but, as regards Mr. Persik's negro, it is certainly true that they had him in their boat when they came into Moruka. Of this the Postholder was notified by the Indians, and although he then had with him four men, he did not dare to touch them. Whereupon a Spanish mulatto named Francisco, who had long lived in this river, said: "If you are going to let that negro of Persik's be carried off so, then I shall find a way to hinder it." And accordingly, the following night, with some Indians, he quietly loosed the canoe of these rascals wherein were the negro and their weapons, and came with it hither and brought the negro back to Mr. Persik. It is shameful that a mulatto, and a stranger too, does his duty better than a Postholder stationed expressly therefor. Mr. Persik may with perfect justice write: "It is a crying shame that, no matter what pains one takes, one can get no faithful Postholders. If only those fellows can get rum, they never trouble themselves about anything else."

I hope the Postholder of Arinda may come down before the closing of this letter, I having had no tidings from above for some time.

The Burgher-Captain J. Knott has informed the Commandeur and myself that he had received information that the Acuways, having heard that the Caribs, who had robbed them of everything in Upper Demerary last year, were getting ready to attack them in still greater numbers, had assembled, several hundreds strong, on the place of the Owl Maritane (very well known to me), being right up between the Rivers Demerary and Essequibo, to wait for the Caribs, so that we are expecting a bloody battle every day. This might have important results, especially if the Caribs were beaten (which is very probable). The captain, who lives a good way up, has asked how he is to act in this matter.

I have charged the Commandeur, who was present at the meetings here, to proceed to Upper Demerary in order to be on the spot in case of unforeseen events, and to take especial care that strict neutrality is maintained by the citizens. I have further charged him not to interfere, directly or indirectly, in the matter, nor to help either of the nations in the slightest manner, and to make an effort, if there be still time, to reconcile the two parties and prevent bloodshed, through the mediation of the Aruwaks, who are friends of both sides. I have myself succeeded in doing this several times already, both by persuasion and threats.

No. 413.

*West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo, June 19, 1766.*

(Extract.)

WIJ approbeeren het door UEd. verrigte ten opzigte der moord in Maroco ; men kan in zulke gevallen, om geen grond tot ongenoegeen aan de Indiaanen te geven, niet te voorzigtig nog te cauteleus zijn.

Vermits wij met leedwesen hebben vernomen  
[696—3]

WE approve the course pursued by you in regard to the murder in Moruka ; in such cases one cannot be too prudent or cautious, in order to give no ground for dissatisfaction to the Indians.

Having with sorrow learned of your fear of  
2 M

A UEd. vrees van nimmer regt bekwaame Posthouders te zullen vinden, en wij dit egter een point van aanbelang rekenen voor de colonie en haaren securiteit zoo zullen wij gaarne afwagten, wat middelen UEd. zoude kunnen aan de hand geeven omme hierin een gewenschte redres te maken, welke wij ten eersten tot een voorwerp van onze serieuze deliberation stellen zullen.

B Vervolgens ter beandwoording van UEd. tweede opgem. missive in in dato 27 Dec. Ao. Po. overgaande, kunnen wij niet anders, dan approbeeren de schikkingen en mesures door UEd. op bekome tijding, dat verscheijde Indiaanen der Spaansche missien de Rivier Cajoenij waaren afgevaaren en die van Masseroenij op, genomen en dadelijk in het werk gesteld, vermits wij niet zien, dat UEd. iets meerder of efficacieuser zoude hebben kunnen verrigten, waarom wij daarin ook zullen berusten; en moeten afwagten wat de Spaansche Indiaanen werder zouden mogen goedvinden te onderneemen.

C Dat de blanke, die met eenige Indiaamen de rivier van Cajoenij af en die van Masseroenij op was gevaren, en waarvan hiervoren bereids mentie is gemaakt, ontsnapt was, is ons leed, vermits men mogelijk uit hem meerder ligt nog van het eigenlijk oogmerk dier togt zoude hebben kunnen haalen, inmiddels is het eene consolatie, dat Comps. criool Tampoko zig van zijne expeditie zoo wel gekweeten heeft, dat de voorsz. Indiaanen nog in handen gevallen zijn en hebben kunnen ondervraagd worden, en approbeeren, wij al, hetgeen door UEd. deesen aangaande is verrigt, volkoomen, vooral om de daarbij door UEd. gegeve informatien, dat de Uil van Masseroenij, die de oorzaak van deesen optogt schijnd geweest te zijn, een dergeene is welke, in de tijd der troubles in de Berbice, zig zoo wel hebben gedragen, en daarom door UEd. met meerder zagtheid is behandeld, dan wel anders zoude geschied zijn, vermits het zeker is, dat hij anderzints eene vrij zwaardere correctie had gemeriteerd dan het eenvoudig dreijgement door UEd. aan denzelven gedaan aanzeggen.

E De handelingen van den ingezetene Bastiaan Christiaansen, welke UEd. ons meld, bij het ondervragen der voorsz. Indiaanen, te hebben outdekt disapprobeeren wij ten hoogsten niet alleen, maar wij hoopen en vertrouwen daarenboven, dat UEd. dienaangaande met de vereischte sagaciteit en nauwkeurigheid alle mogelijke perquisitien zult hebben gedaan, en naar bevind van zaken gehandeld waarvan wij nader informatien bij gelegendheid zullen inwagten.

F Dat UEd. den anderen Indiaan door Tampoko afgehaald, en die bevonden is een spion der Spaansche missien te zijn, in bewaarder hand gesteld is wel goed, maar of hij veerzekerd genoeg bewaard zal zijn, en geen middel vinden om te echappeeren daaraan twijffelen wij sterk; maar daar men uit zijne depositie en die der andere Indiaanen schijnd te moeten afneemen, dat de Spaansche waarlik voorneemen zoude hebben, omme in en over Cajoenij nieuwe missien aan te leggen, zoo gelooven wij dat men absolut niet langer mag draalen met het opregten der bewuste post, will men die inkruipingen geen voet zien winnen, maar efficacieus beletten, en om zig van dien post het gewenschte success te kunnen verzekeren gelooven wij met UEd. dat het commando van 6 man met een onderofficier dat UEd. aan den reeds aangenomen Posthouder zoude toevoe-

never finding fully fitted Postholders, and nevertheless considering this a matter of importance for the Colony and for its security, we shall anxiously await your suggestions as to the means for making a desired improvement herein, and shall at the earliest opportunity make them a subject of our serious deliberations.

Coming now to the answer to your second aforesaid letter, dated the 27th December of last year, we cannot but approve of the arrangements made and the measures taken and at once put into effect by you upon learning that several Indians of the Spanish Missions had gone down the River Cuyuni and up the Massaruni; for we do not see that you could have done anything further or aught more efficacious, wherefore we shall be content therewith, and must await what the Spanish Indians may further see fit to undertake.

We are sorry that the white man who, with some Indians, came down the river of Cuyuni and went up that of Massaruni, as already mentioned above, escaped, for from him further light as to the real aim of that expedition might possibly have been obtained. In the meanwhile it is a consolation that the Company's creole Tampoko has acquitted himself so well of his expedition that the aforesaid Indians were captured and could be interrogated. And we fully approve everything which has been done by you in this affair, especially because of the information you gave us in this connection, that the Owl of Massaruni, who seems to have been the cause of this expedition, is one of those who, at the time of the disturbances in Berbice, bore themselves so well, and was for that reason treated by you with more leniency than otherwise would have happened, for it is certain that otherwise he would have deserved a much greater correction than the simple threat you caused to be made to him.

We not only most emphatically disapprove of the actions of the colonist Bastiaan Christiaansen, which you inform us you have found out through interrogating the aforesaid Indians, but we moreover hope and trust that in this regard you have with the requisite sagacity and accuracy made all possible investigations, and have acted according to the facts you have discovered. Of this we shall await further information at your convenience.

It is good, we admit, that the other Indian who was brought by Tampoko, and found to be a spy of the Spanish Missions, was placed in custody; but we strongly doubt whether he will be kept securely enough and not find means to escape. But, as from his deposition and those of the other Indians, it seems we must deduce that the Spaniards really intend to establish new Missions in and across the Cuyuni, we believe that further delay in erecting the said Post is absolutely inadmissible, if we desire to see those encroachments gain no ground, but to effectively prevent them. And, in order to assure ourselves of the desired success of that Post, we believe with you that the command of six men and a sergeant, which you would add to the Postholder already engaged, should consist of Protestants, for the reasons alleged by you, and we likewise think necessary

gen, uit Protestanten behoorden te bestaan, om de reedenen bij UEd. geallegeerd, zooals wij den aanleg eener kost-plantatie daar mede noodzakelijk oordeelen, en wenschen, dat zulks zonder eenig nadeel van de Compagnie, na overleg met UEd. door den Raad zal zijn gearresteerd.

the laying-out of a bread plantation there, and A  
hope that without any prejudice to the Company, the Court may thus have resolved after consultation with you.

No. 414.

*West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo, September 8, 1766.*

(Extract.)

MET die dan van den 6<sup>en</sup> April geschreeven in Demerary een begin maakende, zoo hebben wij uit dezelve met genoegen gezien de provisioneele door UEd. aan ons gegeve informatie nopens de bewuste ongemeen hooge pijramides, welke volgens opgaafe van diverse lieden, zig boven in Ripununi zouden bevinden van steen zouden zijn opgebouwd, en zelv met verscheide in steen uitgehouwe beelden verciert zijn.

Gaarne hadden wij, dat er iemand in de Colonie te vinden was, die gelegendheid, lust, en bekwaamheid had, om daarna eens nauwkeurig onderzoek te doen, niet omdat wij eenig geloof slaan aan de vertellingen die UEd. ons meld, dat men deswegens gewoon is te doen, teweten, dat daarby of daaronder goud- of zilver-mynen zouden te vinden zijn, schoon zulks evenwel daarom niet onmogelijk is; maar voornamentlijk daaromme, dat men mogelijk daardoor gelegendheid zou krijgen tot het doen van ontdekkingen die voor de gantsche geleerde weereld, en spetiaal voor alle liefhebbers der oude-geschiedenissen en geographisten van veel aangelegendheid zouden kunnen zijn vooral daar het tot nu toe buiten alle waarschijnlijkheid is om niets sterker te zeggen, dat de oude Egiptenaaren eene volkplanting in die gewesten zouden gehad hebben, terwijl het evenwel die oude volkeren met de Chineesen alleen zijn, die als stigters van soodanige pijramidaale gevaartens bekend staan.

Kan UEd. derhalven iemand vinden, in wien de drie opgem. vereischens tesaamenloopen, zal het ons bijzonder aangenaam zijn, dat UEd. denzelven daartoe hoe eerder zoo beter employere; gelijk wij ook wel mogen lijden dat UEd. een goed, kundig, en eerlijk tolk voor de Indiaansche taalen zoeken te bekomen zooals wij vermeen, UEd. dit meermaalen te hebben gezegd.

De door UEd. gestelde ordres, om den criool Tampko bij de eerste val in Cajoenij voortaan te doen wonen, teneinde op alle beweegingen der Spaanjaarden des te beter een wakend-oog te kunnen houden, hebben ten vollen onse goedkeuring; en wanneer het erop aankomen mogt 'tgeen wij evenwel liefst niet zagen gebeuren, zou het zekerlijk (stemmen wij met UEd. in) een groot articul zijn op den bijstand der Caraïbanen te kunnen staat maken.

BEGINNING, then, with the [letter] of the 6th April, written in Demerara, we have seen from it with pleasure the provisional information given us by you concerning those uncommonly high pyramids which, according to the statement of various persons, are said to exist up in Ripununi, built of stone, and even ornamented with sundry figures carved in stone.

We should be glad if in the Colony some one could be found with the leisure, inclination, and ability to make a careful investigation thereof, not because we attach any belief to the stories which you inform us people are wont to relate about them, namely, that near them or under them gold or silver mines exist, though this is not therefore impossible, but particularly because thereby one might possibly get an opportunity for discoveries which might be of much importance to the whole learned world, and especially to all lovers of ancient history and to geographers, the more so since up to this time it is outside all probability, not to use stronger expressions, that the ancient Egyptians should have had a Colony in those parts, while, nevertheless, those ancient nations, along with the Chinese, are the only ones who are on record as builders of such colossal pyramids.

If, therefore, you can find some one in whom the three aforesaid requirements are united, it will afford us especial pleasure that you, as early as possible, employ him thereto. We likewise would not be averse to your trying to get a good, skilled, and honest interpreter for the Indian languages, as we think we have more than once told you.

The arrangements made by you to have the creole Tampoko live henceforth at the first fall in Cuyuni, in order the better to be able to keep a watchful eye upon all the movements of the Spaniards, have our fullest approval, and, if it should come to the worst, which, however, we would prefer not to see happen, we agree with you that it would be a great point to be able to rely upon the aid of the Caribs.

*Extract from Records of Court of Policy, Essequibo.**Provisioneele Instructie van Pierre Martijn Posthouder In Cajoenij.**Provisional Instructions for Pierre Martyn, Postholder in Cuyuni.*

## ARTC. 1.

## ARTICLE 1.

A HIJ sal Sorge draegen de Vrije Indianen niet qualijk gehandelt of verongelijkt worden, maar tragten soo veel deenelijk deselve bij en omtrent de Post te lokken, en die daar omtrent wonen in alles te beschermen.

HE shall take care that the free Indians are not molested or ill-treated, but endeavour as much as possible to attract them to and in the neighbourhood of the Post, and protect those residing in the neighbourhood in everything.

## ARTC. 2.

## ARTICLE 2.

B Hij sal naauwkeurig acht geven op de Wegloopende Slaeven deselve apprehendeeren, en afzenden Waaron hij ook nog Blanken, nog Mulatten, nog Slaeven de Post sonder Permissie briefje laeten Passeeren uijtgesondert alleen eenig blanke Weggeloope Slaeven agtervolgende, daar haest bij is deselve sal hij behulpsaem weesen al heeft geen briefje, dog zijne Verrigtingen naauwkeurig naer Vorscheen aantekenen en ons kenniss daar van geven.

He shall keep a sharp look-out on the runaway slaves, apprehend them, and send them back. For this reason he shall not allow whites, mulattoes, or slaves to pass the Post without a permit, except in the event of whites pursuing runaway slaves; this being an urgent matter, he shall assist them, although they have no permit, but he shall make strict inquiries into their proceedings, note the same down, and forward report thereof to us.

## ARTC. 3.

## ARTICLE 3.

C Hij sal naauwkeurig acht op de behandelingen der Nabuurige Spanjaarts geven, wel sorgen haer geen Reden van klagen geeft, ook toesien hem niet overrompelen, maar een Waaksaam oog daar op houden, ook geene derselve onderwat Pretext de Post naer beneden laeten Passeeren, maar Eenige komende Direct hier naer het fort zenden.

He shall pay particular attention to the actions of the neighbouring Spaniards, take good care to give them no reason of complaint, also see that they do not surprise them, but keep a watchful eye on them, and not allow them on any pretext whatever to pass below the Post, but in case any should be coming direct here to send them to the fort.

## ARTC. 4.

## ARTICLE 4.

D De Negotie voor sig selven word hem toegestaan, maer onder speciale Conditie dat niets verkoopen sal van het ingehandelde voor en aller ons de Preferentie, geoffereert heeft, op Pøene van Arbitraire Correctie.

He is permitted to trade for his own benefit, but under the special condition, however, that he shall not dispose of any goods traded in at the Post before first giving us the preference, on pain of losing this privilege.

## ARTC. 5.

## ARTICLE 5.

Hij sal soo veel doenlijk goede Huijsinge Maeken, Provisie Laeten Planten, &c., op dat de Post versterkt wordende geen gebrek aan deselve moge wesen.

He shall build as much as possible good houses, plant provisions, &c., in order that when the Post is being strengthened ample accommodation may be at hand.

En sig verder als een trouw, Eerlijk en Vigilant Posthouder betaamt Gedragen.

He shall further conduct himself as a faithful, honest, and vigilant Postholder ought to conduct himself.

E En dit alles tot tijd en Wijlen de Post in Ordre zijnde hem een Ampelder Instructie gegeven sal worden.

Further instructions shall be given to him later on when the Post shall be in order.

(Was get:) L. STORM VAN 'S GRAVESANDE.

(Signed) L. STORM VAN 'S GRAVESANDE.

*Rio Essequibo, den 14 September, 1766.*

*Rio Essequibo, September 14, 1766.*

Accordeert met zijn origineel ter Secretaij in Rio Essequibo den 16 September, 1766.

Agrees with the original at the Secretary's Office in Rio Essequibo, September 16, 1766.

Quod attestor,  
HENDR. MILBORN,  
Assistant.

Quod attestor,  
HENDR. MILBORN,  
Assistant.

*West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo, September 25, 1766.*

(Extract.)

WIJ vinden met UEd. de onmenschelijke behandeling van Ian Adolph van Roose omtrent Thomas Adamse ten alderhoogsten strafbaar, en het vonnis van den Raad van Justitie, in die zaak gewesen, waarlijk te zagt in proportie der misdaad, Jaa selv dunkt het ons dat men UEd. niet kan b[e]schuldigen van een al te crimineelen eisch tegens denzelven te hebben genomen, maar in een van UEd. voorige melde UEd. ons dat de plaats omtrend de Barima, alwaar zig eenig schuim en uitschot van volk met den anderen ophield en een schandelijk leven leide, Spaansch territoir was, en dat UEd. voornemens was om d'Hr. Rousselet, in commissie naar Orinocque gaande, aan den Spaanschen Gouverneur eenige proposition tot verdelging dier sociteit de doen voorstellen, en thans meld UEd. ons den Posthouder van Maroco met positive beveelen derwaards te hebben afgezonden, waarschijnlijk *propria autoritate* zonder eenige agreatie van den voorsz. Gouverneur, naardien d'Hr. Rousselet nog niet in commissie derwaards vertrokken was; en dit konnen wij niet wel met den anderen overeenbrengen, Is die plaats waarlijk Spaansch territoir dan heeft UEd. zeer onvoorzigtig en irregulier gehandeld, en daarentegen, hoord die plaats onder de colonie, en had UEd. zig bevoorrens ten opzigt van territoir vergist, dan heeft UEd. zeer wel gedaan, en moeten wij UEd. gehoudene directie volkomen approbeeren; gelijk ook de Resolutie van deen Raad dat zig niemand meer aan Barima zal mogen ophouden, naar heeft den Raad daar ter plaatse geen jurisdictie, voorzien wij van die Resolutie weijnig effect: *extra territorium suum jus dicenti emin [sic] impune non paretur*.

WE agree with you in finding the inhuman A treatment of Thomas Adams by Jan Adolph van Roose exceedingly criminal, and the judgment pronounced in this case by the Council of Justice really too lenient in proportion to the crime. It even seems to us that you yourself cannot be accused of over-severity in the sentence you demanded against him. But in one of your preceding letters you told us that the place about the Barima, where some scum and offscourings of folk were staying together and leading a scandalous life, was Spanish territory, and that you intended to have Mr. Rousselet, who was going on a mission to Orinoco submit some propositions to the Spanish Governor for the extirpation of that B gang. And now you inform us of your having sent thither the Postholder of Moruka with positive orders, probably *propria autoritate* without any concurrence of the aforesaid Governor, inasmuch as Mr. Rousselet had not yet departed thither on his mission, and we cannot quite make this tally with the other. If that place is really Spanish territory, then you have acted very imprudently and irregularly; and, on the contrary, if that place forms part of the Colony, and you had previously been in error as to the territory, C then you have done very well, and we must fully approve of your course, as also of the Court's Resolution that henceforth no one shall be at liberty to stay on the Barima. But if the Court has no jurisdiction in that place, we see little result from that Resolution: *extra territorium suum jus dicenti enim impune non paretur*.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, October 1, 1766.*

(Extract.)

DEN Posthouder van Cajoenij Sal in het begin van September (het water nu beginnende te sakken naer die Rivier opvaeren om met Indiaenen de hujsen te maken en Brood tuijnen te kappen waer naer dit werk naer behooren gereguleerd Sal worden.

THE Postholder of Cuyuni will in the beginning of September (the water now beginning to fall) proceed up that river in order to build dwellings and lay out bread-gardens, with the assistance of the Indians, after which the work there will be properly regulated.

*The Assistant in Essequibo to the Director-General, November 19, 1766.*

(Extract.)

DEN Posthouder Hendrik van Arinda afgekomen zijnde.

THE Postholder Hendrik having come down from Arinda.

Den Posthouder rapporteert dat boven de post in de creeq van Maho een Pater met een andere blanke Portugees gevonden zijn, om neffens eenige Maganauwen, Supeneijen, naties (daar wel van gesejd word dat haar aangesigt op de bost hebben en menschen eten) een etablissement te

The Postholder reports that above the Post, in the creek of Maho, a friar and another white person, a Portuguese, have been found, [who are P there] in order to form an establishment, together with several Magnouws and Supenays (natives, of whom it is sometimes said that they have their

A formeeren, wat of 'er aan is kan niet weten; al-  
tans de Posthouder segt, "dat volgens het verhaal  
van een Caribis de broodtuinen door haer aldaar  
geplant en jaar oud moeten zijn, dat 'er in de lek  
van Parima ses groote vaartuijgen (van de Portu-  
geesen) als berken leggen, er het daar zijnde volk  
met jagten en kleine vartuijgen tot aan de punt  
van de creecq Aurora en Maho zoude gegaan zijn,  
en van daar de Caribisen en andere natien reeds  
hebben verdreven. Teffens verhaelende, dat en  
Caribis genaamt Majarawaijna een maatie van U  
Hoog Edele Geb. door hem Posthouder na daar  
gesonden zijnde om nauw agt op alles te geven,  
B en dat denselven Caribis binnen 14 a 16 dagen  
alhier aan 't Fort zan wesen."

Saturdag den 15. deser is Jan Witting van  
boven gekomen en rapporteert dat de Posthouder  
Martijn seer slegt was, waar voor hij medicijnen  
is komen haelen.

face on their breast and are cannibals); what  
truth there is in this I cannot know. The Post-  
holder says, however, "that, according to the ac-  
count of a Carib, the bread-gardens planted there  
by them must be at least one year old, that in the  
outlet of Parima there are six boats (of the Portu-  
guese) as large as barques, and that the people  
there have gone with yachts and small boats as  
far as the point of the Creek Aurora and Maho,  
and have already driven away from there the  
Caribs and other nations. He relates, moreover,  
that a Carib, called Majarawayna, a friend of your  
Excellency, has been sent thither by him, the  
Postholder, in order closely to observe everything,  
and that the aforesaid Carib will be here at the  
fort within fourteen or sixteen days."

Saturday, the 15th of this month, Jan Witting  
came from above, reporting that the Postholder  
Martin was very ill, and that he had come to get  
medicine for him.

## No. 419.

C

*Director-General, Essequibo (in Demerary), to West India Company, December 3, 1766.*

(Extract.)

D DEN Posthouder van Arinda is jegens woordig  
hier die kaerel heeft ter waereld niets gedaen van  
het aen hem geordonneerde, hij werpt het op de  
bijlegger Bekker en die wederom op hem, het is  
een Cahos van verwarring daer niet uijt te komen  
is Dog die bijlegger in t'algemeen voor een Schurk  
bekent zijnde Sal ik hem met d'Eerste Engelsche  
barq uijt de Colonie senden, dan Sal hij geen quaed  
D meer doen en den Posthouder, tot Bijlegger [sic]  
promoveeten, als maer een andere weet te  
vinden.

E Eene de Bijleggers van Maroco heb ik hier op  
het Eijland Borssele, de Snaphaen weder op  
Schouder gegeve Den Posthouder van Cajoenij  
legt volgens de laeste berichten Siek op de Post,  
dat komt Seer qualijk wijl Sterk voortgaet met  
Sijn werk, men Soude veel aan hem verliesen.  
Dog Siekte is het lot van alle sonder uijtsondering  
die voor deerste reijse Cajoenij opvaeren voor al in  
het drooge Saisoen het welk nog gestadig aen  
blijft continueeren.

THE Postholder of Arinda is at present here;  
the fellow has not made the slightest attempt  
to carry out his instructions; he blames the  
assistant, Bakker, for this, who again throws the  
blame upon him. It is a chaos of conflicting  
statements, of which it is impossible to make  
anything. But the assistant being universally  
known as a rogue, I shall send him out of the  
Colony with the first English vessel. He will  
then not be able to do any more mischief, and I  
shall promote [sic] the Postholder to the rank  
of assistant if I can only manage to find  
another.

I have set one of the assistants of Moruka  
to once more carry a gun on the Island of  
Borssele.

The Postholder of Cuyuni is, according to the  
latest reports, lying ill at the Post. This is a  
great pity, because he makes great progress in  
his work, and we should lose a great deal in  
him. But sickness is the fate which overtakes  
all, without exception, who proceed up the  
Cuyuni for the first time, especially in the dry  
season, which still continues.

## No. 420.

*Director-General, Essequibo (in Demerary), to West India Company, December 8, 1766.*

(Extract.)

F IK hebbe (zoo reden hebbe te geloven) een  
bequaem Posthouder voor Cajoeny, in den Persoon  
van Pierre Martin voordeeze Corporael in dienst  
van U. E. G. A. geweest aengetroffen, hebbe hem  
op f16 per maend aengenomen en hem pro-  
visioneel twee bijleggers, Dindiaensche taelen  
volkome kundig elk op f 8 per maend, toegevoegd,  
Durvende geene der aenwezende Soldaeten daer  
vertrouwen om redenen reeds in mijne voorgaende  
geallegueerd. Hij is werkelijk jegenswoordig

I HAVE (so I have reason to believe) found  
a competent Postholder for Cuyuni in the person  
of Pierre Martin, formerly a corporal in the  
service of your Lordships. I have engaged him  
at the rate of 16 guilders per month, and have  
given him provisionally two assistants, who are  
well acquainted with the Indian languages, each  
to receive 8 guilders per month. I dare not trust  
any of the soldiers here to go there, for reasons  
already given in my former letters. He is at



besig de Huijsingen, &c., te maeken en de post in orde te brengen, en heeft eenige Caribanen bij sig, welkers getal wanneer genoegsaem brood geplant en bequaem Sal wezen Sterk Sal vermeerderen.

Volgens rapport van dieselve Indiaenen hebben de Spanjaerden U. E. G. A. Criool Tampoko, nevens een Indiaensche Slaef van mijn Dochter welke met hem was gegaen om vogels, &c., van d'Indiaenen te kopen, boven in Cajoenij gelicht en gevangelijk weg gevoert en zoude self zoo sommige deser Caribane getuijgen den Indiaensche Slaef Dood geslaegen hebben.

Den Posthouder van Arinda niet tegenstaende mijne gereitereerde beveelen niet afgekomen zijnde en geene mijner ordres uijtgevoert en alles daer in confusie zijnde, hebbe eene der bijleggers alhier in arrest, en een onder officier naer boven gesonden om den Posthouder af te haelen om dit werk nauwkeurig tondersoeken.

In Maijkounij gaet het jegenswoordig wel, In Maroco redelijk.

De Posten zijn zekerlijk Ed. Gr. Achb. Heeren, van het grootste belang, zoo voor d'Ed. Comp. als Colonie als men eens zoo gelukkig konde weezen, van bequaeme Posthouders te bekomen Soude men al Seer ras de goede gevolgen ondervinden. Maer dat is tot nu toe niet konne geschieden het Slegt gedrag van verscheijde derselve, heeft dat employ verachtelijk gemaekt, en geen ordentlijk burger hoewel daer wel Sin in Soude hebben durft daerom vraegen, en wat de militairen aenbelangt is niets goeds van te verwachten.

Echter is er een Employ in Staet om iemand in korte jaeren een goed Capitael te doen overwinnen is het dat van Posthouder (die van Maijkounij uijtgesondert welke weijnig occasie heeft, dog sig wel gedraegende bij vacature verplaetst word).

Den Oude De Scharde heeft de Post van Maroco omtrent anderhalf jaer gehadt, wanner is komen te sterven, heeft echter zijn zoon in Demerarij een plantagie met in de twintig Slaeven naer gelaeten, en echter begon hij maer in de Negotie te geraeken.

De Spanjaerde welke met Tabak huijden, &c., naer hier komen moeten alle zijn deur voorbij en eenige daegen bij hem uijtrusten wat zoude hem letten indien een man was welke zijn interest verstond, alles van haer te kopen, Indien zij daer de gezogte koopmanschappen konde vinden zoude zij zoo dwaes niet zijn van naer hier te komen. Maer verre daer van daen zij zijn en blijven arne bloeden tot d'ooren toe in de Schulden. De korthijt des tijds laet mij niet toe mij hier over verder uijt te breijden.

Indien Goede onder officiers en Soldaeten voor al Nederlanders of ten minste protestanten hadde Soude denk ik daer onder nog goede Posthouders gevonden konnen worden, maer onder de tegens woordige geen een als alleen den Sergeant A. Nusgen, welke onmogelijk kan gemist worden Deeze morgen is mij nog gerapporteert wederom een Complot van drie a vier Soldaeten gemaekt is om met een partij Slavinne naer Orinoque te Deserteeren, twelk men nu dit Schrijve bezig is te ondersoeken, en dit niet tegenstaende sij het exempel van Ad. Snel zoo vars voor oogen hebben.

U. E. G. A. mij d'Eer aengedaen hebbende te melden dat U. E. G. A. het Guarnisoen voor de

present engaged in putting up the dwellings and in bringing the Post into some order, and has some Caribs with him, whose number I shall greatly increase when sufficient bread has been planted and things are in a better state.

According to the report of these same Indians, the Spaniards have captured and carried off your Lordships' creole, Tampoko, together with an Indian slave belonging to my daughter, who had gone with him to buy birds and other things from the Indians up in Cuyuni; some of these Caribs even assert that the Indian slave has been killed.

The Postholder of Arinda not having come down the river, in spite of my reiterated commands, and not having executed any of my orders, and everything there being in confusion, I have placed one of the assistants under arrest here, and sent a subaltern officer up the river to bring down the Postholder, in order that I may inquire fully into the matter. In Maykouny, things are going at present well; in Moruka, fairly so.

The Posts are certainly, my Lords, of the greatest importance, both for the Honourable Company as well as for the Colony. If we could only be so fortunate as to get hold of some competent Postholders we should very soon have good results. But this was impossible up to the present, the bad behaviour of several of these men having brought that situation into contempt, and no respectable citizen, however much he may wish to, dares to ask for it; and with regard to the military, we cannot expect anything good from them. And yet, if there be any situation which will enable a man to put by a fair capital in a few years it is that of Postholder (with the exception of the one at Maykouny, who has little opportunity, but who, if of good behaviour, will be placed elsewhere when there is a vacancy).

The old De Scharde had held the Post of Moruka for about a year and a-half when he died, yet he left his son in Demerary a plantation with more than twenty slaves, and he was only beginning business. The Spaniards who had come hither with tobacco, hides, and other things, all have to pass his door, and some of them rest at his place. What would prevent him, if he were a man who understood his interests, from buying everything from them? If they could at his place get the merchandize they require they would not be so foolish as to come here for them, but far from doing that, these men are, and remain, blood poor, and up to their ears in debt. Want of time does not permit me to dilate further upon this.

If I had good under-officers and soldiers, especially Netherlands, or, at least, Protestants, I think it would be possible to find a few good Postholders among them; but among those I have at present there is not a single one except Sergeant A. Nusgen, who cannot possibly be spared. Only this morning I was informed that another plot had been formed by three or four soldiers to run away with a party of female slaves to Orinoco, which matter is being inquired into whilst I am writing this, and this in spite of their having such a recent example in the case of Ad. Snel.

Your Lordships having done me the honour to inform me that your Lordships had decided upon

A Colonie op veertig man bepaelt hadden (waerlijk veel te weijnig voor de twee rivieren) heb ik geen recruten gepetioneert maer nu meer als de helft van het Guarnisoen haer tijd bijnae uijtgedient hebbende en om haer ontslag aenhoudende, neem ik de vrijheijt U. E. G. A. om een renfort van vijf en twintig man en een Tamboer te versoecken, konde daer onder een goed bequaem Constapel of twee weezen zoude van het grootste nut weezen en konnen waerlijk qualijk ontbeert worden.

B Waer bij nogmaels mijn versoeck reitereere geene Fransche of Vlaminge. Voor de rest zoo veel doenlijk protestante de nabijheijd der Spanjaerden en voor al Spaensche Missien veroorsaeken dat op Roomsche in het geheel niet te vertrouwen is.

Wegens de reijs van d'Hr. Rousselet naer Orinoque heb ik d'Eer gehad U. E. G. A. verslag te doen.

Ik hope het Swerven en Spionneeren der Spanjaerden in Masseroenij en Cajoenij nu een eijnde Sullen nemen en door de Post in Cajoenij Efficacius gestuijt worden.

C Hard is het Ed. Gr. Achb. Heeren dat nabuurige en met den Staet geallieerde natien dus tot de ruine van haere nabuuren sig gedraegen onder het frivool en waerlijk belachelijk pretext van die Slaeven tot den Christelijken Godsdienst te brengen, een helder gewit graf maer van binne niet als vuile doods beendere wijl van alle haer Indiaensche en Swarte christenen (zoo genaemt worden) nog geen eene gesien hebbe die iets meer van den Godsdienst wisten als dat er een God was, en dat nog ter nauwernood, en met geheele verkeerde begripen van dat geducht opperweezen.

D Soo op het moment arriveert U. E. G. A. Criool Tampoko welke boven in Cajoenij gelicht door de Spanjaerden en Swaer geboeijd verder Landwaerds in gesonden, echter middel heeft weeten te vinden, niet alleen sig van de boeijen te ontslaen, maer door Orinoque afte komen en aen Angustura daer den Gouverneur woont, twee Negers mede te troonen, en met deselve naer hier te komen. Het is of die kaerel half met den Drommel omgaet want is qualijk te begripen hoe dit heeft weten uijt te voeren, Hij bericht mij den Indiaensche Slaef van mijn Dochter mede door zijn toedoen  
E ontsnapt achter aen komt met een partij Indiaenen, en mogelijk ook wat Sal mede brengen. Die Criool is waerlijk met geen gelt te betaelen om het nut dat men daer van heeft jammer is het dat als dronken is zoo assurant en brutael is, niets ontsiende.

a garrison of forty men for the Colony (really much too little for the two rivers) I asked for no recruits, but now that more than half of the garrison have served their time and are asking for their discharge, I take the liberty to ask your Lordships for a reinforcement of twenty-five men and one drummer. If there were a good competent constable or two among them they would be of the greatest use, for such men can really be ill dispensed with.

Herewith I will again reiterate my request that no French or Flemish be sent, but as many Protestants as possible. The proximity of the Spaniards, and especially of the Spanish Missions, renders it impossible to place the slightest trust in Catholics.

I have had the honour to report to your Lordships concerning Mr. Rousselet's journey to Orinoco.

I hope that the exploring and spying parties of Spaniards in Massaruni and Cuyuni will come to an end, and will be effectually stopped by the Post in Cuyuni.

It is hard, my Lords, that neighbouring and allied nations should thus seek to compass the ruin of their neighbours upon the frivolous and really ridiculous pretext of bringing the slaves into the Christian religion—a whited sepulchre filled with nothing but rotting bones—because of all their Indian and black (so-called) Christians I have not seen a single one who knows anything more of religion than that there is a God, and perhaps not so much as that, or with entirely erroneous ideas concerning the Supreme Being.

Only a moment ago there arrived your Lordships' creole, Tampoko, who, though having been captured up in Cuyuni by the Spaniards, and sent heavily chained further into the interior, managed to find some means not only to rid himself of his chains, but to come down through Orinoco, and to bring with him two negroes from Angostura, where the Governor lives.

The fellow seems to be in league with the Deuce, because it is difficult to understand how he managed to do all this. He tells me that the Indian slave belonging to my daughter also escaped with his assistance, and that he is coming on behind with a party of Indians, and that he will probably bring a few with him. This creole is really priceless, considering the services that are to be got out of him. It is a pity, nevertheless, that he is so insolent when he is drunk.

No. 421.

*West India Company to Director-General, Essequibo, March 9, 1767.*

F

(Extract.)

HET verplaatsen der Post in Cajoenij gaat dunkt ons zoo wel as het werk aan het Fort vrij langzaam voort, en zal het ons tot genoegen zijn te verneemen dat deeze beide werken, ingevolge de hoop die U. Ed. ons daar van geevd, eindelijk zullen tot stand gebracht.

WE think the erection of the Post in Cuyuni continues to be somewhat slow, as well as the work at the fort, and we shall be glad to learn that both these works have been completed finally, as your Honour led us to hope they would be.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, March 20, 1767.*

(Extract.)

DE Saek Barima en het geval van Rose aengaende, Sal ik d'Eer hebbe U. E. G. A. te melden dat wij zoo wel als de Spanjaerden de Rivier Barima als de limiet-Scheydingen der beide Jurisdictien considereeren, dus d'Oost wal Comp. territoir de West wal Spaensch.

Uijt vreeze dog (wyl bequaeme en voorsigtige menschen ontbreken) en wyl dit werk zoo gevaerlijk voor de Spanjaerden als voor ons wierd, vreezende zeg ik dat mijn afgesondene aen de Westwal mede soude komen heb ik in twee Consecutive brieven den Gouverneur van Guajana omstandig kennis van deeze Saek gegeven en gevraegt of eenige manschap geliefde te Senden om gezamenderhand dit nest uijt te roeijen.

Sijn Ed. heeft die brieven niet beantwoord, maer mij mondeling door Vicente Franco een der voornaemste ingesetene van Guajana laeten Seggen, dat het hem ondoenlijk was daer volk te zende om de verre distantie, manquement van vaertuijgen, &c., en dat die quaeddoenders maer bij de kop moest laete vatten, &c.

Daer op heb ik den Posthouder van Maroco mijn bevelen gegeven maer uijt voorsigtigheijt belast de Spaensche wal te mijden, maer wat d'Eijlanden aengaende die in de rivier die niet te mijden, wyl deselve onzeker territoir waeren, en mijn bevelen zijn ook exact naegekomen, zijnde Rose aen onze wal geapprehendeert.

Den regel *extra territorium suum jus dicenti enim impune non paretur*, is my ten volle bekend maer is niet applicabel op de Resolutie van den Raed in deeze saek, wyl—

1. Doostwal onze jurisdictie zijnde den Raed haer bevelen aldaer kan doen respectteeren.

2. Om dat ik denke den Raed seker de macht heeft haer borgers en ingesetenen te verbieden naer eenige plaetsen te gaen, welke deselve denkt onbehoorlijk of gevaerlijk voor de Colonie to wezen.

\* \* \* \*

Nu sal d'Eer hebbe de nog overige onbeantwoorde articuls van U.E.G.A. hoogst geEerde vorige missivens zoo verre ten tijd mij sal permitteeren, bij de hand te nemen, beginnende met die van den 19 Junij, komt mij eerst voor het articul van de Posthouders.

Seker is het dat men hoe langer hoe meerder ontwaer wordt, die saek van d'aldergrootste aengelegenheijt voor den dienst van d'Ed. Comp. en behoud der Colonie is, ik heb tot nu toe geen eeue welke seggen kan goed te wezen, selfs passabel en ben selver genoodsaekt geweest die van Arinda welke een week of vier in arrest aen het Fort is geweest, weder naer die post te laeten gaen, geen bequaem subject hebbende konnen bekomen om in zijn plaets te senden, niet tegenstaende aen alle zijde hebbe laeten informeeren. De Mulatten van dit land welke de taelen verstaende nog het bequaemste soude wezen zijn veel te luij, en willen volstrekt onder geen verband of subordinatione staen geene de minste ambitie besittende, en geen gelt achtende is daer niets mede te doen zoo dat zoo lange geen goede militaire bekomen, geen middel tot redres vinde kan.

\* \* \* \*

U.E.G.A. hebben een seer goed voor uijtsigt gehadt, aengaende den Indiaen Spion van de [1696—3]

CONCERNING the matter of Barima and the case of Rose, I shall have the honour to inform your Lordships that we, as well as the Spaniards, regard the River Barima as the boundary division of the two jurisdictions, the east bank being the Company's territory, and the west bank Spanish.

Fearing, however, because there is a dearth of competent and discreet persons, and because the work was getting as dangerous for the Spaniards as for us—fearing, I say, that my envoy would also come to the west bank, I have in two consecutive letters given the Governor of Guayana a circumstantial account of the matter, and asked him to send some men to help us clear out this nest.

His Honour did not answer those letters, but sent me a verbal message by Vicente Franco, one of the principal colonists of Guayana, that it was impossible for him to send men on account of the great distance and the lack of boats, &c., and that the best thing would be to let those evil-doers fight it out.

Thereupon I sent the Postholder of Moruka my orders, but was careful to charge him to avoid the Spanish bank, but that he was not to avoid the islands lying in the river, because these were uncertain territory. He followed my orders faithfully, Rose having been apprehended on our shore.

I am fully acquainted with the rule, *Extra territorium suum jus dicenti enim impune non paretur*; but it is not applicable to the Resolution of the Court in this matter, because—

1. The east bank being in our jurisdiction, the Court can enforce its order there.

2. Because I think that the Court certainly has the power to forbid its citizens and colonists to go to any places when such is considered to be inexpedient or dangerous for the Colony.

\* \* \* \*

Now I shall have the honour to take up the remaining unanswered Articles in your Lordships' former letters, so far as time will permit me.

In reply to your Lordships' letter of the 19th June, I come first to the Article concerning the Postholders.

It is certain that we are gradually becoming more aware how extremely important this matter is to the service of the Honourable Company and the maintenance of the Colony. Up to the present I have not had a single one that I could call good or even passable, and I have even been obliged to send the one from Arinda, who had been under arrest in the fort here for about four weeks, back to the Post, not having been able to find a proper person to send in his place, notwithstanding that I made inquiries on all sides. The mulattoes of this country, who, understanding the languages, would be the most fit, are much too lazy; they are, moreover, unwilling to submit to the least form of subjection, and having not the slightest ambition nor any desire for money, nothing is to be done with them, so that, as I have no good soldiers, I can find no remedy for this.

Your Lordships' prophecy concerning the Indian spy from the Spaniards was a perfectly

A Spanjaerde, wyl die waerlijk middel heeft weten te vinden om te chapeeren. Maer men kon hem niet eeuwig gevangen houden, en de Post in Cajoeny nu weder in besit genoomen zijnde is daer zoo veel niet aengelegen.

Ongelukkig is het dat den Posthouder aldaer den gemeenen lot van alle die daer eerst komen heeft moete betaelen hebbende een seer Swaere siekte gehadt waer van nog niet heel herstelt is.

B Hebbe hem om redenen in mijne voorige genelt nog geen militairen toegevoegt maer twee bijleggers d'Indiaensche taelen kundig, zoo vernemen zijn de hujsingen opgericht en groote brood tuijnen geplant waer mede dagelijx word gecontinueert, en d'Indiaenen beginnen sagjes aen daer naer toe te vloeijen.

Goud of zilver onder of bij die piramiden te wezen geloof ik niet, maer zij hebben deselfde naem onder d'Indiaenen als de plaetsen daer de metaelen gevonden worden, to weten dat den Jawaho dat is den Sathan daer zijn woonplaats heeft.

C En dat om die streek en wel voor al in Cajoeny rijke mijne van die metalen zijn, geloof ik zoo zeker als mijn eijge existensie en denke daer wel gegronde redenen toe te hebben.

Ik sal trachten een goed Eerlijk Tolk te bekomen en die gevonden hebbende onder Eede laete brengen.

Op den bijstand der Caraibane kan ik staet maken indien geweld met geweld gekeert moest worden, maer zoo lang domstandighede sagte middelen vereyschen, niets ter waereld Haere verbittering is ingewortelt en groot tegens die Spanjaerden.

D Heden is U.E.G.A. Criool Tampoko volgens mijne aen hem gegeve bevelen afgeweest en heeft mij rapport gedaen den Posthouder in Cajoeny genoegsaem herstelt was. Dog dat den Capucijn van de missie digt bij die rivier sijn dagelijx werk anders niet was als d'Acuwaijen en Caribis tegens malkandere op te Stoken, en dus die geheele rivier in rumoer bragt Die Criool deed mij lagchen seggende, als mijn Heer en Meester mij ordre geeft, sal ik binne drie weken die Pater handen en voeten gebonden hier aen het fort brengen, en waerlijk hij soude het doen zoo gelove.

E Ik antwoorde hem sig wel moest wachten niets ter waereld tegens de missie t'ondernemen, maer dat een wakend oog op alle de verrigtingen der Spanjaerden moest houden, en de Caribis uijt mijn naem wel expres verbieden onze onderhoorige Acuwaye te molesteeren. Het welk hij aengenomen heeft.

correct one, because the man has really managed to escape. But he could not have been kept a prisoner for ever, and the Post in Cuyuni now being re-established, it does not matter so much.

It is unfortunate that the Postholder there has had to pay the usual toll exacted from all who go there for the first time, he having had a severe illness from which he has not yet quite recovered.

For the reasons given in my former letters I have not yet sent him any soldiers, but two assistants who are acquainted with the Indian languages. I hear that the dwellings are constructed, and large bread-gardens are planted; this work is being daily continued, and the Indians are beginning to come in slowly.

I do not think there is any gold or silver under or near those pyramids, but they are called by the same name amongst the Indians as those places where those metals are found, to wit, that the Jawaho, that is, Satan, has his dwelling-place there.

And that there are rich mines of those metals in that district, and especially in Cuyuni, I believe to be as certain as my own existence, and I think that my reasons for such belief are well-grounded.

I shall try to get a good honest interpreter, and having found such an one will bind him by oath.

I can rely upon the assistance of the Caribs in case we have to meet violence with violence, but so long as circumstances demand soft measures they are no earthly use to me, their hatred against the Spaniards being deep-rooted and great.

Your Lordships' creole, Tampoko, has come down the river to-day according to my instructions, and has reported to me that the Postholder at Cuyuni was fairly well again, that the Capucine of the Mission close to the river was daily engaged in inciting the Acuways and the Caribs against each other, and that in this way he was spreading trouble throughout the river. The creole made me laugh by saying, "If my lord and master gives me orders to do so, I will bring the priest here to the fort within three weeks, bound hand and foot," and I really believe he would do it.

I told him that he must be very careful not to undertake the least thing against the Mission, but that he must keep a watchful eye upon all the doings of the Spaniards, and expressly forbid the Caribs, in my name, to molest our Acuway subjects. All of which he promised to do.

No. 423.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, March 23, 1767.*

F

(Extract.)

IK verlang seer naer tijding van Cajoeny wyl gistere een briefje van den Directeur van der Heijde ontvangen is waer in melt dat de Criool Tampoko by zijn zoon op Oud Duynenburg gekomen was en gerapporteert hadde een partije Indiaenen van de Spaensche missien gesonden de Post overvallen en geheel geplundert hadde, en dat ging vernemen wat daer van was. Die Post steekt de Spanjaerde vreeslijk in het oog en moet

I AM anxious to have some tidings from Cuyuni, because I received a note from Director van der Heyde yesterday in which he informs me that the creole, Tampoko, had been to see his son at Old Duynenburg, and had reported that he had heard from a few Indians that a party of Indians had been sent by the Spanish Mission to make a raid upon the Post, and had completely sacked it, and that he was going to find out how true

haer Seker in eenige gewigtige oogmerken seer hinderlijk wezen. Zoo drae Sekere tijding hebbe sal ik met den Raed overwegen wat ons te doen Staet.

that was. That Post is a terrible eyesore to the Spaniards, and there is no doubt that it stands in the way of their attaining some important aims. As soon as I have reliable tidings I shall deliberate with the Court what is to be done in the matter. A

## No. 424.

*Director-General, Essequibo to West India Company, March 27, 1767.*

(Extract.)

B

ZOODAT Ed. Gr. Achb. Heeren (gelieve UEGA niet qualijk te nemen dat mij zoo vrijmoedig uitdrukke het gewigt van de saek dringt mij daertoe) indien men de ruine van de colonie wil praevenieeren de drie volgende punten ernstig in overweging genomen diende te worden en zoo spoedig mogelijk in het werk gestelt.

1<sup>o</sup>. Bij het Hof van Spangen aentehouden om redres op de grieven en middelen aldaer te versoecken om d opperhoofden tot gehoorsaemheid aen de bevelen van Sijn Catholique Majesteijt te brengen, want sij laechen daer waerlijk mede.

2<sup>o</sup>. Twee goede gewapende en wel bemande uijtleggers een in de mond en een buijte de rivier om een eijnde van al de desertien te maeken.

3<sup>o</sup>. De bevestiging van Demerarij opdat niets die rivier uijtgae sonder gesien te worden.

En indien geen redres bij het Hof van Spanje verkregen kan worden, represailles te gebruiken tegen de missien op onse grense selver op ons territoir gelegen wanneer denke wel tot rede gebragt zoude worden.

Dit is in het kort Edele Groot Achbaere Heeren wat denke verplicht te wezen UEGA voor te dragen.

THEREFORE (may it please your Honours not to take it amiss that I express myself so frankly—the importance of the matter forces me to it), if it is desired to prevent the ruin of the Colony, the three following points should be taken into serious consideration and be put into effect as soon as possible:—

1. To insist with the Court of Spain upon redress for the grievances, and to ask there for measures to make those in command obey the orders of His Catholic Majesty, for they really laugh at them.

2. Two good, armed, and well-manned coast-guards, one in the mouth and one outside the river, to put an end to all the desertions.

3. The fortifying of Demerara, in order that nothing go out of that river without being seen.

And if no redress can be obtained at the Court of Spain, to use reprisals against the Missions, situated on our frontier, even on our territory; I think they would then be brought to reason.

This is concisely what I think it my duty to propound to your Honours.

C

D

## No. 425.

*Director-General, Essequibo (in Demerary), to West India Company, June 27, 1767.*

(Extract.)

DE Heer Spoors heeft mij per missive verslag gedaen dat drie Spaensche deserteurs in Essequibo zijn aengekomen waer onder een sergeant, voorgevende om de harde behandelingen van den Nieuwen Gouverneur gedeserteert zijn, ik hebbe sijn Ed. immediaet geantwoord dat ik versogt deselve per eerstvoorkomende gelegentheit uijt de Colonie versonden mogten worden. Niet wetende wat hier achter kan Schuylen, en dit werk geheel niet vertrouwende en wel te meer wijl den handel met Orinoque volstrekt gesloten is Selver de Visscherije absolut belet word, t welk noijt te vooren geschied is en t geen U. E. G. A. plantagien en de geheele Colonie in de grootste verlegentheid brengt.

En met die selfde occasie ontfang ik rapport van de post in Cajoeny dat d'Indiaenen omgekogt en zoodanig opgestookt worden dat niets ter waereld voor den Posthouder willen doen en Selver wanneer hij de voorbijgaende vaertuijgen belast aen te leggen om te zien of geen weglopers in zijn zij sulks halsterrig weijgeren en wanneer dreijgd op haer te schieten zij antwoorden zij pylen en boogen hebben om te antwoorden.

MR. SPOORS sent me word in writing that the Spanish deserters have arrived in Essequibo, and that there is a sergeant among them. They give the harsh treatment of the new Governor as a reason for deserting. I immediately answered him saying that I wished them to be sent out of the Colony at the first opportunity, for I do not know what there may be behind this; I do not trust the whole business, especially since commerce with Orinoco is entirely stopped, and even the fishery is absolutely at a standstill, which has never happened before, and which is exceedingly embarrassing to your Lordships' plantations and to the whole Colony.

At the same time I received a report from the Post in Cuyuni that the Indians are being bribed and incited to such a degree that they are unwilling to do the least thing for the Postholder, and that when he orders them to go alongside the passing boats to see whether there are any runaways in them, they obstinately refuse to do so, and when he threatens to shoot upon them they reply that they have bows and arrows with which to answer.

E

F

A Dus de versterking dier twee posten, namentlijk Cajoeny en Maroco hoe langer hoe meerder van duyterste noodsaekeljkheyd wordende (zijnde Selver *periculum in mora*) zoo hoop ik met de Laurens en Maria goed volk en voor al Protestanten sullen komen.

The fortification of these two Posts, Cuyuni and Moruka, becoming a matter of greater necessity every day (these being, indeed, *periculum in mora*), I hope that some good soldiers, and especially Protestants, will be sent by the "Laurens en Maria."

---

No. 426.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, June 27, 1767.*

B

(Extract.)

UIJT mijne voorige zullen UEGA gezien hebben de post in Cajoenij reets in ordre is (uijtgesondert eenige militairen).

FROM my proceeding letter your Honours will have seen that the Post in Cuyuni is already in order (except a few soldiers).

---

No. 427.

*Director-General, Essequibo (in Demerary), to West India Company, July 24, 1767.*

(Extract.)

C

IK hebbe rapport ontvangen van den Posthouder van Maroco dat door de quade behandelingen van den jegenswoordigen Gouverneur van Orinoque alle de Warouwen welke bij duysende op d'Eijlanden in de mond van Orinoque wonen van daer vlugten, en reets bij honderden in Barima zijn aengekome. Dus word onze visscherije voor het toekomende onherstelbaer den bodem ingeslaegen ten zij die natie mogt resolveeren geweld met geweld te keeren daer talrijk genoeg toe zijn, maer de moed ontbreekt sijnde van alle d'ons bekende natien, die geene welke het

I HAVE received a Report from the Postholder of Maroco that on account of the bad treatment received at the hands of the present Governor of Orinoque, all the Warouws, thousands of whom live on the islands in the mouth of Orinoco, are fleeing from there, and that hundreds of them have already arrived in Barima. Our fishery is therefore knocked on the head for some time, unless that nation should resolve to exchange blow for blow; they are numerous enough to do so, but courage fails them, for of all the nations known to us it is the one which is most afraid of fire-arms.

D

meest voor schietgeweer bevreest zijn.

---

Inclosure in No. 427.

*J. Bakker, at Fort Zeelandia, to Director-General, Essequibo, June 20, 1767.*

Wel Edele Geboren Gestrenge Heer En Hoog Geagte Vader,

IN closa het lijsje dat in mijn voorgaende hebbe vergeeten ik heb gisteren een bal gehad, met DHeer & Mevrouw Rousselet over het  
E wegsenden van de Spanjaerden, daer sijn gisteren twee vertrokken voornaemde Heer & Mevrouw hebben gesegt dat zij wettelijk daer tegen Protesteeren (Seekerlijk tegen U. W. E. Geb ende Heer Spoors) dat een Commandant en een Sergeant in haer huijs komt, en met geweld, haer wettelijke bediende uijt het huijs haeld, B: daer is geen geweld gebruikt want toen ik de menschen seijde dat zij vertrekken moesten, sijn zij sonder een Woord tegenspreken gegaen, daer is een cruwel leeven geweest, Rousselet vroeg mij, of ik hem sulcks wel durfden schriftelijk geven dat ik die Spaenjaerden weg sond, ik seijde  
F Ja dat ik dat wel doen konde maer dat ik het niet wilde doen.

Nu van agteren kooft het slinften nog, twee sijn er nu weg, daer sijn er vier geweest, Mevrouw Rousselet segt dat sij er een van weg gejaegt heeft, en den anderen is op mij Suijker Plantagie, ik heb versogt hem te Laeten haelen, Mevrouw gaf mij ten antwoord, dat wil ik niet doen, ik heb wederom versogt of ik hem mogt Laeten haelen (on hem in t Fort te setten, dat hij ook niet Weg

Honoured Sir and Father, *June 20, 1767.*

INCLOSED is the small list that I inclosed in my last letter. I had a fine dance yesterday with Mr. and Mrs. Rousselet concerning the sending away of the Spanish; two of them departed yesterday. The aforesaid gentleman and his wife said that they legally protested (no doubt to you, Sir, and Mr. Spoors) against a Commandant and a sergeant coming to their house and forcibly fetching their lawful servants out of it. But no force was used, for when I told the people that they must go, they went without a word of opposition. There was a terrible noise. Rousselet asked me whether I dared to give it to him in writing that I sent the Spaniards away. I told him that I could do so, but that I would not.

The worst is now to come. Two of them are now gone. There were four of them. Mrs. Rousselet says that she drove one of them away, and that the other was on her sugar plantation. I asked her to send for him, but she answered that she would not. I again asked her whether I could send for him myself (to place him in the fort, that he might not run away). She



loopt) zij gaf my ten antwoord, dat versta ik niet dat gij met volk aen mijn Plant. Sult komen, om daer menschen van af te haelen, soo dat ik die Spanjaert tot dus ver nog niet hier hebben, ik soude wel een half boek papier nodig hebben om U. E. G. A. alles soo omstandig te Schrijven, soo als het voorgevalle is Nog seijde Mevrouw waerom worden die Spanjaerden die, bij de Heer Persik sijn niet versonden, en waerom word Louis uijt den hof niet versonden, daer op seijde de Heer Rousselet is dit hier dan geen vrij lant, Mevrouw antwoorde neen mantje Lief dat siet gij wel dat dit geen Vrij Land is, ik ben ten eersten na de Heer Spoors gegaen, en heb van alles seer wel rapport gedaen.

Soo op het oogenblik send ik den sergeant aen het huijs van Rousselet om te vraegen, of die Spanjaert nog niet overgekomen is Van de Plant. Mevrouw Laet mij weer te rug seggen dat hij van de morgen vroeg overgekomen is, maer dat hij nu weg is, endat zij niet waer hij is, soo dat ik seker geloof dat die Spanjaert weg is, dat is fraeij dat men Schurker de baen opent om weg te kunnen gaen, dat Laet ik nu verder aen U. W. E. Geh. oordeel over.

answered me, "I forbid you to go to my plantation with soldiers to fetch people from there," so that up to the present I have not the Spaniard here.

I should require half a ream of paper to give you a full account of everything as it happened. The lady also said, "Why are not the Spaniards sent away who are with Mr. Persik, and why is not Louis sent away out of the Court?" Here-upon Mr. Rousselet asked, "Is this not a free country?" His wife answered him, "No, my dear; you see very well that this is no free country." I went at once to Mr. Spoors and reported to him all that had happened.

I have just this moment sent the sergeant to Rousselet's house to see whether the Spaniard has come from the plantation, and Mrs. Rousselet sends word back to me that he arrived early this morning, but that he is gone, and that she does not know where he is, so that I certainly believe that that Spaniard has gone. This is a fine thing, that an opportunity is given the scoundrels to run away. I leave this to your further consideration.

Your obedient servant and son,  
(Signed) J. BAKKER.

#### No. 428.

*Statement of the Amsterdam Chamber of the West India Company to the States-General, July 28, 1767, in reply to the Memorial of the Shareholders of the Zeeland Chamber.*

(Extract.)

HIERVAN hebben vervolgens Hoofdparticipanten, door de Resolutie van hun Hoog Mog. in dato 2 September, 1751, communicatie bekoomen, en bij Missive in dato 30 November desselven jaars, na eenige onvoldoende rescontre van ons Berigt, wel gedeclareert geresolveert te zijn, omme Essequibo met alle haare onderhoorige rivieren van Rio Berbice af tot aan de Rivier Orinoco toe te blijven behouden; teffens voorslaande eenige Conditien en Voorwaarden, waarop de overgave soude geschieden.

En, met relatie tot de eerste bewijsreedenen, segt men, aangaande de natuur der Rivieren Demerarij in substantie, dat deselve even als Essequibo, welker distantie maar op ses a seeven mijlen word gerekent, ook behoort tot de soogenaamde wilde Kust aan de vaste wal van America gelegen, en dat derhalven daarop applicabel souden weesen hetgeen in de gedrukte Memorie van de Magistraat der Stad Middelburg en het betoog van Bewindhebberen der Kamer Zeeland, van de particuliere betrekking der Zeeuwen op die Kust is gesezt, namentlijk, dat bijzonder de Zeeuwsche ingezeetenen bij de ontdekking van die Kusten daarop het eerst gevaaren souden hebben, dat de Heeren Staaten van Zeeland Patroonen en Stigters van de Colonien aldaar genoemd worden, en bij vervolg ook den eigendom van deselve souden hebben geacquireert, en men urgeert eindelijk die bewijsreedenen met eene particuliere daarbij gevoegde aanmerking, dat dit bijzondere en sterke kragt souden hebben om het privatif regt van de Zeeuwsche Hoofdparticipanten, op Demerarij soowel als Essequibo te toonen, om dat, namentlijk Demerarij gelegen is tusschen de beide verst uitgestrekste Handelplaatsen of Posten op Essequibo, te weeten de eene noordwaards aan de Rivier Morocco, en de andere aan die van Maij-

UPON the States-General's Resolution of the 2nd September, 1751, this was then communicated to the Chief Participants, who, by missive of the 30th November of that year, after certain inadequate arguments against our Report, did declare their determination to continue to keep Essequibo with all the rivers appertaining thereto, from Rio Berbice as far as the River Orinoco, at the same time submitting certain conditions and stipulations on which the transfer was to be made.

And as for the first argument, the substance of what is said concerning the nature of the River Demerara is this: that this river, just like Essequibo, whose distance is reckoned at only 6 or 7 miles, also belongs to the so-called Wild Coast, situate on the continent of America; and that, consequently, there applies to it what was said concerning the particular interest of the Zealanders in that coast in the printed Memorial of the Magistracy of the city of Middelburg, and in the manifesto of the Directors of the Chamber Zeeland, namely, that the inhabitants of Zeeland in particular were the first to navigate upon those coasts when they were discovered, that the Estates of Zeeland are named Patroons and Founders of the Colonies there, and that, therefore, they also have acquired the ownership of the same, to strengthen which arguments a special passage is appended, urging that this is of especial and great force to demonstrate the exclusive right of the Zeeland Chief Participants to Demerara as well as to Essequibo, inasmuch as Demerara is situate between the two most extreme trading-places or posts on Essequibo, namely, the one to the north, on the River Moruka, and the other to the south, on the River Mahaicony, and that it, therefore, undeniably appears that Demerara is

A kounij zuidwaards, en dat dus ontegenséggelijk souden blijken, dat Demerarij aan Essequibo onderhoorig zij, en beide tesaamen een de deselve Colonie soude uitmaaken.

Maar behalven dat bij ons eerste Berigt aan haar Hoog Mog. in dato 19 Januarij 1751 reeds hierteegen is geremarqueert, dat niet alleen uit publicque geschriften genoeg consteert, dat op die kust ook uit Holland en van elders equipagien zijn gedaan, en dat mitsdien dit pretense vaaren der Zeeuwsche ingezeetenen op die Kust aan hun geen privatif regt van eigendom geeven kan, en behalven dat al wijders ook deese toeëigening van

B Demerarij, welke sig de Zeeuwsche Hoofdparticipanten tragten te doen, op fundament dat Demerarij onderhoorig aan, en een en deselve Colonie met Essequibo soude weesen, steunt op de adsumptie en vaste veronderstelling, dat seker en in confesso soude zijn hunne sustenue van privativen eigendom op Essequibo selve, waarvan nogtans de negative aan deese zijde met alle fiducie werd staande gehouden, en, soo wij ons verbeelden, op eene allesints voldoende wijze is geprobeert.

C Behalven dat alles, seggen wij, kan de situatie van de Rivier Demerarij, en de nabijheid van deselve aan die van Essequibo, als gelegen zijnde tusschen de hiervooren gemelde uitterste Handelsplaatsen van Essequibo, welkers uitgestrektheid alleen op de idées van Hoofdparticipanten berust, en die nog selve daaromtrent varieren, gelijk te sien is uit haare Missive van 30 November, 1751, aan haar Hoog Mogende geschreeven, alwaar zij de Limiten deeser Colonie geheel anders extendeeren, geen regt van eigendom aan Hoofdparticipanten geeven, eerstelijk, omdat zij ten eenemaal delicieeren in de probatie, dat, en de soo genoemde wilde Kust aan de vaste wal van America in het

D generaal, en die Handelsplaatsen in het bijzonder, aan hun in eigendom souden toebehooren, van welken grond nogtans het gesustineerde regt op Demerarij, in het systema van Hoofdparticipanten, eeniglijk afhangt, kunnende dit daaromtrent waar zijn, dat onder de directie der Kamer Zeeland, die vanweegen de generaale Nederlandsche West-Indische Compagnie de administratie voert over de Colonie Essequibo en de verdere Besittingen van de gesegde Compagnie aldaar, dewelke Demerarij alleen uitgesondert, tot nog toe van seer gering aanbelang zijn, de beide gementioneerde Posten, als in 's Compagnies naam, geëtablisceert

E zijn; maar dit heeft even soo weinig particuliere relatie tot de Colonie Essequibo als de directie die de Kamer Zeeland tog nog toe over de Colonie Demerarij voert, een bewijs is, dat deselve natuurlijk, per se, en onafscheidbaar aan Essequibo soude verknogt zijn, en dat inteegeendeel voor het overige de wilde Kust niet aan de Provincie Zeeland, nog aan de Kamer aldaar toebehoort, daarvan kan geen sterker bewijs werden gegeven, dan hetgeen suppediteert seker Contract in dato 18 Julij, 1669, en dus even voor de soo veelmaal gementioneerde Conventie van 11 April, 1670, en

F staande het oude Octroij, tusschen de Kamer Amsterdam voor en in de naamen van de Compagnie en den doenmaaligen Grave van Hanau geslooten, en vervolgens ter Vergadering van Neegentienen en ook door hun Hoog Mog. bij Resolutie in dato 24 Julij van het selve jaar 1669 geaprobeert, en uit welker Registers mitsdien daarvan blijken kan, als waarbij door de West-Indische Compagnie, op approbatie van hun Hoog Mog., aan hooggemelde Grave, op de conditien in dat Contract vermeld, word toegestaan, als een

subordinate to Essequibo, and both together constitute one and the same Colony.

But, in addition to our having already refuted this by saying (in our first Report to the States-General, dated the 19th January, 1751) that not only is it sufficiently certain from published writings that expeditions to that coast were also made from Holland and elsewhere, and that, therefore, this alleged navigation by the inhabitants of Zeeland upon that coast can give them no exclusive right of ownership; and, in addition to the fact that, furthermore also, this appropriation of Demerara which the Zeeland Shareholders are trying to effect for themselves, on the claim that Demerara is subordinate to, and is one and the same Colony as, the Colony Essequibo, rests upon their assuming and firmly supposing that what they sustain is sure and admitted, namely, that they have exclusive ownership of Essequibo—the contrary of which, however, our side has confidently maintained, and, we flatter ourselves, proven in a wholly satisfactory manner.

In addition, we say, to all this, the situation of the River Demerara, and its proximity to the River Essequibo, as lying between the aforesaid extreme trading-places of Essequibo (whose extent rests only on the ideas of the Chief Participants, who, moreover, are at variance among themselves on this point, as can be seen from their missive of the 30th November, 1751, to the States-General, in which they lay down the boundaries of this Colony in a very different manner), can give no right of ownership to the Chief Participants, firstly, because they absolutely fail to prove that both the so-called Wild Coast on the continent of America in general and those trading-places in particular belong to them as owners. Upon this ground, however, in the plea of the Chief Participants, their claim of a right to Demerara solely depends. This much may be true therein, that the two aforesaid Posts were, in the name of the Company, established there under the direction of the Zeeland Chamber, which, on behalf of the General Dutch West India Company, carries on the administration of the Colony of Essequibo and of the aforesaid Company's further possessions there, which, Demerara alone excepted, are as yet of very slight importance; but this is as far from having particular relation to the Colony of Essequibo as the fact that the Zeeland Chamber as yet manages the direction of the Colony of Demerara is from being a proof that the latter is naturally, *per se*, and inseparably, bound to Essequibo. On the contrary, no stronger proof can be given of the fact that the Wild Coast belongs neither to the Province of Zeeland nor to the Chamber there than that furnished by a certain Contract made under date of the 18th July, 1669 (and, consequently, a short time before the so often cited Convention of the 11th April, 1670, and while the old Charter was still in force), between the Amsterdam Chamber, for and in the name of the the Company, on the one hand, and the then Count of Hanau on the other, which Contract the Assembly of Nineteen, and also the States-General (by their Resolution of the 24th July of the said year 1669) subsequently approved, so that in their Registers proof hereof will be found. By this Contract, subject to the States-General's approval, the West India Company granted to the aforesaid Count, as a fief, on the conditions set forth in that Contract, a certain stretch of land, to be chosen

leen, seekere streeke lands, door dien Grave op de wilde Kust, tusschen Rio d'Oronocque en Rio de la Amasone, te kiezen, ter culture en opregting van eene colonie, en van welk leen, volgens het tweede Articul van dat Contract, aan de generaale Compagnie in den naame van hun Hoog Mog. het homagium moest werden gepresteert, en vervolgens bij versterf verheft, blijkende dus daaruit ten overtuigensten, dat niet de Heeren Staaten van Zeeland, nog Bewindhebberen ter Kamere aldaar, maar hun Hoog Mog. selve, en de generaale Nederlandsche Compagnie, onder hoogstderselver approbatie alleen over die Kust de dispositie competeerde, en dat dit ook alsoo bij de Kamer Zeeland, wier gemagtigdens het voorzijde Contract meede hebben geaprobeert, is begreepen. Van niet minder gewigt en applicatie ter rescontre der sustenue van Hoofdparticipanten, alsof de wilde Kust aan de Provincie Zeeland of de Kamer aldaar soude toebehooren, is het gebeurde omtrent de Colonie de Berbice in den jaare 1678, en dus maar weinige jaaren posterieur aan die selve Conventie van 1670, en in de beginne van het nieuwe Octroij, dat namentlijk alstoen Abraham van Peere, een ingezeeten van de bovengemelde Provincie, sig, ter bereiking van sijne oogmerken, om deselve Rivier en Colonie, geleegeen aan de Westkust [*sic*] in America, te bevaaren en behandelen, niet aan de Provincie Zeeland of de Kamer aldaar, maar inteegendeel, aan Bewindhebberen van de West-Indische Compagnie ter Vergadering van Tienen heeft geadresseert, en van deselve, ook sonder eenige oppositie van de Kamer Zeeland, heeft geobtineert, dat aan hem de voorzijde Colonie, als een onversterffelijk erfleen voor hem, sijne erven en nakoomelingen, aan de generaale Compagnie te verheergewaaden, is uitgegeeven, onder de autoriteit van hun Hoog Mogende, . . . .

De tweede reeden waarom het stilswijgen van Representanten en Bewindhebberen op de geadhieerde bijvoeginge van de meergemelde woorden, en annexe of onderhoorige Rivieren en Plaatsen, buiten fundament, door de Zeeuwsche Hoofdparticipanten word gesustineert te infereren een aveu, dat daaronder ook soude moeten begreepen worden Demerary, en dat dus van deese zijde ook in de overgifte dier Colonie consent soude weesen gedraagen, bestaat hierin, dat de natuurlijke betekenis van de benaaminge Essequibo en annexe of onderhoorige Rivieren niet is die, welke daaraan door de Zeeuwsche Hoofdparticipanten word geattribueert, namelijk, dat alle de plaatsen welke aan de vaste wal van de soogenaamde Wilde Kust geleegeen zijn, tusschen de bij Hoofdparticipanten selve, willekeurig gemaakte en op geene reeden steunende extensie van derselver Limiten, van Maroco tot Maykouny, of van Rio Berbice tot de Oronocque toe—annex, onderhoorig en onafscheidelijk souden wesen van de Colonie Essequibo, nemaar alleen deese, dat onder die beschrijving werden gecompheendeert de diverse Monden en Rivieren, uit Rio Essequibo oorspronkelijk en in deselve invallende, welke men op de kaarte vind gesigneert, sooals zijn Cajounij, Masserounij, Sepenouwij, en Magnouwe.

Want annex, onderhoorig en onafscheidelijk kan alleen dat gesezt worden, hetwelk met de saak daaraan men het heften wil eene directe en noodzakelijke communicatie heeft, hetzij door speciale acquisitien en gemaakte verbonden hetzij door een natuurlijke en inseparabe afhankelijkheid, in diervoegen, dat het als een geringer gedeelte van

by that Count, on the Wild Coast, between the River Orinoco and the River Amazon, for cultivation, and for the establishing of a Colony. For this fief, according to the second Article of that Contract, homage was to be rendered to the General Company, as representative of the States-General, and to be renewed at transfer through decease. From this, therefore, it most convincingly appears that neither to the Estates of Zeeland, nor to the Directors of the Chamber there, but only to the States-General themselves, and to the General Dutch Company under their approval, did the jurisdiction over that coast belong, and this was also thus understood by the Zeeland Chamber, whose Deputies joined in approving the aforesaid Contract. Of not less weight and pertinence in refutation of what the Chief Participants maintain (namely, that the Wild Coast belongs to the Province of Zeeland, or to the Chamber there) is what took place with regard to the Colony of Berbice in the year 1678, and thus but a few years posterior to that same Convention of 1670, and in the first years of the new Charter, for at that time Abraham van Peere, an inhabitant of the aforesaid province, in order to attain his objects, of navigating and trading to that river and Colony, situate on the Wild Coast in America, addressed himself neither to the Province of Zeeland nor to the Chamber there, but, on the contrary, to the Directors of the West India Company in the Assembly of Ten, from whom, and without any opposition on the part of the Zeeland Chamber, he obtained a grant, under the authority of the States-General, of the aforesaid Colony to himself, as a perpetual hereditary fief for himself, his heirs and descendants, subject to seigneurial dues to the General Company. . . . .

The second reason why there is no foundation for the claim of the Zeeland Chief Participants, that the silence of the Representative and the Directors respecting the alleged addition of the oft-mentioned words "and adjoined or subordinate rivers and places," implies an acknowledgment that under this term Demerara must also be included, and that therefore from our side consent has been given to the surrender of that Colony, consists herein, that the natural meaning of the expression "Essequibo and adjoined or subordinate rivers" is not that which the Zeeland Chief Participants attribute to it (namely, that all the places which are situate on the mainland of the so-called Wild Coast, between the boundaries which the Chief Participants themselves have arbitrarily and without giving any grounds therefor defined as extending from Moruka to Mahai-cony, or from Rio Berbice as far as the Orinoco, are "adjoined, subordinate to, and inseparable from," the Colony Essequibo), but, on the contrary, only this, that under that description are comprehended the various mouths and rivers, originating from Rio Essequibo or emptying into it, which are marked on the map, such as, for instance, Cuyuni, Massaruni, Sepenouwy, and Magnouwe.

For the words "adjoined, subordinate to, and inseparable from" can be applied only to that which has a direct and essential connection with the thing to which one seeks to attach it, either through express contracts and compacts made, or through a natural and inseparable dependence, in such manner that, as a lesser portion of a greater

A een grooter geheel, geconsidereert moet werden een *accessorium quid rei principalis* te zijn.

Dit nu heeft geen plaats omtrent Demerary, met relatie tot Essequibo, 'er zijn geene speciale Acquisitie of Verbonden, waardoor de eigenaars van Essequibo ook het dominium van Demerary zouden hebben verkreegen.

whole, it must be deemed to be an *accessorium quid rei principalis*.

Now, this is not the case with Demerara with relation to Essequibo; for there exist no special contracts or compacts through which the owners of Essequibo have also acquired the ownership of Demerara.

No. 429.

B

*Director-General, Essequibo (in Demerary), to West India Company, August 10, 1767.*

(Extract.)

EENIGE Caribischen van Boven Essequibo afgekomen hebben aen Diderik Nelis, boven bij de plantagie Oosterbeek woonende gerapporteert dat op de Post Arinda nog Posthouder nog bijlegger te vinden was, en in geen 14 daegen gezien waeren dat het Huys half geruineert en het Pakhuijs opengebroken en ledig was, En dat zij niet konde seggen of deselve vermoord of weg gelopen waeren.

C Nelis heeft hier van immmediaet aen het Fort verslag gedaen, en ik hebbe gelast daer naer toe te Senden om onderzoek des aengaende te doen.

Vermoord kan ik niet geloven wijl deeze twee de goedheid Selver waeren en geen Indiaen oijt beledigt, of zoude door een binnelandsche wilde natie geschied moeten zijn, maer dan soude de Caribis welke in zoo groot getal daer omtrent woenen in haer marsch ondekt moeten weezen, of moest door die Schurken selfs gedaen weezen om van haere Schulden bevrijd te zijn en de goederen te naderen.

D

\* \* \* \*

De Heer Spoors heeft mij gesonden de verklaring van eene Christiaan Winding, een Swerver, welke d Eer hebbe hier inne te Sluijten. Ik stelde vast dit deselfde Spanjaerden zijn over welke zoo een leven aen het Fort is geweest doen ik belast hadde deselve te versenden. Drie zijn versonden met Noord Americaensche barquen, eene welke men had laeten ontvlugten Swerft nog ergens in de Colonie Sonder ik kan ondekken waer sig ophoud. Wat doen sommige ingesetenen qualijk dat zij sulke menschen herbergen en verbergen.

E

A FEW Caribs, having come down from Upper Essequibo, have reported to Diderik Nelis, living up near the plantation Oosterbeek, that there is neither Postholder nor assistant to be found at Post Arinda, and that they have not been seen for fourteen days; that the house is half ruined and the warehouse broken open and empty, and that they could not say whether the men had been murdered or had run away.

Nelis immediately gave notice of this at the fort, and I have ordered some one to go up there and make inquiries into the matter.

I cannot believe that they were murdered, because these two men were kindness itself, and never offended any Indian, unless it be that the deed was done by a savage nation from the interior; but then the latter would have been discovered in their march by the Caribs, who live in such great numbers round about there, or it must have been done by those scoundrels themselves in order to get rid of their debts and obtain possession of the goods.

\* \* \* \*

Mr. Spoors has sent me the declaration of one Christiaan Winding, an itinerant trader, which I have the honour to inclose. I am almost certain that these are the same Spaniards concerning whom there was such a noise at the fort when I gave orders to have them sent away. Three have been sent away in North American vessels; one who had been allowed to escape is still roaming about in the Colony without my being able to discover where he is. How wrong it is of the colonists to harbour or conceal such people!

Inclosure in No. 429.

*Declaration made by Christiaan Winding in Essequibo, dated July 26, 1767.*

OP den 26 Julij, 1767, is C. Winding hier gekomen, en het volgende aengedient.

F Dat In de Maend van Meij (den dato onbepaelt) vier Spanjaerden, in Een kleijn Bootje heeft aengetroffen, in de Mond van Moeroeka, op de Plantagie van de Wed<sup>e</sup> Rouselet: welke Spanjaerden gewaepent waeren, met drie Snaphaenen, Een kogel bus, en ses Pistolen, die alle met Scherp gelaeden waeren, en nog 250 Scherpe Patroonen, 20 lb. kruijt in Een Sak en 40 lb. koogels in een Callebas.

Dese Spanjaerden quamen in het huijs bij D. Scherer, in Presentie van H. Rodemeijer, en Leyden de boven gem. Snaphaenen, &c., op en

ON the 26th July, 1767, C. Winding came here and declared as follows:—

That in the month of May, (no date fixed) he met four Spaniards in a small boat in the mouth of the Moeroeka, on the plantation of the widow Rouselet, which Spaniards were armed with three rifles, a blunderbuss, and six pistols, which were all fully loaded, and that they had 250 cartridges, 20 lbs. of gunpowder in a bag, and 40 lbs. of shot in a basket.

These Spaniards came into the house of D. Scherer in the presence of H. Rodemijer, and laid the above-mentioned guns, &c., upon and against

tegens de Tavel, en waerop ik C. Winding deselve aensag voor Spioonen, en heb een accoord met hem gemaekt, om die geweer en waepens van hen te koopen, om dat wij te Swak waeren, en geen Goeds daer nijt voor Spelde; Soo als ook geschiet is, hebbende van hun de boven gem<sup>e</sup> geweer, en verdere gemelde gekogt, en in voldoeninge gegeven 30 elle Taerling 40 Elle osnabrughs, en een order op de Heer Persik van f. 60: hebbende nu nog bij mij 2 Suaphaanen, en Ses Pistolen, zijnde de Kogelbus door het omslaen mijner Corjaer verloren, Een Suaphaen in het afschieten geborsten, en het kruijt door quaed weeder Nat geworden, hebbende deselve moeten overboord werpen, Eenige koogels heb Ik gebruikt, en hebbe nog Eenige daer van bij mij.

CHRISTIAEN WINDING.

*Rio Essequibo, dato ut supra.*

Getuigen:

MICHAEL ROTH.

A. VAN DOORN MOSESZ.

the table, whereupon I, C. Winding, looked upon them as spies, and I made an agreement with them to buy these fire-arms from them because we were too weak and the matter boded us no good; and so it happened, I having bought from them the above-monetioned fire-arms, and given them in payment 30 yards of taerling, 40 yards of osnaburgh, and an rder for 60 guilders upon Mr. Persik, I having still by me two rifles and six pistols, having lost the blunderbuss by the upsetting of my corial, and one rifle having burst in firing, and the powder having got wet in the rain I had to throw it overboard. I have used some of the shot, and have still some of it by me.

(Signed) CHRISTIAEN WINDING.

*Rio Essequibo, dated as above.*

Witnesses:

(Signed) MICHAEL ROTH.

A. VAN DOORN MOSES, Son.

No. 430.

*West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo, August 24, 1767.*

(Extract.)

DE anstelling van Pierre Martin tot Posthouder in Cajoenij a f16 pr. maand laten wij ons welgevallen, zoowel als het toevoegen aan denzelven van 9 Bijleggers, de Indiaansche taalen magtig a f8 pr. maand, en met zonderling genoege hebben wij de herstelling van denzelven vernomen vermits UEd. ons. melde, dat veel aan denzelven zoude worden verlooren; meermalen hebben wij gezegd, dat wij goede en bekwaarne Posthouders van zonderlinge nuttigheid oordeelden, en daarom kunnen wij ons wel conformeeren met de door UEd. daaromtrent gemaakte reflexie bij deselve missive in do. 8 Decemb. Ao. Po., en, ziju er eenige middelen uittedenken, om ordentelijke borgers te animeeren dat zig tot die posten laten gebruiken, zoo willen wij die gaarne vernemen, teneijnde deswegens onse gedagten naader te laten gaan, dog bij faute van dien zal UEd. zeer weel doen met bekwaame voorwerpen onder het garnizoen te blijven zoeken.

Met UEd. wenschen wij, dat het swerven en spionneeren der Spanjaarden in Masseroenij en Cajoenij zal zijn gestuit door de nieuwe post in Cajoenij.

Wat belangd het neemen van efficacieuse maatregelen tegens het deserteren van slaaven naar Orinoco en elders, zoo zijn wij van de noodzakelijkheid daarvan zoo zeer als iemand overtuigd, maar bij onse missive van den 9 Maart A. C. zeyden wij UEd. alreeds, hoe weinig effect wij van eenige representatien of instantien hier in Europa waaren verwagtede, in aanmerking van den uitslag, die de representatien ten verseeke van de Praesidiale Kamer Amst. ten opzigt der van Caracao naar de kusten van Cora, deserterende slaaven bij het Hov van Spanjen hadden gehad; om ons egter niets te kunnen reprocheeren hebben wij een commissie gestrekt aan den Heere Raad Pensionaris deeser Province, om aan denzelven van den toestand van zaaken verslag te doen, teneinde daarvan ter vergadering der Heeren Staaten, bij bekwaame gelegendheid onvertuure te geeven en het daarheenen te dirigeeren, dat de Heeren Ordinairis Gedeput-

[696—3]

THE appointment of Pierre Martin as Postholder in Cuyuni at 16 f. per month has our approval, as also the giving him two assistants, versed in the Indian languages, at 8 f. per month; and it has afforded us particular pleasure to learn of his recovery, inasmuch as you informed us that his would be a great loss. We have often said that we considered good and capable Postholders of especial moment, and therefore we can well indorse what is said by you in this connection in your letter dated the 8th December of last year, and if any means can be conceived to encourage respectable citizens to allow themselves to be employed for these positions, we should like to hear of them, in order to take them into further consideration; but, in the absence of such, you will do very well to continue searching among the garrison for fit persons.

\* \* \* \*

We join you in hoping that the wandering and spying of the Spaniards in Massaruni and Cuyuni may have been stopped through the new Post in Cuyuni.

As to taking efficacious measures against the running away of slaves to Orinoco and elsewhere, we are as much as anybody convinced of the necessity thereof; but in our missive of the 9th March of this year we already told you how little effect we were expecting from any representations or requests here in Europe, in view of the result obtained at the Court of Spain by the representations made at the request of the Presidial Chamber of Amsterdam, regarding the slaves absconding from Curaçao to the coasts of Cora. However, in order that we may have nothing wherewith to reproach ourselves, we have appointed a committee to report to the Pensionary of this province about the condition of affairs, in order that he may, when opportunity offers, lay the matter before the meeting of the Provincial Estates and bring it about that the Deputies to the States-General be instructed to urge in that body that Mr. Doublet van Groeneveld be requested to make the most

2 Q

**A** teerden ter Generaliteit zouden mogen worden gelast, ter vergadering van Hunne Hoog Moog. te insteeren, dat de Heer Doublet van Groeneveld zoude worden aangeschreeven, bij Zijne Catholijke Majesteit alle meest kragtige representation te doen, teneinde de van Essequibo cum annexis deserteerende slaaven naar de Spaansche colonien zouden mogen worden gerestitueerd zooals bevorens altoos tot eenige jaaren herwaarde was geschied, etc., en dit is alles wat wij hier te lande vermogen.

**B** En nopens de middelen van voorziening a costij te werke te stellen, namentlijk het equipereen en bemannen van twee uitleggers, tweeten een in de mond en een buiten de rivier, zoo refereenen wij ons ten deesen reguarde tot hetgeen wij bij onse voorsz. missive met relatie tot een uitlegger hebben gezegd. t' geen wij alhier voor gerepeteerd houden; . . . . .

**C** De aan ons gecommuniceerde oordeelkundige reflexien ten reguarde der stigters van de bewuste pijramides zijn zooveele kenmerken van UEd. ervarendheid in de aloude historien, en is er eenig middel om daaromtrent verdere ontdekkingen te doen of nauwkeurige afteekeningen te erlangen van derzelver situatie, groote, structuur en verdere uitwendige gedaante, zoude ons zulke bijzonder aangenaam zijn, en willen wij zulke van UEd. sagaciteit verhoopen.

**D** Zeer voorzigtig heeft UEd. gedaan van te gelasten om nietwes teegens de Spaansche missie in Cajoenij te ondernemen, maar een wakend ong op alle verrigtingen der Spanjaarden te houden, want een zoodanig kleijn beginsel zou dikwils aanleiding tot represailles van een veel erger natuur geven kunnen, en evenzoo heeft ook onse approbatie de insinuatie vanwegens UEd. aan den Caribbes gedaan doen, dat namentlijk de aan de Compagnie orderhoorige Accuwaijen niet moesten molesteren, welke waarschuwing wij hoopen van effect zal geweest zijn; inniddels wenschen wij van harten, dat de gerugten nopens die post, ons bij UEd. missive van den 23 Maart gecommuniceerd, onwaard zullen zijn bevonden, vermits wij die post voor ons van zeer veel aanbelang rekenen, waarom wij UEd. de conservatie van dezelve ook op het serieuste zijn aanbeveelende.

**E**

vigorous representations to His Catholic Majesty, to the end that the slaves deserting from Essequibo cum annexis to the Spanish Colonies may be returned, as has always hitherto been done until a few years ago, &c., and this is all we can do here in this country.

And as regards the means of prevention to be to be set on foot yonder, namely, the fitting out and manning of two outliers, to wit, one in the mouth of the river and one outside, we refer you in this connection to what in our aforesaid missive we said in relation to an outlier, which we consider as here repeated. . . . .

The judicious reflections communicated to us regarding the founders of the pyramids in question are so many proofs of your familiarity with ancient history, and if there is any means of making further discoveries about them or of obtaining accurate drawings of their situation, size, structure, and other outward features, such would be particularly agreeable to us, and we are disposed to hope for the same from your sagacity.

You have done very prudently in ordering that nothing be undertaken against the Spanish Mission in Cuyuni, but that a watchful eye be kept upon all the actions of the Spaniards, for so small a beginning may often give cause for reprisals of a much more serious nature. We likewise approve of the hint which you caused to be given in your name to the Caribs, namely, that they must not molest the Acuways subject to the Company, which warning we trust has been effective. In the meantime, we heartily hope that the rumours in regard to that Post, communicated to us by your letter of the 23rd March, may have been found untrue, inasmuch as we consider that Post as of great concern to us, for which reason we also must seriously recommend to you its preservation.

No. 431.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, September 6, 1767.*

(Extract.)

**F** WIJ verliesen seer veel aan Voorsz. E. Athing welke een braaf Eerlijk man was D'Indiaansche Talen volkomen kundig en d'alderbovenste Plantagie hebbende zoo goed was als een Posthouder trouw berigt doende van alles wat bij d'Indiaanen voorviel voor al onder de acuwaijen boven in Demerarij woonende een korsilige Natie geen het minste ongelijk komende verdragen en gestadig met de Caribanen in Oorlog.

Nu legt deze Rivier boven geheel bloot, 't welke vreesse veel verschillen met de Acuwaijen Sal veroorsaeken.

WE lose a great deal in E. Athing, who was an honest upright man. Perfectly acquainted with the Indian languages and having the uppermost plantation, he was as good as a Postholder, and faithfully reported all that took place amongst the Indians and especially amongst the Acuways living up in Demerary—a quarrelsome nation which will not endure the least injustice and which is continually at war with the Caribs.

The upper reaches of this river are now quite undefended, which I fear will lead to many differences with the Acuways.



Een lang Jaerige ondervinding heeft mij de Spanjaards maar al te wel Leeren kennen overtuijgt dat nog op de Plegtigste beloften Jaer Eeden niet het aldergeringste te rekenen is, rekende ik ook in het geheel daar niet op. Verre van mij dat ik de Spaanse Natie in het algemeen met sulke Slegte Sentimenten en trouwloosheid behebt soude denken in het tegendeel geloove daar onder soo wel als onder andere Natien braeve, Eerlijke lieden gevonden worden dog die zijn in Europa In America zeer dun gezaait.

Haere Gouverneurs in dese gewesten een volstrekte Despotique Macht oefenende zijn maar voor drie of ten langste voor vijf Jaeren, welken tijd sij besteden om al het Geld dat mogelijk is per fas en Nefas bij een te Schraepen d' Ingesetene op allerlei wijze drukkende en Plunderende op dat sij als haar tijd ge Eijndicht is wanneer twee Inquisiteurs van den Hoogen Raed met haar Successeurs komende om haar gehoude gedrag t' onderzoeken en bij welkers komste de klagten van alle Borgers Vrijstaan, deselve de hand konnen vullen en iets voor haar overhouden in welk geval de klagten mogen wesen hoe sij willen zoo blank als Sneeuw zijn en dat niet hebbende, in de Boeijen naer Spanjen gesonden worden.

De Roode daar komende Slaeven worden quansuijs Vrijverklaard, maar moeten op de Missien blijven daar meer werk moeten doen als bij ons. De swarten worden verkogt en het daar van provenieerende word gesezt in Konings Cas word gestelt, maar dat zijn Catholique Majesteijt daar veel van siet, Hoc Credat Judaeus Apella non Ego.

Den laesten Gouverneur van Orinocque is Slimmer geweest, maar omtrent drie Jaeren het Gouvernement gehad hebbende en Apparent in die korten Tijd niet genoeg hebbende konnen Schraepen, heeft het onderzoek niet afgewagt maar soo drae vernam dat zijn successeur op weg was, heeft hij een Bark daar zijnde genomen al zijn goed daar in gelaeden en over de dertig onser weggeloepe Slaeven mede nemende gevlugt, men weet nog niet waar nae toe.

En Echter word de Noodsakelijkheid van voorsiening hoe langer hoe grooter op UEGA. Plantagie Achtekerk is het wederom Seer nabij geweest en 9 Augusti hebben wij ondeckt dat op onse Plantagie Soestdijk wederom een Complot van bij de Twintig Slaeven gemaakt was om naar Orinocque te Deserteeren.

Dit is nu een Plantagie daar de Slaeven bij uijtnemendheid wel worden behandelt, noijt een dag rantsoen manqueeren noijt geen Slaegen als om d' aldergewichtigste Redenen krijgen.

En word hier in Demerarij nog en groot getal gemist welke men nog niet weet of in het Bosch of naar Orinocque zijn. voorleede week hebben de Arruwakken van Maheijka Twee Negers opgebracht van de Plantagie Nieuw Amsterdam gedeserteert, welke wij aanstonts Rijkelijk hebben laten betaelen en wel op kiltum getracteert.

\* \* \* \*

Het is een zekere zaak dat d' Ingesetenen Selver veel de Schuld van de menigvulge desertien zijn, den Raed heeft meer als eenslaten laeten verbieden niemand eenige Slaeven van haere Plantagien zoude senden, sonder een briefje van de Meester en elk gelast alle Slaeven welke op de Rivier saegen naer haar briefje te vraegen, en geen hebben naar het fort te brengen maar weij-

An experience of many years has made me only too well acquainted with the Spaniards, and being convinced that not the least reliance is to be placed either upon their most solemn promises or even upon their oaths, I place no trust in them at all. Far be it from me to impute such evil sentiments or such infidelity to the Spanish nation as a whole; on the contrary I believe that honest, upright people are to be found amongst them as amongst other nations; such are, however, but thinly sown in Europe and America.

Their Governors, who exercise an absolutely despotic power in these parts, are only appointed for three or at most for five years, a period which they employ in scraping together as much money as possible *per fas* and *nefas*, and in oppressing and plundering the colonists in every way in order that when their term of office has expired and two inquisitors are sent with their successor by the Supreme Council to inquire into their conduct and to receive the complaints which every citizen is then free to make, they may be able to fill the hands of these officials and still have something left for themselves, in which case, be the complaints what they will, they themselves will come out white as snow, though, if they have not anything, they are sent in chains to Spain.

The red slaves are ostensibly set free on arriving there, but are compelled to stay at the Missions where they have to do more work than with us. The black slaves are sold, and the proceeds are said to go to the Royal Treasury, but that His Catholic Majesty sees much of them *hoc credat judaeus Apella non ego*.

The last Governor of Orinoco was sharper. Having held office for about three years only, and having probably been unable to scrape enough together in that short time he did not wait for the inquiry, but as soon as he heard that his successor was on the way he took possession of a barque that happened to be there, and placing in it all his property he made off, taking with him more than thirty four runaway slaves; his destination is still unknown.

And really the necessity for adopting preventive measures is daily getting greater. There has again been cause for alarm upon your Lordships' plantation Achtekerke, and on the 9th of August we discovered that upon our plantation, Soestdijk another plot had been formed by about twenty slaves to run away to Orinoco.

This, too, is a plantation upon which the slaves are treated exceptionally well; their rations never fail for a single day, and they are never flogged except for most serious offences.

A great number, too, are missing here in Demerary, of whom it is not known whether they have gone into the bush or to Orinoco.

Last week the Arruwaks of Maheyka brought back two negroes who had run away from the plantation Nieuw Amsterdam; we at once rewarded them richly and treated them well to kiltum.

\* \* \* \*

It is certain that the colonists themselves are greatly to blame for the numerous desertions. The Court has more than once issued orders that on one should send out slaves from their plantations without a pass from their master, and everyone has been charged to ask any slaves they see on the river for their pass, and to bring them to the fort in case they have none. Few, however, have

A nig hebben gehoorsaamt, en al hadden geen briefjes geen een eenige is aangehaalt en aan het fort gebragt, en het volk van het fort welke noijt gaan sonder briefje hebben mij verscheijde Reijssen gesezt, nog noijt iemand naar haar briefje gevraagt hadde, als d' Ed. Comp. Directeuren.

Seker is het dat Indien dit bevel wel naar gekomen was, menig wegloper gevange zoude zijn, en al waeren maar een Stuk of drie zoude dog een Schrik onder de andere gebragt hebben.

B Den Criool Tampoko heeft aan den Commandant acht a tien dagen voor mijn tuijs komst komen Rapporteren dat de Posthouder en bijlegger op Arinda niet gedeserteert nog Dood geslaegen waeren maar dat de Natie der Manoaas alhier Magnauwen genoemd een Strop door het Land gedaan hebbende tot op de Post gekomen waeren en den Posthouder en bijlegger geligt en mede genomen hadden en de Goederen alle geroofd en de huizen geruineert hadden, Dese Natie zijn geallieerden van de Portugeesen van Brasil. Tampoko komt over 14 dagen weder af, wanneer hem naar boven Essequibo Sal Senden met een partij Caribisen om naauwkeurige Informatie.

C De Papieren en Boeken van den gebanne J. A. van Rosen hebbende laeten Examineeren vinde daar onder Een Missive van hem en Christiaan Finet (nu overleden) aan den koning van Pruijssen eene aan den graeve Tessin in Sweeden eerste Minister in die tijd en eene aan den Heer Rudenshold Lid der koninglike Accademie en Assessor van het Berg Collegie alle in het hoog duijtsch welke door Taalkundige hebbe laeten Translateeren en d' Eerhebbe tot Speculatie hier nevens aan UEGA. te Sende Sullende UEGA. hier uijt konnen zien, wat soort van Ingeseteene wij hier gehad en nog hebben.

D Die Schurk J. A. van Rosen is nu in Orinocque daar een Apotheecquers en Chirurgijns winkel op heeft en van waer soo hem mogelijk is niet veel Goeds aan de Colonie doen sal; hij moet zeker de hand in zijn Vlucht geboden zijn wijl het niet mogelijk is hij met het kleijne Mossel Schulpje van een Corjaar waar mede van het fort gevlugt is, die reijse gedaan heeft, maar heeft groote beschermers gehad, ook geloove onderdaene van den Koning van Pruijssen aan welke sijne handelingen E geen wind Eijeren gelegd hebben.

Daer loopt hier een gerucht dat de Post in Cajoeny weder afgelopen zoude zijn of waer is weet ik niet want hebbe nog geen tijding direct van boven. Gisteren is den Ouden Neger Abarina welke altoos in Cajoeny Schildpaede voor de Post-huijsen is gaen ruijlen en alle de weegen daer bekend zijn naer boven vertrokken om informatie te nemen,

obeyed this order, and although slaves have gone about without passes, not one has been stopped and brought to the fort. The slaves belonging to the fort, who never go out without a pass, have frequently told me that no one has ever asked them for their pass except the Directors of the Honourable Company.

It is certain that if this order had been observed many a runaway would have been caught, and even had it been only two or three it would still have frightened the others.

The creole Tampoko came to the Commandant about eight or ten days before my return and reported that the Postholder and assistant at Arinda had not run away, nor been killed, but that the nation of the Manoaas, here called Magnauws, had been making a raid through the country and had come to the Post and carried off both the Postholder and the assistant; that they had taken all the goods and destroyed the buildings. This nation is an ally of the Portuguese of Brazil. Tampoko is coming down again in a fortnight's time, when I shall send him up the Essequibo with a party of Caribs to obtain full information.

Having had the papers and books of the exiled J. A. van Rosen examined I find amongst them a letter from him and Christiaan Finet (now deceased) to the King of Prussia, another to Count Tessin in Sweden, Prime Minister at that time, and another to Mr. Rudenshold, member of the Royal Academy, and Assessor of the Mining Board all written in German; which I have had translated and have the honour to send herewith for your Lordships' inspection, so that your Lordships may be able to see what kind of colonists we have had and still have.

That scoundrel J. A. van Rosen is now in Orinoco, where he has started business as an apothecary and surgeon, and where, if he gets the opportunity, he will not fail to do this Colony harm; he must undoubtedly have been aided in his flight, because he could not possibly have performed that journey in the corrial as large as a mussel-shell in which he escaped from the Fort. He had powerful protectors, also probably subjects of the King of Prussia, who derived no small advantage from his dealings.

There is a rumour here that the Post in Cuyuni has again been raided. I do not know whether it is true, because I have as yet had no direct tidings from above. The old negro Abarina, who always looks after the turtle business up in Cuyuni, and who is well acquainted with all the roads there, went up stream yesterday to get information.

F

Inclosure 1 in No. 431.

*Adolph von Roosen in Essequibo to Monsigneur Tessin, Prime Minister to the King of Sweden.*

Hoch Edler Hoch Gebuhrner Herr,  
Ew. Hochgebohrnen gelieben zu geruhen dass  
mir erkühne eine Sache von grosser angelegentlich

Most Noble Lord, July 20, 1749.  
MAY it please your Lordship to forgive me for  
being so bold as to bring to your notice a matter

bekandt zu machen dieweil vernommen dass alhier zwischen Oronoco u etc. ein grosses u sehr fruchtbahres Landt unbewont u wuste lieget mit zweij grosse Revirs oder viel mehr Flüsse, der erste von hier Barima der zweite Fluss Wijne an den Mund von Orronoco u ich vernommen dass solches Land Ihro Durchlauchten den König von Schweden erb u eigenthümlich zu kommen u solches Land grosse Summen jährlich konte aufbringen, als es bebaut u befläntzet würde, der Grundt ist sehr fruchtbahr vor Zucker, Coffe, Cacao Indigo, Catoen, Reiss, Roskou, etc., u die Welder vol kostbahr Holtzwerck, als Cedern, Conotepi, Locus u dergleichen von unterschieden Farben, darbeij sehr hart.

Als Ihro Königl. Maj. geliebten solches Landt freij zu geben um zu bebauen solten sich alhier unterschiedene Burger u eingessener finden die dar nach zu reisten um Plantagies an zu legen, wan Ihro Königl. Majestaten nur vor erst ein klein Batterie von 5 a 10 caunonen mit 30 man soldaten besetzt zur besatzung, alda halten wolten, die hier zu erfoderte Unkosten konnen in einige Jahre wieder doppelt ersetz werden, man Proesumirt dass alhier auch Gold u Silber irtze zu finden seijn, u darf sich niemandt da hin begeben, die weil es noch nicht freij gegeben. Als nun so vorhalt Ihro Königl. Maj. gesonnen seijn selbes Landt freij zu geben, so ersuche ganss unterthänigst Ew. Hoch Gebohrnen gnädigste Antwort hier auf, wie Ew. Königl. Maj. selbiges gelieben gehalten zu haben, hiermit Empfehle mich in Ew. Hoch gebohrnen Protection u bleibe zu allen zeiten Ew. Hoch Gebornen

Herrn dienst schuldigster Knecht,

ADOLPH VON ROSEN.

*Essequibo den 20 Julij, 1749.*

of great importance. I have heard that between Orinoco and Essequibo there lies a large and most valuable tract of uninhabited and desert land with two large rivers or rather streams. The first from here is called Barima and the second Waini lying at the mouth of Orinoco, and I have heard the said land belongs to the King of Sweden and could be made to yield large sums annually if it were cultivated or planted. The soil is very fertile for sugar, coffee, cocoa, indigo, cotton, rice, &c., and the woods are full of valuable kinds of timber such as cedar, conotepi, locus and others of different colours, and very hard.

Should it please His Majesty to throw this land open for cultivation many citizens and colonists would be found here who would go there to lay out a plantation; if His Majesty's States would at first keep a small battery of five or ten pieces of cannon and 30 or 40 men there as a garrison, the expenses would be made doubly good in a few years' time.

It is also thought that gold and silver ore is to be found there, but no one dares to go there because it has not yet been thrown open. If it be now His Majesty's intention to throw open the said land, I humbly beg your Lordship's most gracious reply to this, how His Majesty desires to have the same kept.

Herewith I commend myself to your Lordship's protection, and remain ever your most dutiful servant,

(Signed) ADOLPH VON ROSEN.

*Essequibo, July 20, 1749.*

Addressed to:

Monseigneur Tessin, Prime Minister to His Majesty of Sweden.

Inclosure 2 in No. 431.

*Christiaan Finett and Adolph von Roosen in Demerary to Frederick, King of Prussia.*

Aller durchlauchtigster Gross Mächtigster König Gnadiger Prinz,

GEBEN in aller unterthänigkeit zu erkennen als wir unterzeichneten Jahre 1754 nach die Reviren Wyne und Barima gewesen welche liegen auf 8 graden norder breite und dieselben besichtigt u erfunden das alda sehr gutes u fruchtbares Landt vor zucker, coffe, cacao, reis u anderen Plantagies können angelegt werden welche Revire liegen östlich an die Hollanders nach die Revire Essequibo, westlich an die Revire von Orronog die Spanische Crone zu komend. das Revier Barima ist sehr bequem vor die groste Schiffe sonder Gefahr ein u aus zu laufen. Als versuchen gnädigst weil wir vernommen dass selbige Revire Ew. Königl. Majest. zu komen uns die Vreyheit gnädigst zu ertheilen uns mit Ew. Königl. Majst. Commission zu versehen u so Ew. Königl. Majest. gelieven zu befehlen ds einer von uns beijden solte müssen über komen so seijn bereit auf erste Königl. order zu gehorsahmen u die Carten von selbe Revire mit zu bringen. Wir seijn Wohnhaftig in die Revier von Demerary unter Protectie von Middelburg in Zeeland u haben alhier 2 zucker Plantagien angelegt vor uns eijgen. So Ew. Königl. Majest. uns mit eine gnädigste antwort solte würdigen, so ist die adresse in Middelburg in Zeeland beij einen Kauffman Francois von Breda als Factor

[695—3]

Most Illustrious Most Mighty

King and Merciful Lord, *May 22, 1755.*

WE beg most humbly to submit that we, the undersigned, did in the year 1754 go to the Rivers Waini and Barima which lie at a latitude of 8° north, and did inspect the same, and found there an immense tract of good and fertile land which could be used for sugar, coffee, cocoa, rice and other plantations; which rivers have on the east the Hollanders to the River Essequibo, and on the west the river of Orinoco belonging to the Spanish Crown. The River Barima is quite capable of being navigated by the largest vessels without danger; we therefore beg for the favour (since we, the undersigned, have ascertained that the said river belongs to Your Majesty) of being granted Your Majesty's commission, and if it pleased Your Majesty to order one of us two to come over, we are ready to obey such Royal order immediately and to bring the map of that river with us. We live in the River Demerary, under the protection of Middelburg in Zeeland and have laid out sugar plantations here for ourselves. Should it please Your Majesty to grant us a gracious reply, the address is at Middelburg in Zeeland at a merchant's named François van Breda, living in the Lange Delft, over the West India Company's house, he being our agent.

2 R

A von uns wonhaft in der Langen Delft, über ds Westind. Hauss, wir haben die Commissie hier von ubertragen an einen Kauffman mit nahmen Ludewig Double in Emden wont in der Brugge Strasse solches an Ew. Königliche Majest. zu überhandigen und haben die Ehre uns zu befehlen in Ew. Konigl. Maj. gnadigste Protection.

Ew. durchlauchtigste und Grossmächtigste König und Herrn Unterthänigste Diener,  
CHRISTIAAN FINET.  
ADOLPH VON ROSEN.

*Rio Demerarij den 22 Maij, 1755.  
Op de Plantagie Christianenburg.*

B

Dem Durchlauchtigsten Grossmächtigsten Fürsten und Herrn, Herrn Carel Friedrich, König von Preussen, Chur Fürsten von Brandenburg, &c., &c., &c., a Berlin.

We have intrusted a merchant named Ludwig Double, living in the Lang Straat in Embden, with the commission of handing this to Your Majesty; and have the honour to commend ourselves to Your Majesty's gracious protection.

Your Illustrious and Most Mighty Majesty's most humble servants,  
(Signed) CHRISTIAAN FINETT,  
ADOLPH VON ROOSEN.

*Rio Demerary, May 22, 1755,  
Plantation Charlottenburg.*

Addressed to :

His Most Illustrious and Most Mighty King and Lord Frederick Charles, King of Prussia, Elector of Brandenburg, &c., &c., &c., Berlin.

---

No. 432.

C

*West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo, September 21, 1767.*

(Extract.)

WIJ hoopen, dat UEd. middel zal gevonden hebben, om de kwaade menees den Spanjaarden tegens de post in Cajoenij te verijdelen, en hoe zeer wij overreed zijn van de noodzakelijkheid, om zoowel die Post, als die in Maroco te versterken, zoo hebben wij p<sup>r</sup> deesen bodem geen meerder aantal van militairen kunnen doen overgaan, nog moeite genoeg gehad hebbende, om bekwaame scheepsruimte voor deese weinige te vinden.

D

P<sup>r</sup> een volgend schip zullen wij wederom eenige goede soldaaten tragten te doen overgaan, en daarmede, ingevolge hetgeen wij UEd. bij onse ampele missive zeggen, van tijt tot tijt continueeren, tot zoolang het guarnizoen op 50 koppen compleet en in behoorlijke ordre zijn zal.

WE hope that you will have found means of frustrating the evil designs of the Spaniards against the Post in Cuyuni; and, however persuaded of the necessity of strengthening both that Post and the one in Moruka, we have, nevertheless, been unable to send by this ship a greater number of soldiers, having had trouble enough to find available ship-room for these few.

By a subsequent ship we shall again try to send some good soldiers, and, as we informed you in our ample missive, to continue doing so from time to time until the garrison shall reach its full quota of fifty men, and be in proper order.

---

No. 433.

*Provisional Instructions for D. Neelis, Chief of the Company's Trading Places in Warquepo and Moruka (1767.)*

E

1. HIJ zal de vrije Indiaenen Vriendelijk en sagtmoedig behandelen en geen ongelijk aendoen, en niet gedogen deselve door iemand anders qualijk gehandelt, verongelijkt of gedwongen worden, en sal zoo veel in zijn vermogen is deselve trachten aen te lokken om onder de post te komen wonen.

2. Hij zal nauwkeurig acht geven en door Dindiaenen acht laeten geven op de deserteerende Slaeven zoo Roode als Swarte, en alle mogelijke middelen aen wenden om deselve achter haelen en te vangen sullende voor het opbrengen derselve stiptelijk volgens Costuymen worden betaelt.

F 3. Niet toelaeten iemand zonder pas of permissie briefje de post passeert, maer die dus komen arresteren en opbrengen. Uijtgesondert alleen iemand der wel bekende Ingesetenen achter eenige zijner weg gelope Slaeven achter aengaet, om tachterhaeleu welke dus den tijt niet gehad hebben een briefje te haelen en dusdaenige menschen zoo veel in zijn vermogen is voort helpen en bijstaen oo als ook alle die met een pas komen in alle redelijkheid behulpsaem wesen.

1. HE shall treat the free Indians friendly and gently, and not wrong them in any way, nor shall he allow them to be ill-treated, wronged, or oppressed by any one else, but endeavour as much as possible to entice them to live at and in the vicinity of the Post.

2. He shall also make the Indians keep a strict look-out after the runaway red and black slaves, and use all possible means in pursuing and capturing them; for every one of them brought back the customary price shall be paid punctually.

3. He shall allow no one to pass the Post without a passport, but arrest and bring up any one coming there without one, except, however, in the event of any of the well-known inhabitants pursuing runaway slaves for the purpose of capturing them, and consequently having had no time to obtain a passport; to those he shall render all such possible assistance as he would to those coming there with a passport.

4. Hij zal zoo veel doenlijk nauwkeurig acht geven op alles wat in Barima omgaet en exact rapport daer van doen schriftelijk gelijk mede van al het geene extraordinair op de Post voorvalt.

5. De vrije negotie word hem alleen op en om de Post toegelaten, maer sal verplicht weezen wanneer hem van d'Ed. Comp. weegen iets belast word in te handelen sulx voor al ander te doen.

6. De vaertuijgen hangmatten, &c., dat opbrengt om te verkopen, sal hij gehouden wezen de preferentie aen ons te geven indien het selve benodight hebben voorde selve prijs welke hem door andere aangeboden wordt.

7. Van dopkomende Spanjaerden met toebak, sal hij vijf per cent inkomende regten vorderen en het selve hier besorgen.

8. Sal verdagt weezen passen en permissie briefjes gegeven om de Post te passeeren niet meer als voor eene reijs valideeren of van waerde zijn, wijl daer een mishrijck van gemaekt wordt.

9. En sal sig verder in alles gedraegen zoo als een trouw en vigilant Gezaghebber betaemt te doen sullende hem verder bij nadere instructie of ampliatio op deeze bericht worden wat te doen heeft.

Voor den Gouverneur,  
L. STORM VAN 'S GRAVESANDE.

*Rio Essequibo op het Fort Zeelandia,  
den 7 October, 1767.*

Imand met een pas de post passerende om Indiaen te huuren zal hij ordonneren, dat die persoon of personen bij zijn retour aan de post aen leggen, ten eijnde hij van die Indiaenen kan vernemen of zij bij 't huuren ook mishandelt of gedwongen sijn, in welk geval hij den Directeur-Generael terstond daarvan zal verwittigen. En nadat de Indianen hun tijd van drie maanden uitgewerkt hebben en na huis retourneeren, zullen zij weder de post moeten aanleggen om hem van hun retour kennis te geven en teffens te [melden] of zij [we]l betaelt en niet mishandelt sijn.

4. He shall as much as possible pay strict attention to everything going on in Barima, and forward exact report thereof in writing, as also of all extraordinary proceedings at the Post. **A**

5. He is allowed to trade freely at and in the vicinity of the Post, but he shall be bound whenever ordered to get something for the Company to do so in preference of all others.

6. He shall be bound to give to the Company the preference of purchasing the boats, hammocks, &c., brought down for sale, if required by the Company, but at the same price as offered by others. **B**

7. He shall demand from the Spaniards coming there with tobacco, &c., 5 per cent. import duty and forward the same here.

8. He shall bear in mind that the passports issued shall be valid for one voyage only, as they are put to misuse.

9. He shall further conduct himself as a faithful and vigilant Postholder ought to conduct himself, and he shall be informed what he has further to do by other instructions or by amplification of these presents. **C**

(For the Governor),  
(Signed) L. STORM VAN 'S GRAVESANDE.  
*Rio Essequibo, at the Fort Zeelandia,  
October 7, 1767.*

He shall order any one having a passport, and passing the Post for the purpose of hiring Indians, to stop at the Post on the return voyage, so as to enable him to inquire from the Indians if in hiring them they were ill-treated or oppressed, and, if so, to forward report thereof immediately to the Director-General. After the Indians shall have served their time of three months, and are returning to their homes, they shall again stop at the Post, and inform him of their return, and also whether they have been paid and not ill-treated. **D**

#### No. 434.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, December 9, 1767.*

(Extract.)

DUS sal ik een begin maeken (om d'ordre des tyds in acht te nemen) met het voorgevallene op de Post van Maroco Eenen sekeren Streep langen tijd bij d'Hr. Rousselet in huis gewoont hebbende om zoo veel als Boekhouder van de particuliere negotie te wezen, en naer desselfs overlijden sig hier aen het Fort ophoudende, Den selfde welke de aen U. E. G. A. gesonde Brieven van Rose en Finet getranslateert had was op een morgen geeclypseert, sonder dat men altoos in deese Colonie eenig de minste reden daer toe konde beseffen wijl wat schuldig was altoos prompt betaelt had, niets onbehoorlijks mijns wetens verricht, en aen welke geen paspoort geweijgert soude hebben indien daer om gevraegt hadde.

Op het verslag van den Herbergier daer geloegt had, nader informeerende vernam ik dat hij s'avonds te vooren naer de Plantagie van Mevrouw Rousselet was gegaen, daer sig doe bevond eenen Hendrik Rodemeyer, bevoorens Meester knecht op U. E. G. A. plantagie Aechtekerke en om sijn slegt gedrag gedimiteert.

I WILL begin in chronological order with the occurrences at the Post of Maroco. A certain Streep who had lived for a long time with Mr. Rousselet as a kind of book-keeper and who since the death of the latter has been staying here at the fort—the same man who had translated the letters written by Rose and Finet which I sent to your Lordships—was found one morning to have vanished without any one in this Colony being able to give the slightest reason for his doing so, he having always promptly paid his debts and never to my knowledge having done anything wrong, and a man who would certainly not have been refused a passport if he had asked for one. **E**

Upon the report of the inn-keeper with whom he had lodged, I found upon further inquiry that he had gone on the previous evening to the plantation of Mevrouw Rousselot, where there was then one Hendrik Rodemeyer, formerly a foreman in your Lordships' plantation Aegtekerke, and discharged on account of his bad behaviour. **F**

**A** Met deezzen Rodemeyer is Streep des morgens heel vroeg stil naer Maroco vertrokken.

Des anderen daegs is den Posthouder Charles Maine met zijn nieuwe bijlegger van het Fort vertrokken.

**B** Weijnig daegen naer haer vertrek kreeg ik bericht door een brief van den bijlegger Paulus Vermeere en van dHr. Persik gelijk mede mondeling door een Spanjaerd, dat naer haer arrivement op de Post zij met haer vieren, namentlijk Streep den Posthouder een bijlegger en Rodemeyer, D'Indiaenen seer mishandeld hebbende eenige selve gequestert, de vaertuijgen aen stuk geslaegen het geschut in het water gegooijt met een woord alles geruineert zoo veel konde naer Orinoque zijn gedeserteert al het geweer carguasoen, &c., mede nemende, en ook twee Negers van Mevrouw Rousselet welke sig op haer Plantagie bevonden en den bijlegger vermeere vreeslijk getrapt en geslaegen om dat hij met haer niet mede wilde gaen.

**C** Den Swerver Gerrit Jansse een seer braef Eerlijk kaerel juijst om die streek sig bevindende wierd door D'indiaenen bericht dat de Slaeven van Van der Eijke beneden in Orinoque nog onder de Warouwen waeren en nog niet bij de Spanjaerds gearriveert, Waer op nog twee Swervers bij sig nemende daer aenstonds nae toe ging de Slaeven daer vond en de Warouwen tot haer genoeg betaelende deselve hier naer toe bragt en aen haer Meester weder ter hand stelde.

**D** Bij die Occasie Gaeven hem de Warouwen vier Snaphaenen en een Donderbus, welke zij den Schurk Charles Maine afgenomen hadden, zijnde hij alleen met een vaertuijg, bij haer aengekomen om provisie te bekomen, Denkende zij nog niets van zijn desertie wisten, Dog tot zijn ongeluk waeren reets eenige van de mishandelde Indiaenen van de Post bij haer aengekomen. Waerom zij in plaets van Provisien te geven een groote hap over het hoofd gaven Deerlijk klopte selfs een arm aen stuk en is dus zoo best konde op handen en voeten naer zijn vaertuijg gekropen daer zij de geweeren uijt genomen en aen Gerrit Jansse overhandigt hebben zonder iets het geringste daer voor te pretendeeren zij geloven hij geen vier en twintig uren daer naer meer geleefd zal hebben. Dus heeft deeze zijn verdiende Loon.

**E** Ik hadde wel gewenscht, die Warouwen hein geapprehendeert, en naer hier gebragt hadden maer een Natie zijnde welkers deugde geensints in Dapperheijd bestaan zijn seker bevreesd geweest voor zijn Makkers welke daer niet verre van daen voor dreg laegen met haer vaertuijg, Dus hebben zij maer korte expeditie gemaekt, konnende sig schielig in het Bosch retireeren, maer dandere Schurken hebben het niet durven waegen om daer aen te komen.

**F** De weggelope Slaeven van de Weduwe Van de Kaay zijn mede geapprehendeert en thuijs gebragt, Den Slaef Moeda haer Leijdsman onderwegen siek aen de roode Loope wordende, gingen zij op een Indiaens Dorp om sijn herstelling af te wachten Dog die Indiaenen Aruwakken zijnde gaven illico bericht op de Plantagie Vredenburg Mej. de Weduwe Boter behoorende, welke deselve ten eerste heeft laeten vatten en weder naer hier brengen. Een groot geluk voor die Weduwe, welke door die desertie genoegsaem geruineert was geweest.

Den Bijlegger van de Post Arinda boven in Essequebo is eijndelijk afgekomen. Den Criool Tampoko welke ik naer boven had gesonden, hem ontmoetende is weder te rug gekeert.

With this Rodemeyer Streep departed for Maroco very early in the morning.

On the next day Charles Maine, the Postholder, left the fort together with his new assistant.

A few days after their departure I received a report in a letter from the assistant Paulus Vermeere, and also a verbal message from Mr. Persik by a Spaniard that after their arrival at the Post the four of them, namely: Streep, the Postholder, one assistant, and Rodemeyer had severely ill-treated the Indians, wounded some of them, smashed the boats, and thrown the cannon into the water—in a word had ruined everything as much as they could, and had then gone off to Orinoco taking all the guns and ammunition with them. They had also taken two negroes belonging to Mevrouw Rousselet, and had treated the assistant Vermeere cruelly because he would not go with them.

The itinerant trader Gerrit Jansse, a very brave and honest fellow, happening to be in that district, was informed by the Indians that the slaves of Van der Eyke were still amongst the Warouws down in Orinoco, and had not yet reached the Spaniards, whereupon he immediately took two itinerant traders with him and went down there. He found the slaves there, and paying the Warouws as much as they wanted he brought them here and restored them to their master.

On this occasion the Warouws gave him four rifles and a blunderbuss which they had taken from the rogue, Charles Maine, he having come to them alone in a boat to get provisions, thinking they had not yet heard of his desertion. But, to his misfortune, some of the ill-treated Indians had already arrived from the Post and instead of provisions they gave him a great blow on the head. They even broke one of his arms, and he crept along as well as he could on hands and feet to his boat, out of which they had taken the guns which they handed to Gerrit Jansse without asking for the least payment in return. They believe that he cannot have lived more than twenty-four hours afterwards. He thus has his merited reward.

I should have liked the Warouws to have apprehended him, and to have brought him here, but it is a nation whose virtues by no means comprise bravery, and they were no doubt afraid of his companions who were lying in the boat not far from there; they therefore made short work of the matter. They were able to retire into the wood very speedily, but the other rogues did not dare to venture to follow them there.

The runaway slaves belonging to the widow Van der Kaay have also been caught and brought back. The slave Moeda, their leader, falling sick of the scarlet fever on the way, they went to an Indian village to await his recovery, but the Indians, being Aruwaks, immediately reported the matter at the plantation Vredenburg belonging to the Widow Boter, who had them arrested at once and brought back here—a piece of good fortune for their owner, who would have been ruined by the loss.

The Assistant of Post Arinda has at last come down. The creole Tampoko, whom I had sent up, met him and returned.



De saeken aldaer zijn zoo Erg niet als dat d'Indiaenen gerapporteert hadden, de Manoas zijn daer omtrent niet geweest. Ik konde sulx ook niet geloven wijl het mij onwaerschijnlijk voorquae deselve zoo een verre weg zouden afleggen sonder door de Caraïbanen haere Erfelijke vijanden ondekt te worden, en wel te meer door dien naer het affopen van Cajoeny door de Spanjaerden het in Essequibo grielt van Caraïbanen welke daer naer toe alle geretireet zijn, mij alvorens permissie daer toe gevraegt hebbende.

Maer den Posthouder in onmin met d'Acuwaijen geraekt zijnde welke seer verongelijkt had heeft uijt vrees van deselve de Post verlaeten en sig onder de Caraïbanen geretireert, Dit heeft het gerigt veroorzaekt eenige voorbij vaerende Indiaenen niemand op de Post vindende en niet wetende waer den Posthouder gestoven of gevlogen was, hebben haere gissingen voor waerheijd vertelt.

Die Posthouder in alles zijn plicht geheel versuijnt en zijn gedrag volstrekt onverantwoordelijk zijnde zoo heb ik hem gedeporteert, en ejndelijk een braef eerlijk en nuchter man aengetroffen hebbende volgens het eenparig getuijgenis van alle borgers Gerrit Jansse genaemt, denselfde welke de Slaeven van Van der Eijken heeft opgebracht. Denselve tot Posthouder aangestelt. Sullende toekomende week met den Bijlegger naer boven gaen en den afgesetten Posthouder welke niet af heeft durven komen naer hier senden dus hoop ik die Post nu wel voorzien sal weezen.

En op Maroco wijl die Post niet sonder kon wezen Provisioneel en *ad interim* eenen Diderik Neelis zoo lang gestelt tot een goede kon bekomen.

Ongelukkig is het dat men voor plaetsen van sulk een aengelegentheijt voor de Colonie hier geen bequaeme menschen kan vinden, Meest alle door den drank onbequaeme Subjecten zijnde welk in eenige aenmerking zoude komen.

En die van Cajoeny schort mede de kreng, want versoeckt om verplaetst te worden seggende het daer niet kan houden zijnde daer de lucht te ongesond, Dit is maer een pretext wijl seer gezond er uijt ziet maer schuijlt hier wat anders onder, het welk als nog niet ontdekken kan, maer dit is genoegsaem een vasten regel in deeze Colonie, dat Wanneer iemand een Eerlijk en bequaem bediende heeft, alle listen en laegen aengewend worden om deselve te debaucheeën en weg te troggelen, Dat in d'Ed. Comp. Dienst al meer als eens is gebleken.

Ik hebbe een missive ontfangen van een Pater Missionaris van Orinoque welkers Copije oversetting d'Eer hebbe U.E.G.A. te senden is het niet verwonderings waerdig Edele Groot Achbaere Heeren, hoe zoo een man welke seer wel weet hoe met onze weggelopenen Slaeven gehandeld word Nog durft vraegen om de gevlugte Indiaenen van sijne missie wederom te senden, Dit vrije menschen zijnde, Dog U.E.G.A. kunnen daer uijt zien hoe vrij zij d'Indiaenen houden die onder haer woonen, Die het veel Erger hebben als onze Slaeven. Den bringer is naer Martinique gegaen en komt in Februarij aenstaende wederom Wanneer hope die missive to sullen beantwoorden zoo als behoort.

En dewijl volgens de beduijdenis der Negers het Dorp zoo digt omtrent aen Essequibo als aen Demerarij soude wezen. Sal U.E.G.A. Criool Tampoko met eenige Indiaenen van de kant van

Matters up there are not so bad as the Indians had reported; the Manoas have not been in those parts, and indeed I could hardly believe it, because it seemed to me improbable that they would have come such a long distance without being discovered by the Caribs, their inveterate enemies, and the more so since, after the raid upon Cuyuni by the Spaniards, Essequibo swarms with Caribs, who have all flocked there after having asked me for permission to do so.

But the Postholder having had some unpleasantness with the Acuwaiys, whom he had treated very unjustly, had left the Post from fear of that nation, and had taken refuge with the Caribs. It was this that caused the rumour; some passing Indians, finding no one at the Post, and not knowing what had become of the Postholder, had given out their conjectures as the truth.

The Postholder having failed to do his duty in everything and his conduct being perfectly inexcusable, I have dismissed him, and having at last found a man, one Gerrit Jansse, who brought up the slaves belonging to Van der Eyck, and, according to the unanimous testimony of all citizens, is an honest, upright and sober fellow, I have appointed him to be Postholder. He is to go up stream next week with the assistant and is to send down the dismissed Postholder, who has not dared to come down the river. I hope the Post will now be well looked after.

As I could not leave the Post at Maroco without some defence I have provisionally and *ad interim* sent one Diderik Neelis there until I could get a good Postholder.

It is unfortunate that no competent person can be found here for places of such an importance to the Colony; they are nearly all men whose drinking habits would make them unfit for such a post.

The one in Cuyuni is no better than the rest because he is asking to be placed elsewhere, saying that he cannot live there because the place is unhealthy. This is only a pretext, because he looks very well indeed, and there must be something else behind it which I have not yet been able to find out; but it is a hard and fast rule in this Colony that when any one has an honest and competent servant all kinds of deceit are practised to seduce him and entice him away, a thing that has happened in the Honourable Company's service more than once.

I have received a letter from a missionary priest in Orinoco, a translation of which I have the honour to send your Lordships. Is it not astonishing, my Lords, that such a man who knows very well how we are treated with respect to our runaway slaves, still dares to ask that the Indians who have run away from his Mission should be sent back to him, the same being free people? Your Lordships can see from this how free they hold the Indians who live under them, and who are treated much worse than their slaves. The carrier has gone to Martinique and will be back in February, when I hope to answer the letter in a fitting manner.

And since according to the evidence of the negroes the village is as close to Essequibo as to Demerary your Lordships' creole Tampoko will march upon the same from the direction of

A Essequibo te gaen spionneeren om deselve dus van twee kanten te kunnen aantasten.

Konde die expeditie met wel gedisciplineerde Soldaeten geschieden soude geruster weezen over den uitslag maer wat is te verwagten van een partij onwillige Borgers welke de Capiteijns selver vreezen weijnig mede uijt te voeren sal zijn, en welke niet als met seer veel moeite tot gehoorsaemheid gebragt sullen moeten worden. Maer dit nu niet mogelijk sijnde moeten de middelen gebragt worden welke men heeft en niet doen konnende wat men wel wilde, sig genoeg met te doen wat men kan.

B

Essequibo with a few Indians in order to be able to attack it from two sides.

If the expedition were undertaken by well-disciplined soldiers I should feel more certain of its success (but what is to be expected of a party of unwilling citizens with whom the captains themselves fear little can be done, and who can only be got to obey with a great deal of difficulty ?); but since that is impossible we must use what means we have, and not being able to do as much as we might wish must be satisfied with doing what we can.

---

Annex to No. 434.

*Reply of the Director-General, Essequibo, to the Petition of the Civil Officers respecting Runaway Slaves (1767.)*

(Extract.)

C EN zal intussen moeten worden afgewagt, wat gevolgde plechtigen en op het woord van Eer gedane beloften van den Gouverneur van Guayana hebben zullen en of dien conform de overgelope slaaven als slaaven zullen werden verkogt ende daar van geprevenueerde Penningen aan U. Wel. Ed. *ad opus jus habentium* inhandigd, want alle verdere Instantien omverdere om restitutie der ge-aufugeerde slaaven zelve geloven wij, dat zo in America als Europa vrugteloos zijn zullen in speciaal die welke U.W.E. schijnd te denken dat bij den Spaanschen Ambassadeur of Minister in den stage zoude kunnen worden ge-entameerd.

D . . . . Daarenboven weeten uwe wel of dienen te weeten dat considerabel veel wegen zijn voor de weglopers welke de barquen niet kunnen sluijten en hoe lange is de weg door Cajoenij open geweest veroorzaakt door de attaque der Spanjaarden en het ruineeren van de Post aldaar in welke rivier geen Indianen meer zijn en den nieuwen Posthouder qualijk kan bestaan, door Powaron over land en veele meer.

AND in the meantime we shall have to wait and see what results the solemn oaths and promises of the Governor of Guayana will have, and whether, in conformity with such, the runaway slaves will be sold as slaves, and the proceeds handed over to your honours *ad opus jus habentium*, because we believe that all further demands for restitution of the runaway slaves will be fruitless both in America and Europe, and especially those which your honours seem to think could be made to the Spanish Ambassador.

. . . . Moreover, you well know, or should know, that there are a considerable number of roads for the runaways which the barques cannot close, and how long the road through Cuyuni has been open, as a result of the attack of the Spaniards and the destruction of the Post there, in which river there are no longer any Indians, and the new Postholder can hardly maintain himself, through Pomeroon, over-land, and many more.

E

No. 435.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to the Commandeur in Demerary, December 13, 1767.*

Mijn lieve Zoon,

F WAT een Geluk is het voor de Scharden, en zijn bijhebbende dat de 2 bewuste negers de weg niet geweten of vergeten hebben nu ziet men van agter nog meer de dolligheid van zijn verrigting Tampoko is met eenige Caraibanen afgekomen, en heeft mij een zeer nauwkeurig en omstandig berigt gebragt, zoo ols ook verwagt had. Het is maer al te waer, en zeker het Berbices rebellen zijn, het dorp met Palissaden omzet, legt een Eind Landwaerts in, agter de plantage van de weduwe Stock, dit is omtrent op de Streek door de negers aengewesen, zij zijn over de hondert Sterk, en zijn met een Vlot van de kant van Berbices boven in Demerarij over geset, en hebben een dag werk gehad eer alle over waren. hadden tien pullen met kruid bij sig, haar brood is al redelijk groot, en hebben tot nu toe haar brood van d'Acuwaijen boven in Demerarij gekregen, en hebben al een Schermnut-

My dear Son,

December 13, 1767.

HOW fortunate it is for De Scharden and his companions, that the two negroes did not know or had forgotten the way; we see now, all the more because it is over, the madness of his enterprise. Tampoko has come down with some Caribs and has brought me a very exact and circumstantial account. As I had expected, it is only too true and certain that they are rebels from Berbices; the village, surrounded by palisades, lies some distance inland behind the plantation of the Widow Stock; this is somewhere about the neighbourhood pointed out by the negroes. They are over a hundred strong, and crossed on a raft from the shore of Berbices up in Demerary. It took them a day before they were all over; they had ten casks of powder with them. Their cassava is already fairly high, and up to the present they have obtained their bread from the Acuwaijen up-

zeling met eenige Caribaane gehad, en een Arwaks wijf geroofd welke het nog ontsnapt is.

De Caraibissen hebben mij laten weten, dat gereed waren op eerste bevel alle de wapenen op te vatten, en haer aen te tasten wijl zij selver niet zeker rekenen, versoecken maer een Cano of Zes om haer met haer brood te transporteren, welke ik ten Spoedigsten zal tragten bij een te krijgen, en op te zenden. Dog sij laten mij zeggen ten hoogsten noodig het pad boven in Demerarij haer afgesneden word, dit denk ik ook Waerom versoeck U. W. E. G. ten eersten de Borger Officiere bij een roept, en dheeren Raden Changuion en van der Lot daer bij versoeckt, om dit wel t'overleggen, en een behoorlijke resolutie en reglement te formieren om het boven gedeelte van Demerarij te bezetten.

Ik ben van Oordeel Salvo Meliori de Borgers haer niet behooren aan te tasten, zulx kunnen de Caraibissen wel aff Maer zij retirerende of vlugtende, moeten niet gespaerd maer zeker aengetast worden, en daarom van distantie tot distantie goede wagten gesteld, om met afgesproken seynen te waerschouwen als iets ontwaer worden.

Indien de Cano's bij een kan krijgen morgen zal Tampoko maendag avond of dingsdag morgen opvaren, en de Caraibis welke gereed zijn met eene bij een versamelen, en met haer daerop afaen.

Laten de Heeren dog dese zoo gevaerlijke zaek wel overwegen, hier mag geen dralen plaats hebben, het behoud der twee Rivieren hangt hier van af, ik verblijve met veel Genegendheid.

Uwel E.G. & zeer genege Vader,  
L. STORM VAN 'S GRAVESANDE.

Den 13 Xber, 1767.

Geheim houding is hoognodig.

P.S.—Ik zal U. W. E. G. den dag omtrent laten weten dat de Caraibisse d'attaque sullen doen ik heb al 6 Canos Tampoko gaet nu op om volk te halen om de Canos op te brengen, en de Caraibes te belasten zij klaer te maken.

in Demerary, and have already had a skirmish with some Caribs and carried off an Aruwak woman, who has again escaped.

The Caribs have informed me that they were ready to take up arms as soon as they should receive orders to attack them, but as they did not feel very safe about it, they ask for about six canoes to transport themselves with their bread; these I shall try to obtain as speedily as possible and send them up. They informed me that it is highly necessary that the road of retreat up in Demerary should be cut off, which is also my opinion, wherefore I must request you to call the burgher officers together and to invite the Councillors Changuion and Van der Lot to meet the same in order to weigh this matter well, and to arrive at some fitting resolution, and lay down regulations for investing the upper portion of Demerary.

I am of opinion, *salvo meliori*, that the citizens ought not to attack them; this should be left to the Caribs. If the enemy retires or flees they must not be spared, but certainly attacked, and therefore good outposts should be placed at certain distances to give warning according to signs agreed upon whenever they perceive anything.

If I can get the canoes together, Tampoko shall proceed up the river on Monday or Tuesday morning to collect the Caribs who are ready, and proceed to the attack with them.

Let the Councillors well consider this dangerous matter: there must be no delay in this, for the possession of the two rivers depends upon it.

I remain,

Your affectionate father,  
(Signed) L. STORM VAN 'S GRAVESANDE.

No. 436.

Commandeur, Demerary, to West India Company, December 17, 1767.

(Extract.)

ONDER het schrijven van deese zoo ontvange ik per expresse uijt Essequibo deese neevensgaende brieff Sub Lita. J. van den Hr. Direct. Gener. over welkers inhoud mij zeer onstelt hebben, wijl er niet op bedagt was, en mij niet voorgesteld hebbe gehad, t getal der Neegers soo groot kon weesen, en dat de rivier in zoo'n merkelyk gevaer was,

Ik hebbe aenstonds de twee Raeden en alle de Borgers-Officiere aen geschreeven sig overmorgen alle bij mij te laeten vinden om een behoorlijk reglement en resolutie te neemen ter dekking en beveijliging van t boovenste gedeelte deeser Riviere, en om alle Precauties voor verdere gevolgen die hier uijt onstaen zoude kunne te neemen,

Zal d'eere hebbe U. E. G. A. de genoome resolutie Omstandig hier nae te communicereen.

WHILST writing this despatch, I receive, per express from Essequibo, the accompanying letter from the Director-General, the contents of which have caused me great agitation, because I was quite unprepared for them, and I had not supposed that the number of the negroes could be so great, and that the river was in such immediate danger.

I immediately wrote to the two councillors and to all the burgher officers to meet at my house the day after to-morrow in order to determine upon some proper course of conduct, and to adopt a resolution for the protection and safety of the upper portion of this river, and to take all precautions for whatever results might ensue herefrom. I shall have the honour to communicate circumstantially to your Lordships later the resolution arrived at.

- A Wat geluk is het dog niet geweest voor den Lieutenant de Scharden dat de neegers het Pad niet geweeten of vergeeten hebbe gehad, zoude tanders van seer droevige gevolgen zijn geweest, voor hem en zijn bijhebbende. Ik vreeze voor den dag van Over-Morgen, zonder disputeren, sal er geen resolutie kunne genomen worden, want hebbe van ter zijde zoo iets gehoord, daer meede ik het meeste zal geschooren zijn, en mij in de grootste verleegentheid zal brengen, hoe en op wat maniere ik het boovenste gedeelte deser riviere zal kunne lekken; de burgers wille geen Commandos doen, seggende voor wat ze jaerlijks de Hoofdgelden, Recognities, &c., betaalen moeten, zoo ze zelfs zig moeten defendeeren, Militie kan ik niet zenden, want hebbe alleenlijk nog thien man, waermeede ik twee Posten moet bezetten, daerbij zoo hebbe gebrek aen alles wat een Militair van noode heeft wanneer hij op Commando gaet.

- B Ik hoope de Caraibanen zullen in haere onderneemingen Slaegen anders zoo ziet het maer zeer gemeen uijt voor deese Rivier, want wat heeft men te wagten van onwillige Borgers, in tijden van gevaer, niet anders, als groote verwarringen en disorders, daerbij zoo is gebrek aen alles, en zelfs in het Magazijn van U. E.G.A., want ben verplicht geweest voor 6 weken  $9\frac{1}{2}$  vaten spek te koopen, voor de mandeljkse Randsoenen, dewijl er geen vleesch zowel in Essequibo als hier was.

- C December 17.—Zoo als gevreesd hebben, hebben gistern veel haspelarijen gehad, zoo als U. E. G. A. wel ligt zullen zien en kunne oordeelen uijt de notulen waer van Copie d'eere Hebben sub Lita. K. U. W. E. G. A. toe te laten koomen hebbende om die resolutie te neemen alleenlijk geseeten van 10 uren tot s'nademiddag om half drie, en geloove, dat men tot s'avonts toe wel had gezeeten eer men nog een resolutie zoude hebbe genoome.
- D Indien ik niet geproponeerd had, dat men den Arowakse Acquiesche Uijl moest zoeken te persuadeeren door belofte of priesenten, met zijn magt van Indianen beneede de vallen te koomen en aldaer de komst der Neegers af wagten of er zelfs met zijn volk op los gaen.

- E Dit is een natie E. G. A. Heeren, die de Caribanen in Moedt en onversaegthijd verre te boven gaen, sij zijn teegenswoordig maets met de Caribische en zijn geswooren Vijanden van de regte Acquieijen, die booven in de Rivier Rupnuni woonen, men noemt ze hier in de rivier d'Arowackse Acquieijen, omdat ze afkomstig zijn van Arowakken en Aquieijen maer haer regte naem is, de Wauwejanen.

Haer Uijl, wiens naem Conde is, zoo befaemt in de berbischse Troubelen, en die de meeste dienst teegens de Neegers heeft gedaen is den verstandigste Bok of Indiaen, die ik nog gezien hebben, zoo dat ik niet twijfele of zal wel met hem kunne accordeeren.

How fortunate it was for Lieutenant de Scharden that the negroes did not know or had forgotten the path, otherwise the matter would have had very sad results for him and his companions. I fear for the day after to-morrow; no resolution will be come to without disputes, because I have heard from outside sources that I shall be sore put to it, and placed in great difficulties how and in what manner I shall be able to protect the upper portion of this river; the citizens are unwilling to go on commando, asking why they should pay an annual poll-tax and duties, &c., if they have to defend themselves. I can send no soldiers because I have only 10 men, with which I have to guard two Posts, and I am, moreover, destitute of all that a soldier requires when he goes out on commando. I hope the Caribs will be successful in their undertakings, otherwise it looks very black for this river, for what can we expect from unwilling citizens in time of danger? Nothing but great disorder and confusion; in addition to this there is a lack of everything, and even in the store-houses of your lordships. Not six weeks ago I was obliged to buy nine and a half casks of bacon for the monthly rations, there being no meat either in Essequibo or here.

December 17.—As was expected we had a good deal of trouble here yesterday, as your Lordships will easily see from the Minutes, of which I have the honour to send your Lordships a copy. To arrive at a resolution we had sat from five o'clock until half-past two in the afternoon, and I believe that we should have sat until the evening without arriving at any resolution had I not proposed that we ought to try and persuade the Owl of the Aruwak Acuways, either by promises or presents, to come down below the falls with his force of Indians, and there to wait for the coming of the negroes, or to go and meet them with his people.

This people, my Lords, are far superior to the Caribs in courage and daring; they are at the present moment on friendly terms with the Caribs, and are the sworn enemies of the real Acuways, who live up in the River Rupnuni: here in the river they are called the Aruwak Acuways, because they are descended from Aruwaks and Acuways, but their right name is Wauwejans.

Their Owl, whose name is Conde, was very prominent in the troubles in Berbice, and was of the greatest service against the negroes; he is the most intelligent "Bok" or Indian I have ever seen, so that I have no doubt that we shall be able to come to some terms with him.

F

No. 437.

*Zealand Chamber to Director-General, Essequibo, December 28, 1767.*

(Extract.)

MAAR wij stappen hier van af en zeggen dat wij reeds bij ons te meermaalen geciteerde Missive in dato 21 Septemb. hebben betuigd, ten vollen

BUT we have digressed in order to say that we have declared in our despatch of the 21st September, already many times quoted, that we were

overreed te zijn van de noodzaakelijkheid om zoo wel de Post in Cajoenij als die van Maroco te versterken, en dat wij hartelijk wenschten, dat U. Ed. middel zoude hebben gevonden, omme de onderneemingen der Spaanschen te verijdeljen.

fully persuaded of the necessity of strengthening both the Post on Cuyuni and that at Maroco, and that we heartily wish that your Honour may have found means to frustrate the undertakings of the Spaniards.

No. 438.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, February 9, 1768.*

(Extract.)

IK hebbe mede rapport van de Caraibanen ontfangen dat heel boven in Masseroeny vier blanken met verscheijde wel gewaepende Neegers de rivier overgetrokken waeren, en haer weg direct naer d'Amazones genomen hadden, De Caraibaenen seggen het vier Jesuiten zijn welke bij het arresteeren van haere mede broeders in Guayana het ontvlugt zijn. Dit zoo zijnde moet haer uitzigt naer Paraguaij zijn, in welk geval ik haer Reysgenoot niet gaere zoude weezen, zijnde de weg al eenige hondert mijlen.

Den Criool Tampoko afgekomen zijnde om de Vaertuijgen te haelen heeft den voornaemsten Uijl van Masseroeny mede gebragt denzelfde welke d'Indiaenen aengevoert heeft in d'Expeditie naer Berbices, die zoo wel uijtgevallen is, welke ik Dagte lang overleden te wezen hij heeft me geseget dat alles nauwkeurig ondersogt hebbende van oordeel was het beter soude wesen, dat zij naer Demerary gingen en van daer dattaque deden, wijl van hier gaende sij eer aen de Neger huijsen konden komen een paer uren tot aen de Rivier door het water soude moeten gaen. En dat hij om die reden zijn Natie boven Essequibo had laeten waerschuwen om af te komen, om op de Rivier Essequibo op te passen Wanneer de Negers naer daer wilde vlugten, Dit om zijn geallegueerde redenen geapprobeert hebbende is met de Canoas vertrokken en sal op den bepaalden dag hier wezen.

Ik heb den Commandeur hier van ten eerste verwittigt en gelast den Uijl Conde te waerschuwen om sig met zijn onderhebbende Woawanen gereed te houden sig bij de Caraibanen te voegen.

In deselfde missive waerin mij den Commandeur kennis geeft van het arrivement van het Schip de vliegende Visch staen deeze woorden. *Daer zijn twaelf Soldaeten aen boord wederom goede recruten voor Orinoque wijl meest alle Fransjes zijn.* Ik heb d'Hr. Lonk als passagier overgekomen daer naer gevraegt denselve heeft mij versekert Franse en op een of twee nae alle Roomsgezinde zijn, Is het mogelijk U. E. G. A. dus dor de zielverkoopers worden misleijd, ik sal haer nauwkeurig laeten examineeren, en geen monster rol daer van ontfangen hebbende weet ik niet hoe opgegeven zijn.

Daer bij hebben sig alle d'Indiaenen verklaert geen Franschen op de Posten te willen lijden zijnde reeds een troep van over de hondert Warouwen op de Post Maroco gekomen, alle wel gewapend, seggende zij quamen zien of daer een Fransman was met voornemen dit zoo viudende denselve Dood te slaen.

[696—3]

I HAVE also received a report from the Caribs that right up in Massaruni, four whites with several well armed negroes have crossed the river and have made their way direct to the Amazon. The Caribans say that they are four Jesuits who have fled here upon the arrest of their comrades in Guayana. This being so, their aim must be to get to Paraguay, in which case I should not care to be their travelling companion, the distance being several hundred miles.

The creole Tampoko, having come down the river to fetch the boats, brought the principal Owl of Massaruni with him, the same who led the Indians in the expedition to Berbice which succeeded so well I thought he was dead a long time ago. He told me that having gone into everything carefully, he was of opinion that it would be better that they should go to Demerary and make the attack from there because in going from here they would have to walk for a few hours up to their knees in water before they came to the negro houses, and that for this reason he had sent word to his nation in Upper Essequibo to come down and keep watch upon that river in case the negroes should try to escape that way. I having approved of this on account of the reasons given, he departed with the canoes and will be here on the appointed day. I have informed the Commandeur of this, and have asked him to warn the Owl Conde to hold himself in readiness with his subject Warouwans to aid the Caribs.

In the same despatch in which the Commandeur informs me of the arrival of the ship "The Flying Fish" I find these words:—"There are twelve soldiers on board who are again good recruits for Orinoco because they are nearly all French." Mr. Lonk, who came over as a passenger, has assured me that they are all French, and that with the exception of one or two they are all Roman Catholics. Can it be possible that your Lordships are so deceived by the crimps? I shall have them closely examined, but as I have received no muster-roll I do not know how they are described.

In addition to this all the Indians have declared that they will have no French at the Posts, a troop of more than 100 Warouwans, all well armed, having already arrived at the Post, Maroco saying that they came to see whether there was a Frenchman there, and intending to kill him if it were so.

2 T

A Waerom ook Pierre Martin van Cajoenij si afgekomen dIndiaenen volstrekt weijgerende bij en omtrent de Post te komen woenen zoo lang hij daer is. Willen een Duijtsman hebben zeggen zij.

Wherefore also Pierre Martin has come down the river from Cuyuni, the Indians flatly refusing to come and live anywhere near the Post so long as he is there. They will have a Dutchman, they say.

No. 439.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, February 10, 1768.*

B

(Extract.)

(Postscript.)

C GEREED om deeze te zeegelen en in de sak te doen komt bij mij een Corps Caraibanen afgesonde van het gros dat boven bij het Fort kijkoveral versammelt is om geweer kruijd en loot te haelen. Deselve zijn voornemens den 15 dezer de Neegers aen te tasten. Ik heb immediaet een expresse naer den Commandeur afgevaardigt om d'Acuwaijen te laeten waarschuwen. De Uijlen approbeeren de genomene maetregulen volkome Dog seggen mij indien DAcuwayen sig niet wel gedraegen en de Negers laeten Echappeeren sij DAcuwayen selver sullen aantasten.

JUST as I am about to seal this letter I receive a visit from a body of Caribs sent out by, those assembled above Fort Kijkoveral asking me for guns, powder and shot. It is their intention to attack the negroes on the 15th of this month. I have immediately sent an express to the Commandeur in order that he may warn the Acuways. The Owls approve in every way of the measures adopted but tell me that if the Acuways do not behave well or allow the negroes to escape they will attack the Acuways themselves.

No. 440.

*Commandeur, Demerary, to West India Company, February 18, 1768.*

D

(Extract.)

E IK was zeer in mijn schik EG. A. Heeren, toen ik antwoord ontving op mijn berigt aen Den Heer Direct. Generl. van het arrivement van dese 12 man dat het alle volgens U.E.G.A. schrijven aen zijn H. Ed. Protestanten waren, en geen fransman, Vlaming, Portugeesch, nog Spanjer er onder was maer bevond tot mijn grootste verwondering toen ik deselve monsterde dat van dese 12 man alleenlijk den Corporael een uijtregtsman, lange Jaren onder State troepen gedient en een Duijscher geboortig van tweebruggen en een fransche deserteur d'Eenigste waren dat geen fransche zijn, doverige alle fransche deserteurs, zoo dat hier uijt besluijtte E.G.A. Heeren, dat de Zielverkoopers U.E.G.A. scandaleus bedrogen hebben, en infame Schurken zijn,

I WAS very pleased, my Lords, on reporting the arrival of the twelve men to the Director-General to hear from him that, according to your Lordships' letter, they were all Protestants and that there was not a Frenchman, Fleming, Portuguese, or Spaniard amongst them. But when I mustered them I found to my great surprise that out of these twelve men there were only three who were not French, these being the corporal, who comes from Utrecht, and has served in the State troops for some years, and a German, a native of Zweibrucken, and a French deserter. The others are all French deserters, so that I conclude that your Lordships have been scandalously deceived by the recruiting agents, who are infamous scoundrels.

F Den 28 Xber Ao. Po. heeft den Luitenant de Scharden de 2 Acqueysche uijlen met namen Conde and Nero waer van d'Eer heb gehad in mijn voorgaende te melden bij mij gebragt na dat ik haer met Een Glas Brandewijn en ieder met een Pack en toebehooren van mijn dagelijkse klederen verwelkomt had zoo heb hun gevraagd (te voren haer mijn intentie der zending voor haer bekend gemaekt zijnde), off zij de negers, wel soudon willen aantasten of hun het Pad af snijden, zoo de negers door de Caribisen geattacqueerd wierden en moesten vlugten, zoo gaf mij den Uijl Conde na een lange Narratie van des zelv's helden daden in Berbice, en hoe veel negers hij hier in de rivier aen de vallen gemassacreerd had; te kennen, dat hij bereid was met al zijn magt de negers te attaqueren, zoo hem maer wat kruijd

On the 28th December of last year Lieutenant de Scharden brought me the two Acuway Owls named Conde and Nero whom I had the honour to mention in my former letter. After I had welcomed them with a glass of brandy and presented each of them with a suit of my everyday clothes, I asked them (after having acquainted them with the reason of my sending for them) whether they were willing to attack the negroes, or cut off their retreat if the negroes were attacked by the Caribs and put to flight. Thereupon the Owl Conde, after a long narrative of his heroic deeds in Berbice and an account of the numbers he had massacred at the falls in this river, informed me that he was ready to attack the negroes with all his forces if only he were given some powder and shot and a Carib to



en loot en een Caribaen wierd gegeven om de weg te wijzen, wyl hij aen die kant waer de Negers zig ophielden niet bekend was ik approbeerde zijn voornemen en seyde dat ik na Essequibo zoud schrijven om een Caribaen, dat hij ondertusschen naboven moest gaen om deszelvs volk bij een te verzamelen, dat zijn maet Nero soo lang bij de Scharden zoud blijven, om wanneer de Caribe van Essequibo kwam, deselve na boven te kunne brengen, maer ingeval geen Caribe kon krijgen, dat ik hun als dan den dag der Attacque door de Caribische zoude later weten, dat se dan alleenlijk maer noodig hadden de Passe te bezetten, het geen sij mij versekerde te sullen doen, mede dat sij altoos bereid zouden sijn om in alle voorvallen de Rivier te hulp te komen, en in't vervolg hun benodigt zijnde hun zulx maer te laten weten, waer op hem beloofde dan altoos wel te sullen betalen, en vroeg hem of hij nooit van die Negers had vernomen hij zeijde daer op dat het eenige tijd geleden wel van sijn volk had gehoord, een troep negers de Rivier waren overgetogen, maer nooit vernomen waer deselve gebleven waren.

\* \* \* \*

Gisteren avond ontving gansch onverwagt de tijding van Den Heer Directeur-Generaal dat den 15 desen de Caribische van de kant van Essequibo de Attacque zouden doen twelk mij in de grootste verlegenheid heeft gebragt, nadien de tijd te kort is, om de Acqueijen daer van berigt te geven om se te doen afkomen, evenwel nam de Resolutie en schreef aen Aegide de Scharden om d'Acqueijen ten eersten te doen afkomen, bij aldien het gebeuren mogte dat de Caribische wat talmen, zij nog in tijds daer konden zijn.

show him the way, since he was not acquainted with the district in which the negroes were. I approved his intention, and said I would write to Essequibo for a Carib, and that in the meantime he must go up the river to assemble his people, and that his companion Nero would remain with de Scharden in order to be able to conduct the Carib from Essequibo up the river when he came. I further told him that if I could get no Carib I would let him know on what day the Caribs would make the attack; it would then only be necessary for them to station themselves at the passes, which they assured me they would do, and that they would always be ready to come and help this river in any emergency, and that whenever they were required in the future we were only to let them know, whereupon I promised him always to pay him well, and asked him whether he had never heard anything of those negroes. He said that some time ago he had indeed heard from his people that a troop of negroes had crossed the river, but that he had never heard where they were.

\* \* \* \*

Yesterday evening I received, quite unexpectedly, tidings from the Director-General that the Caribs would make the attack on the 15th of this month from the side of Essequibo. This news has placed me in great embarrassment, the time being too short to inform the Acuways of this and to get them to come down. However, I wrote to Aegidius de Scharden to send the Acuways down as soon as possible, it being just possible that if the Caribs delayed a little they would still be in time.

D

No. 441.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, March 8, 1768.*

(Extract.)

HEBBE d'Eer ook gehad U.E.G.A. kennis te geven der Expeditie der Caraibaenen welke de Heere zij geloofd zeer gelukkig is uitgevallen. Het nest gevonden, de Negers aengetast seven doodgeslaegen nevens 2 wijven, drie nevens 4 wijven ontvlugt daer d'Acuwaijen achter zijn. De huisjen om verre gehaelt en sullende U.E.G.A. per de Vrouw Digna Johanna het omstandig relaes ontfangen van dit zoo voordelig en nuttig geval voor de Colonie.

I HAVE also had the honour to inform your Lordships of the expedition of the Caribs which, thank God, turned out very successfully. The nest having been found the negroes were attacked and seven, together with two women, were killed, whilst three men and four women escaped; the Acuways are after these. The houses have been pulled down, etc. Your Lordships will receive a circumstantial account of these events, which are of great advantage to the Colony, by the "Vrouw Digna Johanna."

E

No. 442.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, April 9, 1768.*

(Extract.)

MORGEN is den dag door de Caraibanen tot dattaque bepaeld, God weet hoe het nu sal afloopen indien het in Demerary gaet zoo als den Commandeur met rede vreest. De Caraibanen is

TO-MORROW is the day appointed by the Caribs for the attack. God knows how it will end if things go in Demerary as the Commandeur reasonably fears. There is no difficulty about the

F

**A** geen Swarigheid Die sullen het haere wel doen maer indien de vlugtende aen Demerarij niet gestuijt worden en daer over kennen geraeken, is het geen half werk en kan een naesleep van jaeren hebben Droevig is het zoo veele menschen geen reden willen verstaen, willen seg ik want het is onmogelijk dat het gevaer en de gevolgen van haer onwilligheid niet zouden begrijpen.

Wegens de verzending van den Schurk Bekker heb ik d'Eer gehad in mijne voorige te schrijven.

**B** Den Posthouder van Cajoeny Pierre Martin volstrekt hebbende moeten verplaatsen om dat D'Indiaenen daer volstrekt geen Fransman willen hebben zoo wel als die van Maroco is daer nog geen andere als de twee bijleggers. Nu sal het te besien staen of D'Indiaenen van Majkouny daer Pierre Martin naer toe is in het selfde Concept sullen weezen, wanneer ik die man Nolens Volens sal moeten dimitteeren ik vreeze daer zeer voor wijl in Majkouny meest Warouwen woonen en die Natie het werk in Maroco hebben begonnen en voortgeset. en wel met een korte resolutie sijnde in groot getal en wel gewapend op de post gekomen met voornemen seijde zij opentlijk als een Fransche Posthouder gevonden hadden hem illico te massacreeren.

Ik presumeere dat wanneer de Saeken van de Hr. Massol eens gereguleerd zijn en alles in ordre heeft Den Hr. Destouches welke met hem mede gekomen is, wel eens een reisje naer de Piramiden en Christal mijn sal doen, ten minste hij scheijnt mij grooten zin daer in te hebben.

**D** Den eenen Spanjaerd welke door toedoen van Mev. Rousselet ontsnapt was is bij de Hr. Persik gekomen, welke mij ten eerste per missive daer kennis van gegeven heeft met versoeck hem geliefde te permitteeren op zijn plantagie te blijven tot occasie hadde met een barq naer St. Eustatius te vertrekken, het welk ik toegestaen hebbe wijl hij daer wel was, en is deeze ook vertrokken.

**E** De desertie van een Sergeant met eenige manschappen zou (voor al in Vredens tijd) in Europa niet eens op gelet worden, maer hier is het een heel andere Saek onze Colonien hier op de kust hebben aen d'Eene zijde onrustige nabuuren welke sig niet lang stil konnen houden en aen d andere zijde de Spanjaerde welke ons reets zoo menigvuldige redenen tot achterdocht gegeven hebben en nog geven, dat men waerlijk niet voorsigtig genoeg kan weezen. In Suriname worden soortgelijke Deserteurs wel ontfangen maer met deerst vertrekkende Schepen naer Europa versonden.

Het is in Cajoenij nu stil soo lang als het duurt had ik maer een bequaem Posthouder voor die rivier.

**F** Ik sende heden wederom een expresse aen den Commandeur om hem kennis te geven dat gisteren avond Gerrit Jansse Posthouder op Arinda was afgekomen (van welkers verrigtingen extra voldaan ben) en mij rapport had gedaen dat het Corps Caribis boven bij de val gesproken hadde dat den Uijl hem gelast had mij te seggen dat alles aldaer doorgesogt hadden dog niets gevonden. Dat zij den Aruwak welke het haer aengebragt hadde gevangen genomen hadde en deselve met Tampoko eenige van haer, en eenige Aruwakken afgesonden hadde om een Berbices Neger welke sig daer opghield te vatten en dan denselve nauwkeurig

Caribs; they will do their duty well; but if the fugitives are not stopped at Demerary and can get over the river this matter may have results that can last for years. It is a sad thing that there are so many people who will not understand reason—will not, I say, because it is impossible to believe that they do not grasp the danger and the results of their unwillingness.

I had the honour to inform your Lordships in my last of the discharge of the scoundrel Bakker.

Having also been obliged to remove Pierre Martin, the Postholder of Cuyuni (because the Indians will on no account have a Frenchman there) as well as the one in Maroco, I have no one there now but the two assistants. It now remains to be seen whether the Indians of Maykouny, whither Pierre Martin has gone, will exhibit the same feelings, in which case I shall have to discharge the man *nolens volens*. I fear very much that it will be so, because in Maykouny they are mostly Warouws (the nation which commenced and continued the work in Maroco) where they came to the Post in great numbers and well armed with the openly expressed intention of murdering a French Postholder had they found one there.

I think that when the affairs of Mr. Massol are regulated and put in order Mr. Destouches, who came with him, will undertake a journey to the pyramids and crystal mine; at least he seems to have a great desire to do so.

The Spaniard who got away through the connivance of Mevrouw Rousselet came to Mr. Persik, who immediately wrote to me about it, requesting me to allow him to remain on his plantation until he had an opportunity of sending him with a vessel to Saint Eustatius, which request I granted because he was in safety there.

The desertion of a sergeant and a few men would (especially in time of peace) be scarcely noticed in Europe, but here it is an entirely different matter, our colonies here on the coast having on the one side restless neighbours who cannot long remain still, and on the other side the Spaniards, who have already given us and still give us so many reasons for suspicion that we can really not be careful enough. In Surinam such deserters are received but immediately sent to Europe by the first departing ship.

In Cuyuni it is now quiet so long as it lasts; I wish I had a competent Postholder for that river.

*March 28.*—I am again sending an express today to the Commandeur to inform him that Gerrit Jansse, the Postholder of Arinda, had come down stream and reported to me that he had spoken to the body of Caribs up by the fall; that the Owl had charged him to tell me that everything there had been well searched but that nothing had been found; that they had imprisoned the Aruwak who had brought them there and had sent him off, together with Tampoko, a few Aruwaks, and some of their own men, to catch a negro from Berbice who was living in those parts; that they would closely examine him and attack anything

ondervraegen zoude, iets zijnde daer op afgaen, zoo niet met die Neger en Aruwak af en bij mij soude komen.

Den Posthouder van Arinda heeft mij mede verslag gedaen alles wel boven, en de Natien met malkanderen volkomen in vrede waeren.

Dus is het niet met Dacuwayen boven Demerarij Wapinamien genaemt, deselve hebben drie Caraïbanen van de kant van Berbices dood geslaegen, dit is bij haer onversoenlijk tot dat revengie van genomen is Dus zijn zij in geduurige vreeze van door de Caribis onverwagt aen getast te sullen worden, het welk ook niet manqueeren sal al was het een jaer naer dato. Ik heb den Commandeur aengescreven alle Borgeren en zijn Militaeren wel Ernstig te waerschuwen dat in zoo een geval sig direct of indirect niet sullen hebben te meeleeren of te bemoeijen als alleen om is het doenlijk vrede te maken, en vooral wel zorgen geen der beide partije met Wapenen of andersints te helpen wijl sulx ons dandere partij op den hals soude jaegen en van nootlottige gevolgen worden voor al voor die ingesetenen welke boven en afgesondert woenen en wel voor al daer nu selver zien en ondervinden wat hulpe zij in cas van nood van haere nabuuren zoude krijgen.

Tampoko is gisteren avond met zijn Corps Caraïbanen afgekomen, Wanneer de Canoas aenquaemen dagten wij daer eenige Negers in waeren wijl eenige Caribis daer in saeten welke haer hoofd en aengesicht geheel met haer Salempouns lappen bedekt waeren. Deeze ceremonie was mij waerlijk nog onbekent, wanneer aen de wal quamen vroeg ik Tampoko wat dit beduiden deze antwoord dat zijn die geene welke Negers dood geslaegen hebben, dit is haer manier en moeten een maend lang zoo gaen.

Waer naer de twee Uijlen mij omstandig verslag van haer Expeditie lieten doen zij zeijden dat op dien dag doen de Posthouder van Arinda gesproken hadden en hem een boodschap aen mij hadden gegeven zij nog niets hadde konnen ontdekken, dat zij ten selven dage den Berg Ansan op hadden geklommen om rond te konnen zien, Daer boven op zijnde ontdekten zij aenstonds de Neger hujsen en tuijnen. Waer op seer in haer schrik des anderen daegs smorgens op marsch gingen dat Dichte bij de plaets eerst quamen aen het hujs van een Berbices Vrij Criool pieter genaemt welke wel een jaer of drie als timmerman in Demerarij geweest had en nu op sig selve woonde welke geen mensch mistrouwde en die nog maer een week of ses geleden bij mij aen hujs is geweest.

Tampoko hem thujs vindende was uijter maete gesurpreneert wijl hij hem in het opvaeren nog hier benede gesproken hadde en hem gevraegt of niets van de Negers vernomen hadde waer op antwoorde niets ter waereld, (en die Schurk woonde geen snaphaen schoot van haer af) en vroeg aen Tampoko waer hij naer toe ging, deeze hem niet mistrouwende zeijde ik gae de Negers soeken, moeijte vergeefs zeijde hij daer zijn geene.

Tampoko seer quaede gedagte van sijne schielijke thujskomst opvattende vroeg hem hoe kom jij hier voor mijn die zoo een haest gemaekt hebbe, zijn hier geen Negers omtrent, Neen geen een zeijde hij, Wat hoor ik dan voor een gepraet zeijde hij hier over de kreek, dat weet ik niet zeijde Pieter maer hier zijn geen Negers.

Ondertusschen had Tampoko twee Caribis ge-

he pointed out, but that if there were nothing, A he would come to me with the negro and the Aruwak.

The Postholder of Arinda has reported to me that all is well up there, and that the nations are at perfect peace with each other.

Such is not the case with the Acuways up in Demerary called Wapenansis; these have killed three Caribs on the coast of Berbice, and the latter will not rest until they have had their revenge. The former nation is thus in continual fear of being unexpectedly attacked by the Caribs, which is certain to happen even if it should B be after the lapse of a year. I have written the Commandeur to earnestly warn all the citizens and his soldiers that when this occurs they are not to interfere, directly or indirectly, except to make peace if possible, and especially are they to take care not to provide either party with arms or otherwise to assist them, since such action might bring the other party upon us and have fatal results, especially for those colonists who live up the river in isolated places, and especially since they now see for themselves what help they would get from their neighbours in case of need. C

Tampoko came down the river yesterday evening with his body of Caribs. When the canoes arrived we thought there were some negroes in them, because some of the Caribs had entirely covered their head and face with their salempouris. This custom was quite unknown to me. When they came on shore I asked Tampoko what it meant, and he told me that these were men who have killed negroes; this is their custom, and they must go like that for a month. After which I got the two Owls to give me a full D account of the expedition. They said that on the day when they had spoken to the Postholder of Arinda and given him a message for me they had not yet been able to discover anything; that on the same day they had climbed Mount Ansan to be able to look around. On reaching the top they immediately discovered the negro houses and plantations. Being very pleased with this, they commenced their march on the morning of the next day; that close to the place they first came to the house of a free creole from Berbice named Peter, who had served in Demerary E for about three years as a carpenter, and who was now living alone. No one mistrusted him, and he was at my house only about six weeks ago.

Tampoko was extremely surprised at finding him at home, because he had spoken to him down here before starting, and had asked him whether he had not heard anything of the negroes, whereupon he had answered, "Not the least," and that scoundrel lived only a rifle-shot from them, and asked Tampoko where he was going. The latter not trusting him said, "I am going to look for the negroes." "It is labour in vain," said the other, F "there are none."

Tampoko, being very suspicious concerning his speedy journey home, asked him, "How do you come here before me when I made such haste? Are there no negroes about here?" "No, not one," said he. "What is this talking then that I hear on the other side of the creek?" asked Tampoko. "I don't know," said Peter, "but there are no negroes here."

Meanwhile Tampoko had sent out two Carib

A souden on te spioneer, welke daer komende immediaet door de Negers wierden aengetast en den eene swaer gequetst.

Op haer roepen om hulp vlogen dandere Caribis daer naer toe twee bleven bij Tampoko, aen welke Tampoko zeijde vat die Criool en bind hem Wanneer hij naer het Corps ging.

Die Criool dat hoorende wilde vlugten dog die twee Caribis schooten hem elk een vergiff pijl in den rug en volgde Tampoko bij hem komende vroeg hij haer of de Criool gevat of dood geslaegen hadde zij zeijde neen maer hebben hem twee pijlen in t Lijf geschooten Tampoko zeijde hij moet capot of gevangen waer op eene der selve te rug ging en hem vindende dat voetje voor voetje ging schoot hem nog een pijl in het lijf en bij Tampoko komende zeijde nu heeft hij genoeg sal niet verre meer gaen.

B De Caribis hebben niet lang werk gehad seven mans Negers een Wyf en een meisje doodgeslaegen hebbende zijn drie mans en eenige wijven en kinderen het ontvlugt welke zij niet konden achter haelen. De seven rechter handen hebben zij bij mij Gebragt en ben nu werkelijk bezig haer te betaelen.

C Zij hebben mij versekert D'Acuwaijen van Essequebo beloofd hebben dit restant voor haer rekening te nemen en te sullen opbrengen, Deselve hebben met toestemming der Caribis besit genomen van de Neger broot tuynen welke zij geheel sullen uijt trekken en de huijsen zijn tot de grond toe geslegt en al de geweeren der Negers mede gebragt.

D De Heere zij geloofd dat werk zoo wel is uijtgevallen, wat hadden hier de gevolgen van konnen weezen voor de Colonie voor al zoo een Schurk bij haer hebbende welke hier zoo wel als in Demerary vrij en liber op alle plantagien konde komen niets ter waereld mistrouwd wordende en hebbende mij nog onlangs een attestatie vertoont van Calleway en Bikkel dat op haer plantagie omtrent een jaer gewerkt en sig altoos trouw en Eerlijk gedraegen hadde.

E Wat sullen (schrijf ik heden aen den Commandeur) die schreeuwers in Demerary nu seggen zoo als de Scharde voorlede week nog op verscheijde plaetse zeijde Men geloofd zoo een Criool beter als mijn die alles weet en alles ondersogt hebbe en de Borgers moeten om zijnen wille zoo gefatigueert en getravailleert worden en dat alles om niets daer wil ik voor instaen. Van sulke en diergelijke Discoursen is het vol Ed. Gr. Archb. Heeren en dit is voor den Commandeur en mij daegelijx brood Nu is het onze beurt van spreken maer wat helpt dat met Sulke menschen die denken verschoont zijn met ik had dat niet gedagt, kon het niet geloven.

Mag ik met regt niet seggen dat nu hier Waeksamenheid oplettenheijd en Gedult volstrekt nodig zijn.

scouts, who were immediately attacked by the negroes and one of them severely wounded.

Upon hearing their shouts for help the other Caribs rushed to their assistance, two remaining with Tampoko, to whom the latter said, "Capture this creole and bind him," and thereupon went to the main body.

The creole, hearing this, tried to escape, but the two Caribs sent two poisoned arrows into his back, and followed Tampoko. On their coming up he asked them whether they had caught or killed the creole. They said, "No, but we have sent two arrows into his body." Tampoko said, "He must be killed or taken prisoner," whereupon one of the two went back and finding him dragging himself along shot another arrow at him and coming back to Tampoko said, "Now he has enough, he will not go much farther."

The Caribs were not at work very long, having killed seven men, one woman and one girl—three men and a few women and children, whom they could not pursue, having escaped. They have brought the seven right hands to me, and I am just now occupied in paying them.

They have assured me that the Acuways of Essequebo have promised them to look after the rest and deliver them up. With the permission of the Caribs they have taken possession of the negro bread plantations, which they will entirely lay waste; the houses are already razed to the ground, and all the arms of the negroes have been brought to me.

The Lord be praised that the matter turned out so successfully. What might not the results have been for this Colony, especially when they had such a scoundrel with them who had free access to all the plantations both here and in Demerary, and who was not mistrusted in the least, he having only recently shown me a certificate from Calleway and Bikkel that he had worked on their plantation for about a year and always behaved honestly and loyally.

"What will the busy-bodies in Demerary say now?" I wrote to the Commandeur to-day. Last week de Scharde said in several places "a creole like that is believed before me who know everything and have examined everything, and the burghers are obliged to endure all kinds of fatigues and hardships on his account, and I will wager that it is all for nothing." The Commandeur and myself are obliged to hear such speeches daily. It is our turn to speak now, but what is the use of it with such people, who think that they are excused when they say, "I should not have thought it," or, "I cannot believe it."

May I not justly say that activity, attentiveness, and patience are absolutely necessary here now?

\* \* \* \*

(Signed) L. STORM VAN 'S GRAVESANDE.

*Testimony with the Decrees of the Attack made by order of the Commandant of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, on the Dutch settled in Barima (1768).*

## (1.)

"AÑO de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho. Testimonio de los Autos operados sobre la aprehension de los utensilios y herramientas que se les hizo en el Caño de Varima á los extranjeros Olandeses por el Capitan de la Compañia de Gastadores, Don Francisco Cierito."

"Razon de los efectos que ha entregado oy dia de la fecha en este Real Almacen de mi cargo, Don Francisco Cierito y son los siguientes.

\* \* \* \*

De manera que los efectos contenidos arriba son los mismos de que me he hecho cargo hasta la disposicion de su Señoria el Señor Comandante-General y para que conste lo firme en esta Ciudad de Guayana á onze de Febrero de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho.

NICOLAS MARTINEZ.

IN the year 1768. Copy of the "Autos" made on the seizure of the utensils and implements, taken from the Dutch foreigners in the Creek of Barima by the Captain of Pioneers, Don Francisco Cierito.

" Archivo General de Indias," Seville. Audiencia of Carácas. Letters and Expedientes; 1778. Papeas 131, case 7, bundle 17.

A list of the effects which Don Francisco Cierito has on this day delivered to this Royal warehouse under my charge, and which are as follows:

[Here follows list of articles taken—45 items or lots in all.]

So that the effects enumerated above are the same which are under my charge to await the disposal of the Commandant-General. And for its validity I have signed it in this town of Guayana on the 11th February, 1768.

(Signed) NICOLAS MARTINEZ.

## (2.)

*"Auto" ordering the sale of the effects.*

En esta Ciudad de Guayana á nueve de Abril de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho años: Nos Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Capitan del Real Cuerpo de Artilleria Comandante-General de esta provincia y Don Andres de Oleaga, Contador oficial Real en ella habiendo visto las partidas que contiene el imventario antecedente que aprehendieron en el Caño de Barinas las embarcaciones guardacostas de esta dicha provincia del cargo del Capitan de la Compañia de gastadores Don Francisco Cierito á los extranjeros que en el dicho Caño se havian establecido clandestinamente para el comercio y saca de las maderas y otros frutos: Por tanto deviamos de mandar y mandamos que por razon de estar la mayor inutilizado hallarse passados de la humedad se vendan en publica almoneda sin dilacion prececiendo primero el abaluo y pregones para depositar lo que importaren en la Real Contaduria y á consecuencia proceder á recibir las declaraciones del dicho Capitan de Gastadores y demas que convengan de la tripulacion de su cargo. Por todo lo qual y para que no se atrasen mas en su valor nombramos por terceros abaluaadores al Maestro Herero Estevan Arnaud, y el oficial de plateria Diego Mariño vezinos de esta ciudad á quienes los presentes testigos con quienes actuamos por falta de Escrivano le haran saver esta providencia para que aceptando jure cada uno de por si de usar con fidelidad el oficio en que se les emplea y en igual conformidad le citaran al referido Capitan Cierito para que se halle presente en el acto del Abaluo y en los demas que se han de celebrar hasta su venta; Y por este Auto que proveimos asi lo mandamos y firmamos con los supradichos testigos en papel comun por no correr sellado de que assi certificamos.

CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

In this town of Guayana on the 9th of April, 1768: We, Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Captain of the Royal Artillery Corps, Commandant-General of this Province, and Don Andres de Oleaga, Royal Accountant therein; having seen the entries contained in the foregoing inventory of articles which the coast-guard vessels of this said Province under the Captain of the Company of Pioneers, Don Francisco Cierito, seized in the Creek of Barima from the foreigners who had established themselves clandestinely in the said creek, for trade and exportation of woods and other products. Wherefore we had to order, and do order, that, being for the greater part spoiled from exposure to damp, they be sold by public sale without delay, being first valued and cried, in order to place the amount produced in the Royal "Contaduria"; and therefore that the declarations of the said Captain of Pioneers and others of the crew be taken as required. For all which, and in order that they may not further decrease in value, we appoint as third valuers Estevan Arnaud, master-blacksmith, and Diego Marino, of the "Plateria," inhabitants of this city, to whom the present witnesses, with whom we are acting for want of a notary, shall communicate this order, so that each one for himself may undertake to execute faithfully the office with which they are intrusted. And in like manner they shall summon the said Captain Cierito to be present at the act of valuation, and at whatsoever else may be required until the sale. And by this "Auto" which we have drawn up we thus command and sign, together with the aforesaid witnesses, on ordinary paper, stamped paper not being current, whereunto we certify.

(Signed) CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(3.)

*Inspection of the Goods.*

A En esta Ciudad de Guayana en nueve dias del mes de Abril de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho años : nosotros los infrascriptos testigos que suplieron por indigencia de Escrivano pasamos junto con los terceros abaladores al Almagcen del cargo del condestable de esta Plaza Nicolas Martinez quien habiendo puesto de manifesto todo lo contenido en el imventario que se halla por Cabeza de estos Autos dieron dichos abaladores principio en la manera siguiente.

\* \* \* \*

B Con lo qual y por no haver otros efectos en que continuar se concluyó este abaluo que dixeron haverlo hecho fiel y legalmente so cargo de el juramento que tienen prestado y que es el intrinseco valor en que los han estimado y valen en este pais y para que conste lo firmaron connosotros y el Capitan de gastadores Don Francisco Cierito que se halló presente en papel comun por no correr sellado de que asi certificamos.

Condestable NICOLAS MARTINES.  
ESTEVAN ARNAUD.  
FRANCISCO CIERTO.  
JOSEPH ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

C

In this town of Guayana on the 9th April, 1768 : We, the undersigned witnesses, who acted in default of a notary, went, together with the third valuers, to the warehouse, under the charge of the constable of this fort, Nicolas Martines, who, having shown all that is contained in the inventory which is at the head of these "Autos," the said valuers commenced as follows:

[The same articles as on pp. 1-3, lotted in 52 items, and valued in all at 370 dollars.]

Wherewith, and as there were no other goods, this valuation was concluded, and they declared that they had made it faithfully and legally under obligation of the oath which they had taken, and that they have estimated them at their intrinsic worth and value in this country, and in token thereof have signed it with us and the Captain of Pioneers, Don Francisco Cierito, who was present (on ordinary paper, because stamped paper is not current), whereunto we certify.

(Signed) CONSTABLE NICOLAS  
MARTINES.  
ESTEVAN ARNAUD.  
FRANCISCO CIERTO.  
JOSEPH ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(4.)

*Primero Pregon.**First Notice [of Sale].*

D En onze dias del mês de Abril de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho años : Yo Don Andres de Oleaga, Contador oficial Real de esta provincia ; Estando con los infrascriptos testigos en la puerta principal de esta Real Contaduria que cae á la calle como á hora de las quatro de la tarde mandé que por voz de Francisco Moreno esclavo que hace oficio de pregonero por no haverlo propio se diese el primer pregon á los efectos y utensilios contenidos en al abaluo antecedente que son los mismos que apreso el Capitan de la Compañia de Gastadores Don Francisco Cierito con las embarcaciones guarda-costas y tripulacion de su cargo á los extrangeros extablecidos clandestinamente para sus comercios y tratos en el Caño nombrado de Barimas jurisdiccion de esta provincia y aunque por diferentes ocasiones se repitió el pregon en voz alta del mismo pregonero no compareció postor alguno y por lo mismo se concluyó hasta el dia de mañana ; Y para que conste lo firme con los citados testigos de que certifico.

E

DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

On the 11th day of the month of April, 1768: I, Don Andres de Oleaga, Royal Accountant of this Province :

Being with the undersigned witnesses in the chief door of this Royal Contaduria which opens into the street, about four o'clock in the afternoon, I ordered that by the voice of Francisco Moreno, a slave who acts as crier in default of a regular one, the first announcement should be given of the goods and utensils contained in the foregoing valuation, which are the same that were seized by the Captain of the Pioneer Corps, Don Francisco Cierito, by means of the revenue-vessels and men under his command, from the foreigners clandestinely settled for commerce and traffic in the creek called the Creek of Barima, jurisdiction of this province ; and although the announcement was repeated several times in a loud voice by the same crier, no bidder appeared, and consequently it was ended until the morrow ; and in token I have signed it with the said witnesses, whereunto I certify.

(Signed) DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(5.)

*Segundo Pregon.**Second Notice.*

F

En doze dias del mismo mes y año, yo el dicho Contador con los infrascriptos testigos estando en la puerta principal de esta Real Contaduria por voz del mismo pregonero hize dar otro pregon igual al antecedente ; y aunque se continuó en

On the 12th day of the same month and year: I, the said Accountant, with the undersigned witnesses, being at the principal door of this Royal Contaduria, caused a second announcement to be made by the same crier, similar to the



claras é intelegibles voces por tres distintas ocasiones haciendo expresion segun contiene el abaluo no compareció Postor alguno por lo que se suspendió hasta el dia de mañana y para que conste lo firme junto con los referidos testigos de que certifico.

DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

preceding one; and although it was repeated three separate times in a clear and audible voice, according to the terms of the valuation, no bidder appeared, wherefore it was suspended until the morrow; and in token thereof I have signed this, together with the said witnesses, whereunto I certify.

(Signed) DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(6.)

*Tercero Pregon.*

En treze dias del mes de Abril de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho años; yo el dicho Contador estando en la puerta principal de esta Real Contaduria acompañado de los infrascriptos testigos por voz del mismo pregonero hize dar otro igual á los dos antecedentes, y aunque por distintas ocasiones se repitió expresando las partidas que contiene el abaluo antecedente ninguno hizo postura á ellas por lo que se citaron á remate que se ha de celebrar el dia de mañana á esta misma hora. Y para que conste lo firmé junto con los dichos testigos de que asi certifico.

DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

*Third Notice.*

On the 13th day of the month of April, 1768: I, the said Accountant, being in the principal door of this Royal Contaduria, accompanied by the undersigned witnesses, caused another announcement to be made similar to the two preceding ones and by the same crier, and although it was several times repeated, according to the items contained in the foregoing valuation, no one made any bid; wherefore a sale was called, to be made to-morrow at this same hour; and in token thereof I have signed this, together with the said witnesses, whereunto I certify.

(Signed) DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(7.)

*Remate.*

En esta ciudad de Guayana á catorse de Abril de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho años: Nos Don Manuel Centurion, Guerrero de Torres, Capitan del Real Cuerpo de Artilleria, Comandante Generale de esta Provincia; y don Andres de Oleaga Contador oficial Real propietario, en ella puestos en forma de tribunal, en la puerta principal de esta Real Contaduria que cae á la calle pública acompañado de los testigos con quienes actuamos por defecto de escrivano para hazer tranze, y remate de las Ramientas y demas utensilios y alajas que en estos autos constan abaluidos por personas de inteligencia y conciencia; mandamos que por voz de Francisco Moreno esclavo que haze oficio de pregonero por no haverlo propio se diese un pregon; diciendo los pertrechos utensilios y demas que se apressó á los extrangeros que clandestinamente se hallaban extablecidos en el Caño de Barima jurisdiccion de esta Provincia para la saca de maderas y otros frutos se hallan abaluidos un reloj en treinta y cinco pesos, un mollejon en seis pesos. . . .

\* \* \* \* \*

Y cuyo total importe de dichas partidas exhibieron de contado y cada uno de por si en plata corriente, y yo el dicho Contador me hice cargo en la Real Contaduria recibiendo los de los mencionados rematadores de que me doy por contento; y los mencionados se dieron por entregados de las alajas contenidas y en este mismo acto hizimos comparecer nos los dichos Comandante Generale y contador á Nicolas Martinez condestable y guarda

[696—3]

*Sale.*

In this town of Guayana on the 14th April, 1768: We, Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Captain of the Royal Artillery Corps, Commandant-General of this Province; and Don Andrés de Oleaga, proprietor, Royal Accountant, constituting a tribunal therein, at the principal door of this Royal Contaduria which opens into the public Road, and accompanied by the witnesses with whom we act in default of a notary, in order to make a sale and auction of the implements and other utensils and articles which are entered in these "Autos" and which have been valued by intelligent and conscientious persons, do command that by the voice of Francisco Moreno, a slave who fills the office of crier in default of a regular one, an announcement be made; stating the implements, utensils and other things which were seized from the foreigners who were clandestinely settled in the Creek of Barima, jurisdiction of this province, for the purpose of exporting woods and other products; and the articles valued are a clock at 35 dollars, a grindstone at 6 dollars . . . .

\* \* \* \* \*

[The same articles enumerated again for sale, and again as sold or reserved; with names of purchasers and prices given.]

And the amount of the said items was paid at once and each [buyer paid] separately in current money, and I, the said accountant, received the said monies into the Royal Contaduria from the said auctioneers, wherewith I am content; and the said monies were given against deliveries of the articles specified; and in this same act we, the said Commandant-General and Accountant, caused to appear before us Nicolas Martinez, constable

2 X

**A** Almagcen de esta Plaza á quien mandamos se hiciese cargo en el Almagcen del suio de las partidas mandadas reservar para el servicio de su Magestad que son un Mollejon dos pizarras. . . .

and warehouse-keeper of this fortress, whom we ordered to take under his charge, in his said warehouse, the articles ordered to be reserved for His Majesty's service, which are a grindstone, two slates, &c. . . .

[Here follows the recapitulation of the articles unsold.]

Y el dicho guarda almagcen se dió por entregado á su voluntad realmente y con efecto y se obligó á dar la correspondiente cuenta de ellos cada y quando se le pida y lo firmó conjunto con nosotros rematadores y testigos que suplen y presenciaron en defecto de escrivano de que certificamos.

And the said warehouse-keeper took them into his charge and undertook to give due account of them whensoever it might be demanded, and has signed this, together with us the auctioneers and witnesses, who act in default of a notary; whereunto we certify.

DON MANUEL CENTURION.  
ANDRES DE OLEAGA.  
PEDRO DE LOS.  
BERNARDO DE ROSA.  
JOSEPH RODRIGUES.  
ESTEVAN MIR.  
JUAN FRANCISCO DE LOS REYES.  
ESTEVAN ARNAUD.  
Condestable NICOLAS MARTINEZ.

(Signed) DON MANUEL CENTURION.  
ANDRES DE OLEAGA.  
PEDRO DE LOS.  
BERNARDO DE ROSA.  
JOSEPH RODRIGUES.  
ESTEBAN MIR.  
JUAN FRANCISCO DE LOS REYES.  
ESTEBAN ARNAUD.  
CONSTABLE NICOLAS MARTINEZ.

**C** Testigo JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
Testigo FERNANDO LARREA.

Witnesses :—  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LARREA.

(8.)

*Declaration of First Witness.*

**D** En diez y ocho de Abril de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho años. Nos Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Capitan del Real Cuerpo de Artilleria, Comandante General de esta Ciudad de Guayana y su Provincia, y Don Andres de Oleaga contador unico oficial Real en ella; en prosecucion de lo que tenemos mandado en Auto proveido en nueve del corriente mes hicimos comparecer estando en el tribunal de esta comandancia á Don Francisco Cierito, Capitan de la Compañia de Gastadores y por consiguiente del guarda-costa que asegura los Puertos de esta dicha Provincia, á quien se le recibió juramento que hizo por Dios nuestro Señor y una señal de cruz sob cuyo cargo prometió á Dios y al Rey decir la verdad en quanto supiere y se le fuere preguntado y haviendolo sido por el thenor del antecedente ya referido auto dijo

**E** que haviendo tenido noticia el Señor Comandante General que presente se halla de que en el caño nombrado el de Barima que se halla inmediato á la boca grande del Rio Orinoco y desagua en el se hallavan establecidas varias familias Olandesas le despachó con instrucciones á fin de que por una, dos, y tres veces les amonestase que salieran de todo aquel therritorio por ser anexo á esta mencionada Provincia en cuia virtud el declarante salió con su embarcacion y otra que le acompaño en demanda de dicho caño y haviendo llegado á la boca vió varios Indios de la nacion Cariba y estos

**F** antes que el declarante se aproximase á los establecimientos y labranzas de dichos extranjeros les dieron noticia y con ella se fugitaron sin dar lugar á la notificacion y unicamente encontraron casas abandonadas y los efectos heramientas y utensilios que contiene el inventario los que los embarcaron en las dos envarcaciones y despues de esto les dieron luego á las dichas casas por que no se arraigaran en lo adelante y aniquilaron tambien en quanto les fué posible las labranzas, que es

On the 18th April, 1768: We, Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Captain of the Royal Artillery Corps, Commandant-General of this town of Guayana and its province, and Don Andres de Oleaga, sole Royal Accountant therein; in continuation of what we have ordered in the "Auto" made on the 9th of the current month, being in the tribunal of this command, have caused to appear before us Don Francisco Cierito, Captain of the Company of Pioneers, and consequently of the coast-guard which protects the ports of this said province, who was admitted upon oath which he made by God our Lord and a sign of the Cross, under obligation whereof he promised to God and the King to tell the truth so far as he might know and might be asked, and having been questioned according to the tenour of the foregoing and above mentioned "Auto," he declared: That the Commandant-General there present having received information that in the creek called the Creek of Barima, which is close to the great mouth of the River Orinoco and falls into it, sundry Dutch families were established, dispatched him with instructions to warn them once, twice and thrice to quit the whole of that territory because it belonged to the said province, in virtue whereof the declarant went in his vessel, with another accompanying him, in search of the said creek, and having arrived at the mouth he saw several Indians of the Carib nation, and these, before the declarant could reach the establishments and farms of the said foreigners, gave them intelligence, and thereupon they took to flight without giving an opportunity for the notification; and they only found the deserted houses and the effects, implements and utensils contained in the inventory, which they put on board the two vessels and then set fire to the said houses, in order that they should not form settlements in

quanto pasó y puede declarar en fuerza del Juramento que a fecho en que se afirma y ratifica y siendo necesario lo dirá de nuevo, que es de quarente y siete años de edad poco mas ó menos y lo firmó con nosotros Comandante General y Contador y con los testigos con quienes actuamos por falta de escribano en papel comun por no correr sellado de que assi certificamos.

CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA.  
FRANCISCO CIERTO.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

future, and destroyed the farms as far as they possibly could. And this is all that happened, and that he can declare under obligation of the oath which he has made, wherein it is affirmed and ratified, and if necessary he will repeat it; and he is 47 years of age, more or less, and has signed this with us the Commandant-General and Accountant, and with the witnesses, with whom we are acting in default of a notary, on ordinary paper, because stamped paper is not current, whereunto we certify.

(Signed) CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA.  
FRANCISCO CIERTO. B  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(9.)

*Declaration of Second Witness.*

En el mismo dia més y año: Nos el Comandante General y contador hizimos comparecer en este mismo Tribunal á Manuel Cubas Marinero de la embarcacion guarda-costa de esta provincia para efecto de thomarle su declaracion á quien le recibimos juramento que hizo por Dios nuestro Señor y una senal de Cruz sob cuio cargo prometió á Dios y al Rey decir verdad en quanto supiere y se le fuere preguntado y haviendole sido por el tenor del auto que antecede Dijo; que haviendo salido como marinero en la embarcacion guarda-costa rrio havajo, vajo las ordenes del capitan de la compañía de gastadores Don Francisco Cierto sin noticia alguna para donde; llegados que fueron á la boca del caño de Barima que desagua en el Rio Orinoco inmediato á la Boca grande alli hicieron parada y les refirió el dicho capitan que por el Señor Comandante General que presente es llebava el destino y orden de amonestarles una, dos, y tres veces á los extrangeros extablecidos en dicho caño á fin de que salieran por ser aquel territorio perteneciente á esta dicha provincia y estar proibido de que ningun extrangero se pueda arraigar; y con efecto estando en esto avistaron una porcion de Indios Carives quienes al instante avisaron á los dichos extrangeros por que quando llegaron el que declara y los demas á la situacion no havian encontrado á ninguno sino unicamente abandonadas las casas y las heramientas que constan por el imventario las que envarcaron, y despues dieron fuego á las dichas casas y tambien añaquilaron las labranzas en quanto pudieron y con estas diligensias que hizieron se volvieron inmediatamente Orinoco ariba á hacer escala en el Presidio de la Antigua Guayana; y que es quanto passó y puede declarar en fuerza del juramento que há hecho en que se afirmó y ratifica y siendo necesario lo dira de nuevo, que es de veinte y un años de edad poco mas ó menos y lo firmó con nosotros Comandante General y Contador y testigos con quienes actuamos, en defecto de escribano en papel comun por no correr sellado de que asi certificamos.

CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA.  
MANUEL CUBAS.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

On the same day, month, and year: We, the Commandant-General and Accountant, caused to appear in this same tribunal Manuel Cubas, mariner of the coast-guard vessel of this province, in order to take his declaration, whom we admitted upon oath which he made by God our Lord, and a sign of the Cross, under obligation whereof he promised to God and the King to tell the truth in what he might know and might be asked; and having been questioned according to the tenour of the foregoing "Auto," he declared: That having gone, as mariner, down the river in the coast-guard vessel, under orders of the Captain of the Company of Pioneers, Don Francisco Cierto, without any knowledge of whither they were going; upon arriving at the mouth of the Creek of Barima, which falls into the River Orinoco close to the great mouth, they made a stop, and the said Captain told them that on behalf of the Commandant-General present he was under orders to give warning once, twice, and thrice to the foreigners settled in the said creek to quit it, seeing that it is territory belonging to this said province, and no stranger is permitted to settle there; and while this took place they saw a body of Carib Indians, who at once gave intelligence to the said foreigners, for when the declarant and the others reached the place they did not find a single person but only deserted houses and the implements shown in the inventory, which implements they took on board, and afterwards set fire to the said houses and likewise destroyed the farms as far as they could; and having performed these duties they returned immediately up the Orinoco and anchored at the fortress of old Guayana. And this is all that occurred, and that he can declare under obligation of the oath which he has taken, wherein it is affirmed and ratified, and if necessary he will repeat it; and he is about 21 years of age, and has signed it with us, the Commandant-General and Accountant, and the witnesses with whom we act in default of a notary, on ordinary paper, because stamped paper is not current, whereunto we certify.

(Signed) CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA.  
MANUEL CUBAS.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(10.)

*Declaration of Third Witness.*

A Incontinenti para la justificacion de lo que en el auto antecedente tenemos mandado nos Comandante General y Contador hizimos comparecer en este Tribunal á Juan Francisco Rodriguez marineros de la embarcacion guarda costa á quien se le recibió juramento que hizo por Dios nuestro Señor y una señal de cruz sob cuió cargo prometió decir la verdad en lo que supiere y se le fuere preguntado y habiendole sido por el thenor del antecedente auto dijo que como uno del numero de la tripulacion de la embarcacion guarda costa del cargo del capitan de la compañía de gastadores Don Francisco Cierito salió en ella Orinoco abajo sin saver el destino y luego que llegaron á la boca de Barima que desagua en el mismo Orinoco y junto á la boca grande les hizo una larga oracion el dicho capitan diziendo que hiva con especial orden é instrucciones de su Señoria el Señor Comandante General que presente se halla para amonestarle una, dos, y tres vezes á los extran-jeros que se hallavan establecidos en el dicho caño de Barima, para que saliesen ymediata-mente por no ser admitido fomentar colonia alguna en esta provincia, y estando ya preparados para entrar dentro del mismo caño avistaron una curiara de yndios Caribes que hiva anticipa-damente á darles haviso á los dichos extrangeros y con efecto con esta noticia que tubieron aban-donaron totalmente las casas, y eramientas que contiene el inventario; y quando llegaron el de-clarante y los demas á las avitaciones no encon-traron persona alguna por lo que solo se detu-bieron un corto tiempo en embarcar las dichas eramientas y darles fuego á las casas y luego que executaron volvieron á salir de dicho Barima al Orinoco, y vinieron al Presidio de la Antigua Guayana; y que es quanto pasó y puede declarar en fuerza del juramento que ha fecho en que se afirma y ratifica, y siendo necesario promete decir de nuevo esto mismo, que es de veinte y cinco años de edad poco mas ó menos, y no lo firmó por que dijo no saberlo hacer, hizimos nos los dichos Comandante General y Contador con los testigos con quienes actuamos por falta de escribano de que assi certificamos.

CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA,  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

E

On the same day, for the certification of that which we have commanded in the foregoing "Auto:" We, the Commandant-General and Accountant, caused to appear in this tribunal Juan Francisco Rodriguez, seaman of the coast-guard vessel, who was admitted upon oath which he made by God our Lord and a sign of the Cross, under obligation whereof he promised to tell the truth concerning what he might know and might be asked; and upon being questioned according to the tenour of the foregoing "Auto," he said: That as one of the crew of the coast-guard vessel under the Captain of the Company of Pioneers, Don Francisco Cierito, he went therein down the Orinoco, without knowing whither they were bound, and as soon as they reached the mouth of Barima, which falls into the said Orinoco close to its great mouth, the said Captain made them a long speech, saying that he was under special orders and instructions from the Commandant-General present to give warning once, twice, and thrice to the foreigners who were settled in the said Creek of Barima, that they should depart immediately, as it was not permitted to establish any Colony in this province; and being ready to enter the said creek they saw a canoe of Carib Indians going before them to give intelligence to the said foreigners, who in consequence of the intimation they received completely abandoned their houses and left the implements contained in the inventory; and when the declarant and the others reached the dwellings they did not find any one, and consequently they only remained a short time in order to take on board the said implements and to set fire to the houses, and directly they had done it they turned and went out of the said Barima into the Orinoco and came to the fortified settlement of old Guayana. And this is all that happened, and that he can declare under obligation of the oath which he has made, wherein it is affirmed and ratified, and if necessary he promises to repeat it, and he is about 25 years of age, and has not signed it because he said that he did not know how to do so; we, the said Commandant-General and Accountant, have signed this, together with the witnesses with whom we are acting in default of a notary, whereunto we thus certify.

(Signed) CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(11.)

*Declaration of Fourth Witness.*

E luego incontinenti nos los dichos Coman-dante General y Contador para el mismo efecto hicimos comparecer á Joseph Gregorio Gomes uno de los de la tripulacion de la embarcacion guarda costa de esta provincia á quien se le recibió jura-mento que hizo por Dios nuestro Señor y una señal de cruz sob cuió cargo prometió decir la verdad en quanto supiere y se le fuere preguntado y habiendosele interrogado por el auto que ante-cede dijo que habiendo salido el que declara en la embarcacion corsaria de esta provincia á las ordenes de su Capitan Don Francisco Cierito sin saber el destino que llevaban luego que se aproximaron á

And on the same day We, the said Commandant-General and Accountant, did, for the same purpose, cause to appear Joseph Gregorio Gomes, one of the crew of the coast-guard vessel of this province, who was admitted upon oath which he made by God our Lord and a sign of the Cross, under obligation whereof he promised to tell the truth in whatsoever he might know and might be asked, and having been questioned according to the foregoing "Auto," he said: That having gone in the cruiser of this province under Captain Don Francisco Cierito without knowing whither they were bound, as soon as they approached the mouth

la boca del caño de Barima que desagua en el Rio Orinoco mandó parar dicho capitan y haciendoles una larga arenga á el declarante y á los demas les dijo que por especial orden de su Señoria el Señor Comandante General que presente se halla tenia que amonestalles una, dos, y tres veces, á los extrangeros extablecidos dentro del dicho caño de Barima á que saliesen de todo aquel theritorio y estando en esta oracion avistaron una curiara que á toda prisa subia gobernada por la nacion Cariba á darles havisio y con efecto con esta noticia se fugitibaron todos sin haver quedado ninguno porque quando llegaron á las havitaciones solo encontraron las casitas abandonadas como igualmente la ramienta que condujerou, y contiene el inventario que se halla en estos autos, por lo que solo se detubieron un corto ratto y el tiempo que nesesitaron para quemar las dichas casas y hacer el embarque de las ramientas, y con solo esta diligencia volvieron á el Presidio de Guaiana; y que es quantto passó y puede declarar en fuerza del juramento que ha fecho en que se afirma y ratifica y siendo nesesario promete decir lo mismo, que es de edad de veinte y un años poco mas ó menos, y no lo firmó por que dijo no saver, lo hizimos nos los dichos Comandante General y Contador con los testigos con quienes actuamos por falta de escrivano en papel comun por no correr sellado de que certificamos.

CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

of the Creek of Barima, which falls into the River Orinoco, the said Captain ordered them to stop, and making a long speech to the declarant and the others, told them that, by special command of the Commandant-General present, he was to give warning once, twice, and thrice to the foreigners settled within the said Creek of Barima, to quit the whole of that territory; and during this speech they saw a canoe rowed by Carib Indians, which was going up at full speed to give them intelligence, and in consequence of this intimation they all took to flight without leaving a single person: for when they arrived at the dwellings they only found the cabins deserted and the implements left behind, which implements they brought back, as shown in their inventory inserted in these "Autos;" wherefore they only stayed for the short time necessary to burn the said houses and to put the implements on board, and having performed this duty they returned to the fortified settlement of Guayana. And this is all that occurred, and that he can declare under obligation of the oath which he made, wherein it is affirmed and ratified, and if necessary he promises to repeat it; and he is about 21 years of age, and has not signed it because he said he did not know how; we, the said Commandant-General and Accountant, have signed it, together with the witnesses with whom we are acting in default of a notary, on ordinary paper, because stamped paper is not current, whereunto we certify.

(Signed) CENTURION.  
DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(12.)

*Auto.**"Auto.*

D

En esta ciudad de Guaiana á diez y nueve de Abril de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho años. Nos Don Manuel Centurion Guerero de Torres Capitan del Real Cuerpo de Artilleria y Comandante General de esta Provincia y Don Andres de Oleaga unico oficial real propietario en ella; haviendo visto estos autos y lo que de las quatro declaraciones constantes resulta y por el misma caso de que los Olandeses intrusamente se quisieron apoderar del therittorio de Barima jurisdiccion de esta provincia donde tenian fomentadas labranzas y casas para poner en practica la saca de maderas y otros frutos clandestinamente para lo que segun noticia tambien tenian agregados algunos esclavos cimaronos fugitivados de las Provincias de Cumaná y Carácas para que como practicos havisen á los vasallos de mala ley que solamente se emplean en furtibas estraciones por caletas y parages escuzadose incognitos por tanto y por que por varias Leyes y novisimas cedula expedidas por Su Magestad se halla prohibido que porningun pretesto se les permita intolere á los extrangeros el libre uso de establecerse en estos dominios levantando nuevas colonias atendiendo á esta importancia y á las repetidas cedulas pracmaticas que lo prohiben debiamos declarar y declaramos que los citados Olandeses por el delito que han cometido y pena en que han incurrido pierdan las ramientas y demas que se les encontraron y se conducieron por el capitan de las embarcaciones guarda costas y se apliquen á el Real fisco cuyo importe de trecientos ochenta y seis pesos en su consecuencia mandamos que sacandose las costas

[696—3]

In this town of Guayana on the 19th April, 1768: We, Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Captain of the Royal Artillery Corps and Commandant-General of this Province, and Don Andres de Oleaga, sole Royal Officer therein, proprietor, having seen these "Autos" and the result of the four declarations therein, and whereas the Dutch have unwarrantably sought to take possession of the territory of Barima, jurisdiction of this province, where they had established farms and houses to carry on the exportation of woods and other products in a clandestine manner, for which purpose, according to information received, they had likewise gathered together certain runaway slaves, fugitives from the provinces of Cumaná and Carácas, to act as pilots, and point out the lawless Spanish subjects who only occupy themselves in carrying on clandestine exportation along the creeks and landing-places which are out of the way and unknown: wherefore, and also seeing that by various laws, and the most recent "Cedulas" issued by His Majesty, it is forbidden under any pretext whatsoever to suffer or permit foreigners to exercise the freedom of establishing themselves in these dominions by establishing new colonies, considering the importance thereof, and the repeated pragmatic Cedula which prohibit it, we have had to declare and do declare that the said Dutch by the crime they have committed, and the penalty they have incurred, must forfeit the implements and other things which they were found to possess, and which were brought by the

2 Y

A prosales cuja tasacion se comete á Don Diego Azero residente en esta ciudad se reparta arreglado á las Leyes once del libro ocho titulo diez y siete y teniendo presente la Real cedula fecha en Aranjuez á catorze de Junio del año pasado de mil setecientos sesenta y quatro con la demostracion practica executada en el año de sesenta y dos: y por este auto que hemos proveido asi lo declaramos y pronunciamos en definitiva que firmamos con los testigos de nuestra asistencia en papel comun por no correr sellado de que certificamos.

B

DON MANUEL CENTURION.  
ANDRES DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

Captain of the coast-guard vessels, and that they be devoted to the Royal Treasury; therefore we order that their amount of 386 dollars, after deducting the costs, the assessment of which is intrusted to Don Diego Azero, a resident of this city, be distributed according to Laws No. 11 of Book 8, Title 17, and in view of the Royal Cedula dated in Aranjuez on the 14th June of the year 1764, with the instructions ("demostracion practica") issued out in the year [17]62; and by this "Auto" which we have drawn up, we thus declare and pronounce definitely, signing it together with the witnesses present, on ordinary paper, because stamped paper is not current, whereunto we certify.

(Signed) DON MANUEL CENTURION.  
ANDRES DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

(13.)

*Tassacion de Costas.*

*Assessment of Costs, &c.*

C

[Omitted.]

[Not translated.]

(14.)

*Auto de Liquidacion.*

*Decree for Settlement of Account.*

D

En esta ciudad de Guaiana á veinte y dos de Abril de mil setecientos sesenta y ocho años. Nos Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres Capitan del Real cuerpo de Artilleria Comandante general de esta Provincia, y Don Andres de Oleaga unico oficial Real y Contador de la Real Hacienda en ella: Haviendo visto estos Autos operados sobre la entrada que les hizo el Capitan de gastadores Don Francisco Cierta con las dos Lanchas guardacostas de su cargo y con la misma tripulacion y gente de su compania á los extrangeros Olandeses que intrusamente se havian establecido para sus comercios clandestinos de maderas y otros frutos en el Caño de Barima, jurisdiccion de esta Provincia que desagua (como tal) en el Rio Orinoco, y atendidas las circunstancias de la fuga que hicieron sin quererse aguardar dejando abandonadas las rramientas de su manejo y demas muebles y raices

E

que en dichos extablecimientos se encontraron y la venta que se ha hecho de las partidas que condujeron aplicando su importancia al Real fisco por los motivos y razones que especifica el Auto en su consecuencia proveido en diez y nueve del corriente, Portanto deviamos de mandar y mandamos que en conformidad de la Ley once, del Libro ocho, titulo diez y siete de la de estas Yndias y con arreglo á las Reales cédulas de once de Julio de mil setecientos cinquenta y ocho, catorse de Junio de setecientos sesenta y quatro, y la demostracion practica se proceda á la quenta de la division y particion del principal

F

importe de este commiso en la forma y manera siguiente . . . .

Quedan Liquidos ciento ochenta y quatro pesos tres reales catorse maravedis y un tercio de otro como correspondientes á su Magestad por razon de las tres partes que se le aplican arreglado á las eittadas cédulas y tanto que se observa en esta Real Contaduria desde primero de este corriente

In this town of Guayana on the 22nd of April, 1768: We, Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Captain of the Royal Artillery Corps, Commandant General of this Province, and Don Andrés de Oleaga, sole Royal Officer and Accountant of the Royal Treasury therein, having seen the "Autos" drawn up on the expedition made by the Captain of Pioneers, Don Francisco Cierta, with the two coast-guard launches under his charge and their crew and the men of his company, against the Dutch foreigners who had unlawfully established themselves, for clandestine trade in woods and other products, in the Creek of Barima, jurisdiction of this province, which falls (under the same name) into the river Orinoco, and in view of the way in which they took to flight without endeavouring to defend themselves, leaving their implements and other furniture and goods which were found in the said settlements, and in view of the sale which has been made of the articles brought back, the amount thereof being paid into the Royal Treasury according to the motives and reasons specified in the "Auto" drawn up thereon on the 19th inst.; inasmuch as we had to command and do command that in conformity with Law 11 of Book 8, title 17 of the law of these Indies, and according to the Royal Cédulas of 11 July, 1758, 14 June, 1764, and the instructions ("demostracion practica"), the division and distribution of the total amount of this matter be carried out in the form and manner following:

[Here follows the account and balance-sheet.]

There remains a balance of 184 pesos 3 reals 14½ maravedis due to His Majesty, by reason of the three divisions which apply thereto, in conformity with the said Cédulas and with the tariff which has been observed in this Royal Contaduria from the beginning of the current year,



año por haverse conducido un exemplar del Tribunal y Real Audiencia de cuentas de la Ciudad de Santa Fé nuevo Reino de Granada en el mes antecedente de Diciembre de sesenta y siete.

Por todo lo qual deviamos de mandar y mandamos que los relacionados ciento ochenta y quatro pesos tres reales catorse maravedis y un tercio de otro liquidos se apliquen á S. M. en le ramo de comisos en cuiu virtud yo el dicho oficial Real me hago cargo desde aora en la misma estacion segun corresponde; Y se declara en iguales terminos que los doscientos quarenta y un pesos tres reales diez y siete maravedis importe de los utensilios y pertrechos de guerra que como necesarios para el Real servicio quedaron por el precio de su Abaluo en el Almacen del cargo del Condestable Nicolas Martinez; se carguen á S. M. rebajando de ellos veinte pesos en que se vendió el bote haciendo constante por certificasion de dicho Condestable que se acumulava á estos Autos: Y por este que hemos proveido asi lo mandamos y firmamos con los infrascriptos testigos de nuestra asistencia que sirven en defecto de escrivano en papel comun por no correr sellado de que certificamos.

DON MANUEL CENTURION.  
ANDRES DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREA.

a copy having been brought from the Tribunal and Royal Audiencia of Accounts of the city of Santa Fé, New Kingdom of Granada, in the preceding month of December [17]67. For all of which we had to command and do command that the said 184 dollars 3 reals and 14½ maravedis be credited to His Majesty in the section of confiscations; in virtue whereof, I, the said Royal officer, duly take charge from this time in the said place; and it is declared in like terms that the 241 dollars 3 reals 17 maravedis is the value of the utensils and munitions of war which, as being requisite for the Royal service, have remained at their valuation price in the warehouse under the charge of Constable Nicolas Martinez; it is charged to His Majesty, deducting therefrom 20 pesos for which the boat was sold as shown by the certificate of the said constable which will be annexed to these "Autos;" and by this which we have drawn up we thus command and sign together with the undersigned witnesses, who act with us in default of a notary, on ordinary paper, as stamped paper is not current, whereunto we certify.

(Signed) DON MANUEL CENTURION.  
ANDRES DE OLEAGA.  
JOSEPH DE ALOZEN.  
FERNANDO LAREO.

Concuerta este traslado con los Auttos originales de su contenido que para la comprobacion de las quanttas del año passado de mil settecientos sesenta y ocho se remitten al Tribunal de quanttas de Santa Feé de donde saqué en veintte y seis foxas para dexar en el Archivo de estos Reales officios ciertto, y verdadero, correxido, y concerttado. Y para que constte assi lo certifico, y firmo con los testigos de mi asistencia en papel comun, por no correr sellado oy dia diez y ocho de Julio de mil settecientos sesenta y nueve años.

ANDRES DE OLEAGA.  
(Su rúbrica.)  
FERNANDO LAREA.  
(Su rúbrica.)  
MIGUEL DE OLEAGA.  
(Su rúbrica.)

This transcript agrees with the original "Autos," which for the verification of the accounts of the year 1768, are forwarded to the Tribunal of Accounts of Santa Fé, from which I copied it in 26 folios, to remain in the archives of these Royal offices as a certain, true, correct and verified copy; and in token thereof I thus certify and sign it with the witnesses here present, on ordinary paper, because stamped paper is not current, on this 18th July, 1769.

(Signed) ANDRES DE OLEAGA.  
(Rubric.)  
FERNANDO LAREA.  
(Rubric.)  
MIGUEL DE OLEAGA.  
(Rubrica.)

No. 444.

*Director-General, Essequibo (in Demerary), to West India Company, June 1, 1768.*

(Extracts.)

DE Hoofd Visscherije Ed. Gr. Achb. Heeren is altoos geweest in de mond en tusschen d'Eijlanden van Orinoco bij de Warauwen daer alle jaeren twee mael naer toe gesonden wierd om Markott te zouten, dit is noijt belet als nu onlangs tot onuijtsprekelijke schade van Comp. plantagien en Colonie want nu die vis ontbeerende en de Slaeven echter rantsoen van kost moetende ontfangen moet continueel Bakeljauw gekogt worden dat in een jaar al hoog loopt en mij met de betaling somwijle seer verlegen maekt zoo als nog deeze week over de 300 f. aen Capt. Andrews hebbe betaelt de 12 vaeten vlees die elke plan-

THE principal fishery, my Lords, has always been in the mouth and between the islands of Orinoco, near the Warouws, to which we send salting markott twice every year. This has never been prevented until recently, to the inexpressible injury of the Company's plantations and Colony, because there now being a want of that fish, and the slaves being obliged to have their rations, salt cod has continually to be bought, which even in one year runs pretty high, and sometimes brings me into difficulties with the payment. Only this week I paid over 300 guilders to Captain Andrew; the twelve casks of meat which each plantation

**A** tagie jaarlijks krijgt kunnen hier niets aen toebrengen en duysend pond Stokvis is gauw weg.

Dandere Visserije is in de twee drooge Saisoenen aen de zeekant op Querman welke Seer onzeker is Sedert 1763 op geen Saisoenen meer konnende rekenen, nu zijn wij in het hartje van den droogen tijd en is nog geen enkele Querman op de kust, buyten dat kost deeze visserije oneijndig meer als dandere DARuwakken die deeze doen wel vier maer zoo veel betaling willende hebben, &c.

**B** De Posten zijn nu wel en in ordre die van Maroco en Cajoenij diende versterkt te worden, maer Roomsche Soldaeten mogen daer niet weezen en wij hebben zoo te seggen geen andere, Maroco soude anders seker renfort gesonden hebben want onze Schurken van deserteurs, sijn met eenige Spanjaerds in Barima gekomen en hebben de Weduwe La Riviere al haer Slaeven en al haer goed afgenomen. Hier was weijnig aengelegen want hadde Jan la Riviere volstrekt verbode sig neder te sette tusschen Essequibo en Orinoco en tot meerder sekerheid sulx in sijn pas laete setten, en is ook door den Raed verboden in Barima sig neder te setten maer sij hadden gedreijgd de Post van Maroco ook te sullen komen aflopen. **C** Dog eenige insultes aen de Caraibanen gedaen hebbende, en deeze niet veel kortswijl verstaende hebben Hendrik Rodemeijer en den Tamboer Jacobus van Maelen dood geslaegen, en hebben mij selver kennis daer van komen geven, doen ik haer seijde dat qualijk gedaen hadden zijde zij het zijn immers Touarimbos dat is te seggen weglopers van hier daer is niet aen verbeurt en doen niet als quaed Waer op antwoorde dat is waer en in zoo verre niet veel aengelegen maer u lieden had die levendig moete vangen en hier brengen dan had **D** gij goede betaling gekrege waer op repliceerde het is wel wij sullen trachten dandere twee te krijgen. Zou dat nu niet gelove de Post eenig gevaer meer loopt, want gelove niet de Spanjaerde sig openlijk bij haer soude durven voegen, en den Posthouder heeft Spions in overvloede om op zijn hoede te weezen.

Ten uijterste noodsaekelijk was het dat wij Protestantsche Soldaeten bequaemen, ik ben versekert UEGA van de noodsaekelijkheid hier van overtuigd zijn, maer hoe weijnig hoop daer toe is zie ik uijt de laetste versending daer op een stuk of vier nae alle Roomsgesinden zijn, en uijt het schrijven van UEGA moet ik besluijten UEGA daer in seer misleijd zijn. **E**

Hier door worden mij de handen volstrekt gebonden en kan niets op de Posten uijtgevoert worden en deselve staen dagelijx aen de Plundering bloot, een Posthouder kan sig niet voor eenige daegen absenteeren laet staen voor eenige weeken zoo als hij zoude moeten doen om eenige ontdekkingen te doen. Wij hebben nu een braeve Posthouder op Arinda welke in 6 maende meer gedaen heeft als dandere in 6 jaeren, maer versterking is al zijn roepen om verder te konnen gaen, konnende de Post onder die Wilde Natien niet alleen laeten, of al sijn brood en goedere worden gestoolen, en om landwaerds in te gaen is voor geen eenig persoon raedsaem moete ten minste met haer beijde weezen, in cas van siekte, &c. **F**

Het Guarnisoen der twee rivieren diende Seker op hondert koppen te wezen (in Berbices sijn zoo)

gets annually are of little use, and 1,000 lbs. of fish is soon gone.

The other fishery is carried on in the two dry seasons on the sea-coast for querman; it is very uncertain, the seasons having been unreliable since 1763. We are now at the height of the dry season, and there is not a single querman on the coast. This fishery moreover costs immeasurably more than the others, the Aruwaks who are engaged in it requiring four times as much pay, &c.

The Posts are now in proper order; those at Maroco and Cuyuni ought to be strengthened: but Roman Catholic soldiers ought not to be sent there, and we have, so to say, no others. I should otherwise certainly have sent reinforcements to Moruka, because our rascally deserters have arrived in Barima with a few Spaniards and have robbed the widow la Riviere of all her slaves and property. This did not matter very much, because I had strictly forbidden Jan la Riviere to settle between Essequibo and Orinoco, and for greater security I had this inserted in his pass; he was also forbidden by the Court to settle in Barima. The deserters also threatened to come and make a raid upon the Post of Moruka, but having offered a few insults to the Caribs, the latter, being rather short-tempered, killed Hendrik Rodemeyer and the drummer Jacobus Van Maelen, and came to bring me information of what they had done. When I told them that they had acted wrongly, they said that the killed men were only Touarimbos, that is to say, runaways who are no great loss, and who are only mischievous. Whereupon I answered "That is true as far as regards their being no great loss, but your people ought to have taken them alive, and brought them here, then you would have received good payment." Whereupon he replied, "Very well, we shall try to get the other two." I therefore do not think that the Post is in any danger now, because I do not believe that the Spaniards would dare to join them openly, and the Postholder has abundance of scouts and is on his guard.

It is of the utmost necessity that we should have Protestant soldiers. I am certain that your Lordships are convinced of the necessity of this, but how little hope there is of getting them I see from the last shipment which, with the exception of about four, consisted of none but Catholics, and from your Lordships' letter I can only conclude that your Lordships have been greatly deceived.

This ties my hands completely, and nothing can be done at the Posts, which are daily exposed to pillage; the Postholder cannot absent himself for a few days, let alone for a few weeks, as he would have to do to make any discoveries. We have now a good Postholder at Arinda who has done more in six months than the others did in six years, but reinforcements is his daily cry in order to be able to go farther, it being impossible to leave the Post alone among those savage nations without having all his bread and merchandise stolen, and it is inadvisable for any one to go inland unless there are at least two of them, in case of illness, etc.

The garrison of the two rivers ought to consist of at least 100 men (as it does in Berbice),

maer indien Roomsgesinde, was het beter het zoo bleef, en selver minder, wyl de nabijheid der Spanjaerden ons Continueel in gevaer brengt van desertie, dewelke door wat veele gelijk ondernomen wordende, van fatale gevolge voor sommige plantagien konde weezen, daer seer voor gevreesd is wanneer die seven gelijk gedeserteert zijn, en nae zenden durft men niet, niet alleen om het kleijn getal maer om dat men bedugt is, de naegesondene, de wegelopers zoude volgen voor al een goed vaertuijg en provisien hebbende.

\* \* \* \*

De Descriptie welke dEer gehad hebbe UEGA te geven van onze naeburige Spaensche Gouverneurs. is naer het leven, en gansch niet gehaagt, UEGA mogen wel seggen de Goede God bewaere donze voor soortgelijk, want te totaale ruijne derselve zoude al seer gauw volgen.

Maer Ed. Gr. Achb. Heeren dit zoude ook zoo gemakkelijk niet gaan met Vrij geboorene Nederlanders of Engelsche, als met menschen gebooren onder een Despotique regering aen de Slavernij gewent, want dingesetene altoos van Guajana en Trinitados sijn Slaeven in den nauwsten zin genomen. Sulke Gouverneurs soude het niet lang maken, en de kamer van H. H. M. en van UEGA zoude gauw daveren van de klagten, en met volkome regt.

Wat hebben die menschen ook als vee waer toe haer de voorzienigheid kostelijke weijden gegeven heeft en anders ter waereld niets eijge brood gebrek lijden sij. Haer luijheid soude men seggen is de reden daer van, dit is wel eenigsints waer, maer wie arbeid gaeren voor een ander indien wij onze Slaeven het brood uijt haer tuijnen als het ons gelusten weg naemen, Denken UEGA zij op haer vrije Saterdag met veel lust of ijver zoude werken ? in het geheel niet.

\* \* \* \*

De Heeren Windhuijsen en La Barre Sijn voorlede week hier gearriveert om Possessie te nemen van de Plantagie St. Jan welke zij gekogt hebben van de Heer Gouverneur van St. Eustatius J. De Wind voor 120,000 f.

De Hr. La Barre agent van sedert 15 Jaeren in Martinique van de Spaensche Gouverneurs van deeze kust heeft mij verhaelt dat omtrent drie maende geleden strikte en volstreckte bevelen van Sijn Catholique Majesteijt aen die gouverneurs was gekomen om geene Slaeven horende aen onderdaenen van Vrankrijk Engeland of den Staet meer te verkopen maer de selve aen te houden en aen DEijgenaers te restitueeren ook dEijgenaers als bekend waeren te verwittigen.

Hij versekerde mij sulx een vaste waerheid was dat hij die bevelen selver gezien en gelezen hadde en verscheijde brieven van de Spaensche Gouverneurs bij sig hadde over dit subject en hij mij die soude laete sien.

Dat (tot meerder bevestiging) 9 Fransche Slaeven van Cajenne in Orinoque gekomen door den Gouverneur van Orinoque verkogt waeren en daer van rapport aen den Gouverneur van Caragues gedaen hebbende denselve hem geordonneert hadde het geld voor konings Casse aen hem over te maeken. Dat in die tusschen tijd de bevelen aengekomen zijnde den Gouverneur van Caragues aen die van Orinoque het geld te rug gesonden hadde met bevel het de kopers te rug te geven en hem die Slaeven te senden het welk geschied sijnde deselve naer Martinique gesonden en door hem La Barre ontfangen en aen den Gouverneur van Martinique waeren overgelevert.

[696 - 3]

but if they are to be Catholics it would be better A to remain as we are, and even less, since the proximity of the Spaniards is a standing danger of desertion, and if the opportunity were embraced by many at once it would have fatal results for some plantations. This was very much feared when those seven deserted together, and we do not dare to send any one after them, not only on account of the smallness of our numbers, but because it is feared that those who are sent would join the runaways, especially if they have a good boat and provisions.

\* \* \* \*

The description of our neighbouring Spanish B Governors which I had the honour to send your Lordships, is taken from life and by no means exaggerated. Your Lordships may well say, "May God preserve our colonists from such!" because such government would soon result in total ruin.

But, my Lords, that would not be so easy with free-born Netherlands or Englishmen as with people born under a despotic rule and accustomed to slavery, since the colonists all coming from Guayana and Trinidad are slaves in the narrowest sense of the word. Such Governors would not be tolerated long, and the Chamber of their High C Mightinesses and of your Lordships would soon re-echo with perfectly justifiable complaints.

What have these people but their cattle, for which Providence has given them excellent pastures? They have nothing else in the world, and are actually in want of bread. It might be urged that this is due to their sloth. This is true in a sense, but who would willingly work for another? If we took the bread from the gardens of our slaves, do your Lordships think they would work for love of the thing on their free Saturdays? By no means.

\* \* \* \*

Messrs. Windhuysen and La Barre arrived here last week to take possession of the plantation Saint Jan, which they have bought from J. de Wind, the Governor of Saint Eustatius, for 120,000 guilders.

Mr. La Barre, the agent in Martinique of the Spanish Governors of this coast for the past fifteen years, has told me that about three months ago strict and well defined orders had come from His Catholic Majesty to those Governors to sell no more slaves belonging to subjects of France, E England, or the State, but to detain the same and restore them to the owners, and also to give information to the owners, if they were known.

He assured me that this was perfectly true, and that he had himself seen and read those orders, and that he had several letters from the Spanish Governors on this subject with him, and that he would let me see them.

That (in further confirmation) nine French slaves coming from Cayenne to Orinoco had been sold by the Governor of Orinoco, and the report of the matter sent to the Governor of Carácas, who had then ordered him to hand over the money for the account of the Royal Treasury. F In the meantime, the above-mentioned orders having arrived, the Governor of Carácas had sent back the money to the Governor of Orinoco with orders to return it to the buyers and to send him the slaves in question, which was done, the slaves being sent to Martinique and received by him, La Barre, and delivered to the Governor of Martinique.

2 Z

A Wat zoude dit een heerlijke zaak voor deeze Colonie weezen, Het is niet nodig mij hier over uijt te breijden, de Saek spreekt van selfs Voors La Barre sal als eenige daegen uijt gerust heeft mij een brief senden voor den Gouverneur van Orinoque over dit subject waer bij eene van mij sal voegen en door den Posthouder van Maroco met secuure Indiaenen laeten bestellen, zoo drae wij antwoord hebben bekomen sal ik niet in gebreken blijven het selve aen U. E. G. A. te communicceeren per eerste occasie.

B Wij bevinden ons jegenswoordig in seer hachelijke omstandigheden, zijnde DACuwaijen en Caribis nu in een openbaeren Oorlog sullende waarschijnlijk een groot bloedbad in korten veroorsaeken.

Hier had een gerucht gelopen dat Tampoko met de Caribis geen Negers maer Indiaenen dood geslaegen hadde en de afgebrachte handen, handen van Indiaenen waeren. Indien sulx waer mogt bevonden worden, hebbe noijt een schelmstuk voorsigtiger overlegt en met waarschijnlijker omstandigheden bekleed gezien zoo zoude geloof ik den Sathan selver bedrogen kunnen worden.

C Ik heb de Heer Van der Heijde welke midden onder de Caribis woond versogt dit nauwkeurig te willen examineeren die heeft diijlen reeds bij hem gehad, welke stout en stijf dese beschuldiging ontkennen (ik kan het ook als nog qualijk geloven) hij sal voortgaen met zijn onderzoeken en mij Tampoko zoo als thuijs komt afsenden.

D Den Tamboer Jacobus van Maelen die met den Posthouder van Maroco gedeserteert was en welke men dagt door de Caribis doodgeslaegen te weezen zijnde dit eene der andere Deserteurs over gekomen is met een Neger van Juffrouw Persik te rug gekomen voorgevende door den Posthouder gedwongen te weezen door swaere dreijgementen, hij verhaelt dat alle de Fransche Deserteurs van hier daer onder den Posthouder met een Fransche barq naer Martinique zijn vertrokken en dat Streep daer voor Timmerman ageert en Philip Boucher Constapel is in Guayana.

What a splendid thing this would be for this Colony! It is unnecessary for me to dilate upon it here, the matter speaks for itself. When he has had a few days' rest La Barre will send me a letter on this subject for the Governor of Orinoco, to which I shall add one of my own, and get the Postholder of Moruka to have it delivered by safe Indians. As soon as we receive a reply I shall not fail to send the same to your Lordships by the first opportunity.

We are at present in very precarious circumstances, the Acuways and Caribs being now in open war, which will probably bring about a great massacre shortly.

There was a report here that Tampoko and the Caribs had not killed negroes but Indians, and that the hands brought down were the hands of Indians. If such were found to be true I have never seen a rascally trick executed more carefully and clothed with more feasible circumstances, and I think that Satan himself might be deceived in this way.

I have requested Mr. van der Heyde, who lives right amongst the Caribs, to be good enough to carefully examine the matter; he has already had the Owls at his place, who stoutly and emphatically deny this accusation. (I can scarcely believe it myself.) He will continue his investigations and send me down Tampoko as soon as he comes home.

The drummer Jacobus van Maelen, who ran away with the Postholder of Moruka, and who was believed to have been killed by the Caribs (this fate having in reality befallen one of the other deserters) has returned, together with a negro belonging to Miss Persik, and alleges that he was coerced by the dire threats of the Postholder. He relates that all the French deserters from here, together with the Postholder, have left for Martinique in a French vessel, and that Streep is a carpenter and Philip Boucher a constable, in Guayana.

(Signed) L. STORM VAN 'S GRAVESANDE.

E

No. 445.

*Director-General, Essequibo (Demerary), to West India Company, June 6, 1768.*

(Extract.)

(Postscript.)

F NU word het regt ernst Ed. Gr. Achb. Heeren, gisteren avond is een expresse van Berbices gearriveert, met bericht de Caribis boven Berbices door DACuwaijen geslagen zijnde een Corps van over de 600 Caribis het Fort aldaer gepasseert waeren welke nevens eenige andere Corpsen de weg naer boven Demerarij en Essequibo waeren ingeslaegen, zoo dat nu onse Caraihanen van Essequibo en Massaroenij de wapenen Sullen opvatten en den oorlog algemeen sal worden. De Heere is bekend wat de gevolgen sullen weezen, verwagte hier niet veel goeds van.

THINGS are now really becoming serious, my Lords. Last night an express arrived from Berbice reporting that the Caribs above Berbice having been defeated by the Acuways, a body of 600 Caribs has passed the fort there, and together with several other bodies had taken the road to Upper Demerary and Essequibo, so that now our Caribs of Essequibo and Massaruni will take up arms and the war will become universal. The Lord knows what the results will be; I do not expect much good from it.

*West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo, July 18, 1768.*

(Extract.)

WIJ gaan dan terzaake over, en, beginnende met eerstgem, teweeten die van UEd. in dato 9 December, 1767, zeggen wij, dat het recit van de desertie van zeekeren Streep, onse geweese meesterknecht Rodemeijer, den Posthouder in Maroco, Charles Maine en een bijlegger; met hun vieren naar Orinocque, en van de bij die gelegendheid aan den zwerver Gerrit Jansse door de Warouwen tegens betaling gerestitueerde slaven van der Eijke, gelijk ook van het apprehendeeren en opbrengen van die van de Wed<sup>e</sup> van de Kaaij, ten laasten aanduid de groote nuttigheid die er is, om, geklij wij bij eene voorige missive bereids hebben geremarqueerd, het opbrengen van gedeserteerde slaaven door de rigtige betaaling van genoegsame præmien aan de Indiaanen, zooveel inaar immer mogelijk te encourageeren, en houden wij ons verzekerd, dat dit an UEd. gewoone attentie ook niet zal zijn ge-echappeerd.

Maar zou er (de restitutie van gedeserteerde slaaven eens *in medio* gelaaten zijnde) geen middel zijn, om deserteerende blanken, vooral militaire, gelijk een Posthouder en Bijleggers gerekend worden, van de Spanjaarden met effect te reclameeren, onder belofte van gelijke restitutie op de eerste reclame, teneinde zodanige schurken, ten afschrik van andere, exemplairlijk te straffen; en zoo de voorn. Posthouder door de mishandeling der wraak-oeffenende Indianen gestorven is, heeft hij niet meer al[s] zijn verdienden loon, ontfangen.

Met genoegen verstonden wij, dat het op de Post Arinda bij examinatie zoo erg niet was bevonden als de Indiaanen hadden gerapporteerd, en vervolgens uit UEd. missive van den 9 April dat daar thans alles wel was; maar hoe het ook zij, zoo leeverd dit geval wederom een preuve op, dat goede Posthouders al zoude men die met lantaarnen als men zegd zoeken, absolut moeten gevonden worden. In voorige missives hebben wij ons nopens de noodzakelijkheid en nuttigheid hiervan meede breeder uitgelaaten, waaraan ons gedragen, terwijl wij ons laten welgevallen, de door UEd. gedane voorziening van voorsz. Post Arinda en de provisioneele voorziening van die in Maroco, want, schoon de aangestelde perzoonen ons onbekend zijn, fiëren wij ons ten vollen aan UEd. goed discernement, ook in desen opzigte.

Met veel aandoening en becommerring verstonden wij uit dese UEd. missive het ontdekken van een dorp met wegloopers, ruim 40 in getal sterk, volgens het rapport van 2 teruggekeerde neegers van de plantagie St. Jan, en volgens het nader rapport van den creool Tampoko, ruim over de honderd koppen beloopende.

Zeër wel heeft UEd. gedaan van aanstonds een extra-ordinaire Raadsvergadering te beleggen en Borger Capiteinen daarbij te doen adsisteeren; en is het ons tot een bijzonder genoegen geweest, te verneemen uit UEd. missive van 9 April, dat de expeditie der Caraïbanen gelukkig was ten einde gebragt, approbeerende wij in alles de ten deesen door UEd. en den Commandeur gehoude directie; dan niettemin moeten wij betuigen niet wel te kunnen compasseeren het getal der dood-

WE now pass to business, and, beginning with the thing first in order, namely, your letter of the 9th December, 1767, we say that the story of the desertion of one Streep, of our former foreman Rodemeyer, of the Postholder in Moruka, Charles Maine, and of an assistant, the four together, to Orinoco—of the slaves of Van der Eyke returned upon that occasion to the rover Gerritt Jansse by the Warrows in return for pay—and, finally, of the capture and bringing in of those of the widow Van der Kaay, shows the great utility which, as we have already remarked in a preceding missive, there is in encouraging as much as possible the bringing in of runaway slaves by the due payment of adequate rewards to the Indians, and we are assured that this will not have escaped your customary attentiveness.

But, leaving aside for the moment the restitution of runaway slaves, would there be no means of effectually claiming from the Spaniards deserting whites, especially soldiers (among which a Postholder and assistants are reckoned), under promise of like restitution at first demand, in order that such scoundrels, as a warning to others, may be exemplarily punished? And, if the aforesaid Postholder has died through the ill-treatment of the avenging Indians, he has only received his due.

We learned with pleasure that upon examination matters at the Post Arinda were not found so bad as the Indians had reported, and later, from your letter of the 9th April, that at present all is well there. But, be this as it may, this case once more proves that it is absolutely necessary to find good Postholders, even though we have, as the saying goes, to seek for them with lanterns. In previous missives we have expressed ourselves more at length regarding their necessity and utility, and we refer thereto; while we give our approval to the provision made by you for the aforesaid Post Arinda and the temporary provision for that in Moruka, for, though the persons appointed are unknown to us, we fully trust to your good discernment in this respect also.

With great concern and anxiety we have learnt from this letter of yours of the discovery of a village of runaways, full forty in number, according to the report of two returning negroes of the plantation St. Jan, and according to the fuller report of the creole Tampoko amounting to fully 100 persons.

You have done very well in at once calling an extraordinary meeting of the Court, and having the militia Captains thereat; and it has given us particular pleasure to learn, from your letter of the 9th April, that the expedition of the Caribs had been brought to a happy issue, while we in every respect approve the management of this matter by yourself and the Commandeur. Still, we must acknowledge that we cannot quite make the number of the dead and of those escaping

- A geslachte en ontvlugte van het uitgeroeide dorp geen twintig konnende uitmaken (als zijnde maar seven mans, een wijf en een meisje gemassacreerd en drie mans eenige wijven en kinderen het met de vlugt ontkoomen) en de zooveen gem. begrootingen van 40 en 100. Zeeker is het, dat op de voorsz begrootingen, vooral die van den volgens UEd. gedagten zoo getrouwen Tampoko, zeer merkelyk zijn ge-exaggereerd, of dat het uitgeroeide dorp nog een ander dorp van wegloopers geweest zij, of wel dat men verkeerde menschen heeft aangevallen, verstrooid en om hals gebragt.
- B Dit laatste willen wij niet hoopen, hetzij Tampoko zigzelve had bedroogen hetzij, zelv ter kwaader trouw handelende, deese gelegendheid gecapteerd hebbe, om aan zijn wraakzugt of aan die der Caribaanen te voldoen, want in een zoodanig geval, zoude de gevolgen voor de colonie allernoodlottigst kunnen zijn, en de vriendschap der Caribaanen, hoezeer anders door alle mogelijke en geoorloovde middelen aan te kweeken, in plaats van voordelig zeer disavanteus voor de colonie worden kunnen.

- C Gaarne zullen wij UEd elucidatie hierop inwagten, terwijl wij mede niet ongeremarqueerd kunnen laten passeeren de door UEd. zoo schielijke, schoon op zigzelve zeer goede gemaakte verandering in het plan van attaque, waardoor de Commandeur van Demerary, bij zijne, misse. in dato 18 Feb., zelve zegd, zig in geene geringe verlegendheid te hebben gevonden, den tijd de kort zijnde, om de Accuwaijen daarvan te waarschuwen, en te doen afkomen, en is het ge-aufgeerd restant der wegloopers uit het verwoeste dorp den dans gelukkig ontsprongen, zoo moet zulks, naar onse gedagten, daaraan voor een groot gedeelte worden ge-attribueerd, *sed factu infecta fieri nequeunt.*

- D Wij willen hoopen, dat er niets ten nadeele van de colonie zal uitgevoerd zijn door het detachement van 16 welgewapenden blanken, dat zig boven in Essequibo bij de groote val had vertoond, en is het inderdaad een expeditie van Cayenne geweest, zooals UEd. vermoede, kunnen wij wederom niet anders doen, als UEd. ernstig recomendeeren, omme tegens alle onbehoorlijke inbreuken, ongepermitteerde handelingen, nadeelige inductien, en kwaade menees, aanstonds en a *primis incunabulis* te waaken, *nam principis obsta, &c.*

- E Met onwillige honden kwaad haasen vangen zijnde, moet UEd. wel onderschrijven aan den wil der Indiaanen in Cajoenij en Maroco, en geen Franschen daar voor Posthouders zenden, en dus ook niet Pierre Martin, hoe goed en bekwaam die ook wesen mag; maar is hij waarlijk zoo; en willen de Indiaanen in Maijkenij al meede geen Franschman hebben, dan willen wij wel inwagten UEd. consideratie, hoe en in wat voegen hij tot een of andere post in dienst van de Compagnie zoude kunnen worden geemployeerd, want eerlijke en bekwaame lieden heeft de Maatschappij noodig.

- F Zoo des Touches, die met den landmeter Massol is overgegaan, dadelijk de reis na de pyramides en crystal-myn aanneemd, gelooven wij er moeilijk iemand beter toe zoude zijn te vinden geweest. Maar UEd. spreekt ons van het journaal van zeekeren la Chau (apparent tot de voorsz. pyramides relativ) hetgeen UEd. ons zouden hebben toegezonden, maar wij hebben tevergeefs daarnaar gedaan zoeken, zoodat UEd. ons dienst doen zal,

from the destroyed village, who cannot be twenty in all (there having been killed only seven men, one woman, and one girl, while three men and some women and children escaped this fate by flight), agree with the aforesaid estimates of 40 and 100. It is certain that the aforesaid estimates, especially that of Tampoko, who according to you is so faithful, are very considerably exaggerated, or else the destroyed village was a different village of runaways, or perhaps the wrong people were attacked, scattered, and killed. We hope this last was not the case, be it that Tampoko had been mistaken, be it that, acting in ill-faith, he has taken this opportunity to satisfy his vengeance or that of the Caribs; for in such a case the consequences might be very disastrous to the Colony, and the friendship of the Caribs, though otherwise to be fostered by all possible and permissible means, might, instead of being advantageous to the Colony, become very disadvantageous.

We shall await your explanations on this point. We also cannot let pass without notice the change so suddenly, though in itself very good, made by you in the plan of attack, whereby the Commandeur of Demerara, as he himself says in his letter dated the 18th February, found himself in no slight embarrassment, the time being too short to apprise the Accuways thereof and cause them to come down; and, if the remainder of the runaways has succeeded in escaping from the destroyed village, this must, according to our view, mainly be ascribed thereto, *sed factu infecta fieri nequeunt.*

We hope that nothing to the disadvantage of the Colony may have been done by the hand of sixteen well-armed whites which was seen up in Essequibo by the great fall, and if it was really an expedition from Cayenne, as you suspected, we again can do nothing but earnestly recommend that you at once and a *primis incunabulis* guard against all unwarranted inroads, unlawful actions, harmful influences, and evil designs, *nam principis obsta, &c.*

It being hard to catch hares with unwilling hounds, you cannot do otherwise than accede to the wish of the Indians in Cuyuni and Moruca, and send no Frenchmen thither as Postholders, and therefore not even Pierre Martin, good and capable though he may be. But, if he really is so, and if the Indians in Mahaicony are also unwilling to have a Frenchman, in that case we should like to hear from you how and in what way he might be employed in some capacity in the Company's service, for the Company needs honest and capable men.

If Des Touches, who went over with the surveyor Massol, starts at once upon the journey to the pyramids and the crystal-mine, we believe that it would have been hard to find a better man for this purpose. But you tell us of the journal of one La Chau (apparently relating to the aforesaid pyramids), which you say you have sent us, but we have in vain instituted a search for it. You therefore would oblige us by stating



met bij gelegendheid optegeven den brief nevens welke het voorz. journaal is gevoegd geweest; wij konden ons zelf niet te binnen brengen, dat U Ed. ons immer of ooit over een zoodanig perzoon zoude hebben onderhouden.

En wat de onderschijdene vacatures aangaat zoo in den Raad van Politie als Justitie, t' ampt van Deurwaarder en Exploiteur, een Sergeantsplaats, een Constapelsplaats, Gezaghebbersplaats op de Brand-wagt in Essequibo, en Posthoudersplaats in Cajoenij, zoo zal zonder twijffel ter zijner tijd voor de behoorlijke suppletie was [*sir*] dat alles worden gezorgd; . . .

at your convenience, in what letter the aforesaid journal was inclosed; we cannot remember your having at any time mentioned such a person to us.

As to the various vacancies, both in the Court of Policy and the Court of Justice, the office of usher and exploiteur, one sergeant's position, one gunner's, that of Commandeur at the light-house in Essequibo, and the position of Postholder in Cuyuni, the proper filling of all these will doubtless in due time be attended to. . . .

---

No. 447.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, July 20, 1768.*

(Extract.)

ZOO op het moment komen d'Indiaenen, welke van de Post Maroco als expressen naer Orinoque gesonden zijn met de brieven aen Don Manuel Centurion, Gouverneur van Guajana met antwoord van voors. Gouverneur welke mij schrijft dat de Heer d'Barre seer geabuseert is geweest in het geene mij verhaelt heeft, dat seker misleijd is door het geval van de slaeven welke van Cajenne naer Orinoque gevlugt waeren en welke wezendlijk op hoog bevel te rug waeren gegeven. Maer dat geene de minste beveelen van sijn Catholique Majesteijt aengaende de teruggeving der Hollandsche Slaeven waeren gekomen ook geen aparentie daer toe, zoo dat alle pogingen aen die kant aen deeze seijde vrugteloos zijn. Ondertuschen wordt de Colonie voor de reijs van Wijlen de Hr. Rousselet acht hondert en in de negentig guldens in rekening gebragt, waerlijk een exorbitante Somme, daer sijn Ed. bij die reijs reeds over de drie duisend guldens geprofiteert hadt.

THE Indians who were sent from the Post Maroco as expresses to Orinoco with the letters to Don Manuel Centurion, Governor of Guayana, have just returned here with the answer of the aforesaid Governor, who writes to me that Mr. La Barre was quite mistaken in what he told me; that he was no doubt misled by the case of the slaves who had fled from Cayenne to Orinoco, and who were really returned by an authoritative order. But that not any orders had been received from His Catholic Majesty, concerning the restitution of the Dutch slaves, and that there was no likelihood of such being given, so that all efforts in that direction are fruitless on this side. Meanwhile the Colony is charged with the sum of some 890 guilders for the journey of the late Mr. Rousselet—really an exorbitant sum when he made more than 3,000 guilders by that journey.

---

No. 448.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, September 15, 1768.*

EEN bericht dat ontfange naer het sluijten mijner brieven verplicht mij deeze weijnig regulen nae te schrijven. Een Spaensche Caper van Orinoque langs onze kust kruijssende heeft meenen U. E. G. A. Souter voor de Rivier Waijni (Indisputabel Comp. Territoir) weg te nemen en heeft seer sterk aldaer op hem geschooten. Hij is zoo voorsigtig geweest (anders niet konnende ontsnappen) sijn vaertuijg hoog en droog op de banken te setten, zoo dat de Caper niet bij hem konde komen, welke lang op hem gevuurt hebbende en siende niets uijt konde regten eijndelijk weder vertrokken is.

Zij vergenoegen sig niet onze weg gelope Slaeven, tegens alle billijkheijd te houden, ons de visserije in Orinoque welke wij altoos vrij verricht hebben te verhinderen, nu willen zij ons het zouten langs onze eijge kusten beletten, en sullen dus eijndelijk onze rivier sluijten en sullen geen vaertuijgen meer naer buijten durven gaen. Is dat een handelwijs van Buuren en geallieerders?

A REPORT which I received after the closing of my letters compels me to add these few lines. A Spanish privateer from Orinoco, cruising along our coast, made an attempt to capture your Lordships' salter before the River Waini (indisputably the Company's territory) and fired very strongly upon him. The latter was cautious enough (not being able to escape otherwise) to run his boat high and dry upon the bank so that he could not be reached by the privateer who, having continued to fire upon him for some time, and seeing that he could do nothing, finally departed.

They are not content with most unreasonably keeping our runaway slaves and with hindering us from carrying on the fishery in Orinoco, which we have always been free to do, but they now wish to prevent us from salting along our own coasts, and will in this manner end by closing our river, and no boats will dare to go out any more. Is this proper behaviour on the part of our neighbours and allies?

**A** Moeten wij Ed. Gr. Achb: Heeren dit alles zoo met goede oogen aenzien alle insultes en vijandlijkheden verdraegen? Onze Posten sien oplichten? en ruineeren? Onze vaertuijgen op onze Eijge kusten aantasten, Waer wil dit heen aen het hof van Spanje is geen redres te verwagten., Waerom het *Jus talionis* niet gebruikt?

De Caribis van Barima zijn voorlede week bij mij geweest en hebben geklaegd eenige onzer deserteurs met een partij Spanjaerds haer in Barima gedurig quaemen molesteeren en van alles beroven. Ik liet vraegen of zij geen kaerels waeren en geen handen hadden om sig te verweeren zij antwoorde **B** Jae wel, maer wisten niet of zij sulx wel doen mogten ik repliceerde dat zij wel sorgen moesten de Spanjaerde geen de minste reden van klaegen te geven, maer dat als onverdient angetast wierden, zij zig vrijmoedig konde verweeren, hier waeren zij seer mede in haer schik, want zoo veel vrijheijd hebbe haer nog niet willen vergunnen.

Wij hebben hier ondeckt dat op den selven tijd dat die Corporael en drie Soldaeten van Demerarij naer Orinoque gedeserteert zijn, hier mede een Complot gemaekt was van een partij Fransche om mede de Marsch te blazen, wierden even bij tijds **C** gewaerschuwt waer op den Commandant op het Ogenblik alle de vaertuijgen zoo veel mogelijk liet securceren, Duijnenburg en alle de buuren waerschuwen, dus is dit geprevenueert maer dit is maer voor een korten tijd, Sullen dog haer slag waerneemen, en al gingen zij bij manier van spreken voor onze oogen weg wat wilden wij doen, haer te laete vervolgen was ex Scilla in Charibdim vervallen Want de vervolgers soude naer alle apparentie regt volgen, en wel te meer wijl die wel gewapend en van kost voorzien soude weezen.

Daerom Edele Groot Achbaere Heeren Gelieft **D** mij niet qualijk te nemen dat ik zoo lange nog dEer hebbe in dienst te zijn (dat hope kort sal weezen) Ik alle recruten welke hier komen en Fransche zijn met eerste Scheeps Occasie te rug sal senden naer Europa, Den Nood dwingt daer toe en ik zoude het gevaer waer in de Colonie hier door gebragt word, voor God nog menschen konnen langer verantwoorden.

DIngesetenen voor al beneden en aen de zee-kant murmureeren en klaegen onophoudelijk Zijn genoodsaekt altoos op haer hoede te weezen en waerlijk zij hebben groote reden.

Dit nog in grooten haest geschreven hebbende **E** Hebbe dEer met diepe eerbied en Hoog achting te zijn, &c.

L. STORM VAN 's GRAVESANDE.

Must we, my Lords, regard all this quietly and endure all these insults and hostile acts? Must we see our Posts raided and ruined and our boats attacked upon our own coasts? What is to be the end of this? There is no redress to be got from the Court of Spain. Why not exercise the *jus talionis*?

The Caribs of Barima were here last week and complained that some of our deserters with a party of Spaniards were continually molesting them in Barima and robbing them of everything. I asked them whether they were not men and had no hands to defend themselves. They answered, "Indeed, they had," but that they did not know whether they might do so. I replied that they must indeed be careful to give the Spaniards not the slightest reason for complaint, but that if they were unjustifiably attacked they might stoutly defend themselves. This pleased them very much, because I had not yet been willing to grant them so much liberty.

We have discovered that at the same time that the corporal and three soldiers ran away from Demerary to Orinoco there was a plot formed here by a party of Frenchmen to take to their heels. We were warned just in time, whereupon the Commandant immediately had all the boats secured as far as possible and sent warnings to Duynenburg and all the neighbours. The desertion was thus prevented, but it is only for a short time; they will watch their opportunity, and even if they went away before our eyes, in a manner of speaking, what could we do? To have them pursued would be going *ex Scilla in Charibdim*, for the pursuers would very probably join them, and the more so because they would be well armed and well furnished with provisions.

Therefore, my Lords, be pleased not to take it amiss if as long as I have the honour to be in your Lordships' service (which I trust will be but a short time) I send back to Europe by the first ship all recruits who come here and turn out to be French. Necessity compels me to do this, and I would no longer be answerable to God or man for the danger into which the Colony would be brought by this. The colonists, especially those down in the river and on the sea-coast, are unceasingly complaining that they are continually compelled to be on their guard, and really they have great reason for doing so.

Having written this in great haste,

I have the honour to be, &c.

(Signed) L. STORM VAN 's GRAVESANDE.

No. 449.

*Director-General, Essequibo, to West India Company, November 9, 1768.*

(Extract.)

**F**

DAGELIJS een Schip uijt Europa verwagende, heb ik het schrijven uijtgesteld, tot veertien daegen voor het sluijten van de brieve sak van den Willen Zeelandus, dog alzoo bij het vertrek van dien bodem, extra veel besigheden sullen weezen heb ik niet langer durven uijtstellen om de pen aen te vatten en een begin met schrijven te maeken.

My Lords,

EXPECTING a ship from Europe daily I have postponed writing until a fortnight before the closing of the letter-bag of "Willem Zeelandus," but as the departure of that vessel will give me a good deal to do, I have not dared to put off writing any longer.

Het begin deezes sal niet seer aengenaem wezen, wyl ik verplicht ben UEGA te berichten dat snagts tussehen den 5de en 6de October vier Fransche Soldaeten alhier van het Fort gedeseerteert zijn naer Orinoque zoo als wel voorzien hebbe, gelijk UEGA in mijne voorige sullen gesien hebben, zij hebben tot geselehap en apparent tot Leijdsman mede genomen eenen Servaes Smith, welke de Hr. Massol van boord vant 't Schip Zeeberg tot sig genomen hadde een ander Matroos in de plaets gegeven hebbende, welke hij 50 Gl. voor die ruijling gegeven hadde, hij had Smith een paer daegen voor de desertie uijt zijn huijs gejaegt, de reden is mij als nog onbekent.

Den Commandeur van Demerarij heeft het seer wel geraeden wanneer mij schreef bij aankomst van het laeste transport, *Al wederom goede recruten voor Orinoque*, op die wijze sullen zij daer geen recruten uijt Europa nodig hebben als van hier zoo wel voorzien worden.

Echter word deeze Saek hoe langer hoe gevaerlijker voor deeze Colonie, wyl die Schurken geemployeert werden op de zoo genaemde kust bewaerders en Capers, waer van in mijne voorige hebbe gemelt, en ons door Spanjaerde selver is gerapporteert dat openlijk gedreijgd is, door de voorige Deserteurs, dat sij niet alleen de Post in Maroco soude plunderen maer ook eenige van de benedenste plantagien een visite soude komen geven. Seker niet om een Compliment aen d'Eijgenaers te komen maeken, zoo als haer levens wijze in Barima genoegsam aenduijld.

Volgens bericht gistere van den Posthouder van Maroco ontfangen legt den Gouverneur van Orinoque met en groot en een kleijn gewapend Vaertuijg persoonlijk in de mond van Orinoque sullende daer zoo voorgeven word twee maanden blijven uijt wat rede of met wat insigt, is mij onbekent.

The beginning of this letter will not be pleasant, A because I am obliged to inform your Lordships that in the night between the 5th and 6th of October four French soldiers ran away from the fort here to Orinoco, as I had expected, and as your Lordships will have seen from my former letters. They have taken as a companion, and apparently as a leader, one Servaes Smith, whom Mr. Massol had taken from the ship "Zeeberg" in place of another sailor after paying fifty guilders into the bargain; he had driven Smith from his house a few days before the desertion of the latter, for what reason I do not know.

The Commandeur of Demerary made a very good guess when he wrote to me on the arrival of the last transport, "There are again some good recruits for Orinoco." In this way they will not require any recruits from Europe, if they are so well provided by us.

This matter is really getting more dangerous for this Colony every day, because the rascals are employed upon the so-called coast-guards and privateers of which I wrote in my last letter, and it has been reported to us by Spaniards themselves that the aforesaid deserters openly threaten that they will not only make a raid upon the Post in Maroco, but that they will also pay a visit to a few of the lowest plantations. Certainly not to pay their respects to the owners, as their mode of life in Barima plainly proves.

According to a report received from the Postholder of Moruka yesterday the Governor of Orinoco is in the mouth of that river with one large and one small boat, both armed, and it is reported that he will stay there for two months, for what reason or object I do not know.

#### No. 450.

*West India Company (Zeland Chamber) to Director-General, Essequibo, November 28, 1768.*

(Extract.)

ZENDEN wij provisien genoeg, dan behooren er geene te worden aangekocht, en zenden wij er te weijnig, laat men ons zulks aantoonen met juiste en duidelijke calculaties, zooals gemakkelijk te doen is, en wij begonnen hebben voorbeelden optegeven, wanneer wij het reëel tekort gaarne sullen suppleeren.

Soude ook in plaats van den bakeljauw die bij de gestremde visserij in Orinocque en de geringe vangst aan de zeekant men nu van de Engelsche heeft aangekocht, niet gevoegzaam vanhier naar de colonie kunnen worden versonden eene meerdere quantiteit stokvis als wij totnutoe hebben gezonden.

Wij sullen UEd. consideratien hierop tegemoed zien.

Intussen doet ons het gemis voor de colonie van de visserij in Orinocque geen gering leed, maar wij weeten daarjgens geen middelen van redres, tenware men in de colonie zelve eenige middelen van retorsie wiste aan de hand te geeven.

Tegens de desertie der slaaven nit de colonie naar Orinocque weeten wij ookgeene andere middelen voor voorziening als de geprojecteerde uitleggers, waarover wij ons te meermalen hebben

IF we send enough provisions, then none should be bought, and if we send too little, then let this be proven to us by exact and clear calculation, as can easily be done, and as we have partially shown you by examples; that being done we shall gladly make up the real shortage.

Also, instead of the salt cod, which, because of the stopping of the fishery in Orinoco and of the scant catch on the seaside, has now been brought from the English, might there not be sent from here to the Colony, a greater quantity of stockfish than we have sent heretofore?

We shall expect your opinion as to this.

In the meantime the loss of the Colony of the fishery in Orinoco causes us no slight regret, but we know no means of redress against this, unless the people in the Colony itself should be able to suggest some means of retaliation.

Against the desertion of the slaves from the Colony to Orinoco we also know no other means of provision than the projected coast-guards, concerning which we have more than once expressed

- A geelargeerd. Ten overvloede hebben wij onse Gedeputeerden ter vergad. van Xen gelast aldaar te proponeeren nieuwe instantien by H : H : Moog : te doen teneynde aan het Hov van Spanje nadrukke-lyke representatien zouden mogen worden gedaan tot restitutie der slaaven van Curacao naer de kusten van Cora en uit Essequibo naar Orinocque deserteerende, maar daarvan nog geen rapport zynde gedaan, konnen wij UEd : uitslag nog niet melden; inmiddels zijn de genome mesures, om geen slaaven zonder briefjes van hunne meesters te laten passeeren, en de vrije Indiaanen aantemoedigen tot het opbrengen van deserteurs, op zig zelve, zoo geexecuteers, [sic] wel zeer goed, maar egter naar het ons voorkomd, geensints voldoende, omme de deserteurs efficassiuselyk te beletten en te stuiten, maar zal men, en wil men wel doen, hoe eerder zoo beeter tot het aanschaffen en in dienst houden der voorsz : uitleggers moeten besluiten.

- C Met UEd : oordeelen wij het behoorlijk bezetten der onderscheide posten van de colonie van het hoogste aambelang, maar wat het uitzenden van Gereformeerde of Luthersche soldaten aambelangt, moeten wij ons aan vorig aanschrijven almeede gedragen; tot nu toe hebben wij er geene Gereformeerde en zelv geene Duitschers konnen bekomen, hoezeer wij aan alle volkhouders genoegsame orders gegeven hebben.

- D Dat het gerugt van de frauduleuse handelingen van Tampoko in het doodslaan van Indianen met zijn Caraiibes, in plaats van negers, zooals hij had voorgegeeven, ook tot onse ooren gekomen was, zal UEd uit onse vorige hebben konnen opmaken, en daar die knaap, waarop UEd : zoo veel vertrouwen stelde : zigselv op de tyding van UEd : aankomst naar Essequibo, alwaar in hegtenis zat, heeft tekort gedaan, schynd de waarheid van dat gerugt niet dan te zeer confirmeeren. Zeer wel heeft UEd : inmiddels gedaan met het lijk van denzelfen aan de galg te doen hangen met de beenen, als daardoor denoteerende, hoe zeer men in de colonie alieen is van zoodanige moordadige handelingen goed te keuren; maar wij vertrouwen niettemin, dat UEd : het ook hierbij niet zal hebben gelaten, en tenminsten eenige der meest schuldige Caraiibes alsmeede complices van deese euveldaad, naar verdiensten zult hebben doen straffen, wa[n]t hoe zeer het ook van het intrest der
- E colonie zoude mogen zijn, die natie te menageeren, zoo gaat dit egter te ver en zou misschien, zonder dat, de beleedigde natie zig bevoegd reekenen, om zelv vroeg of laat ten merkelyke nadeele van de colonie wraak neemen. God geeve maar dat de ontstaane oorlog tusschen de Accuwayen en Caraiibes, hetzy dan daaruit of uit eenige andere oorzaak geresulteerd is, geene facheuse gevolgen voor de colonie en de goede ingezeetenen van dezelve naar zig sleepen.

- F Zoo wij moeten oordeelen van de geheele natie uit hitgeen UEd : ons meld, dat een corp van 200 caraiibes aan de post Andries zig heeft laten verluiden, dan is dezelve zeer gedetermineerd niet alleen, maar ook al vrij wat stoutmoedig menigvuldige consideratien dienaangaande doen zig wel aan onse oplettenheid op, maar daar de omstandigheden niet weinig de zaaken van natuur konnen doen veranderen, oordeelen wij best te zijn, alles aan de Goddelijke Voorsienigheid en UEd : goede directie overtelaten, dan was zekerlyk het bevreedigen van de twee natien naar onse gedagten het beste.

ourselves. We have repeatedly instructed our Deputies in the Assembly of Ten to propose there that the States-General be again urged to have emphatic representations made to the Court of Spain for restitution of the slaves who run away from Curaçao to the coasts of Cora and from Essequibo to Orinoco; but, no report having yet been made thereof, we cannot as yet inform you of the result. In the meanwhile, the measures which have been taken, of letting no slaves pass without permits from their masters, and of encouraging the free Indians to bring in the runaways, are, to be sure, in themselves very good, if carried out, but still it seems to us that they are in no way sufficient to efficaciously hinder and stop the runaways, and, if you mean to do things properly, it will be necessary to determine, and the sooner the better, upon the purchase and retention of the aforesaid coast-guards.

We agree with you in deeming an adequate garrisoning of the various Posts of the Colony to be of the highest importance, but, as for the sending of Reformed or Lutheran soldiers, we have again to refer to our preceding letter. Up to the present we have not been able to obtain any Reformed soldiers, nor even any Dutchmen, although we have given abundant orders to all lodging-house keepers.

You may have seen from our preceding letter, that the rumour of Tampoko's fraudulent acts, in killing Indians with his Caribs, instead of negroes as he had pretended, had also reached our ears, and, in fact, that this fellow, in whom you placed so much confidence, has killed himself upon the news of your arrival in Essequibo, where he was in prison, seems to confirm only too well the truth of that rumour. Meanwhile you have done very well in having his corpse hung by the feet to the gallows, since you thereby show how far the people in the Colony are from approving of such murderous dealings; we nevertheless are confident that you have done more, and have also caused at least some of the most guilty Caribs to be punished as they deserved, as accomplices of this crime. For, however much it may be in the interest of the Colony to treat that nation with consideration, this is going too far, and the offended nation might otherwise consider itself justified in avenging itself sooner or later, to the notable prejudice of the Colony. God grant that the war which has arisen between the Accuways and the Caribs, whether from this or from any cause, may have no evil consequences for the Colony and its worthy inhabitants.

If we are to judge of the whole nation by what you tell us, that a body of 200 Caribs has shown itself at the Post Andries, then that nation is not only very determined, but also pretty bold. Manifest considerations about this do, it is true, suggest themselves to our attention, but since circumstances may greatly change the nature of things, we think it best to leave everything to Divine Providence and your good management; though, to our mind, the pacification of the two nations had surely been best.









